



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>







A
GRAMMAR
OF THE
MODERN SPANISH LANGUAGE

*AS NOW WRITTEN AND SPOKEN IN THE
CAPITAL OF SPAIN.*

BY
Wm. I. Knapp
WILLIAM I. KNAPP,
PROFESSOR IN YALE COLLEGE.



BOSTON:
PUBLISHED BY GINN, HEATH, & CO.
1882.

9073
1307

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1882, by
WILLIAM I. KNAPP,
in the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

Recato 2-20-29 Lurja

Madrid Editions by the same Author.

1. LAS OBRAS DE JUAN BOSCAN REPARTIDAS EN
TRES LIBROS.

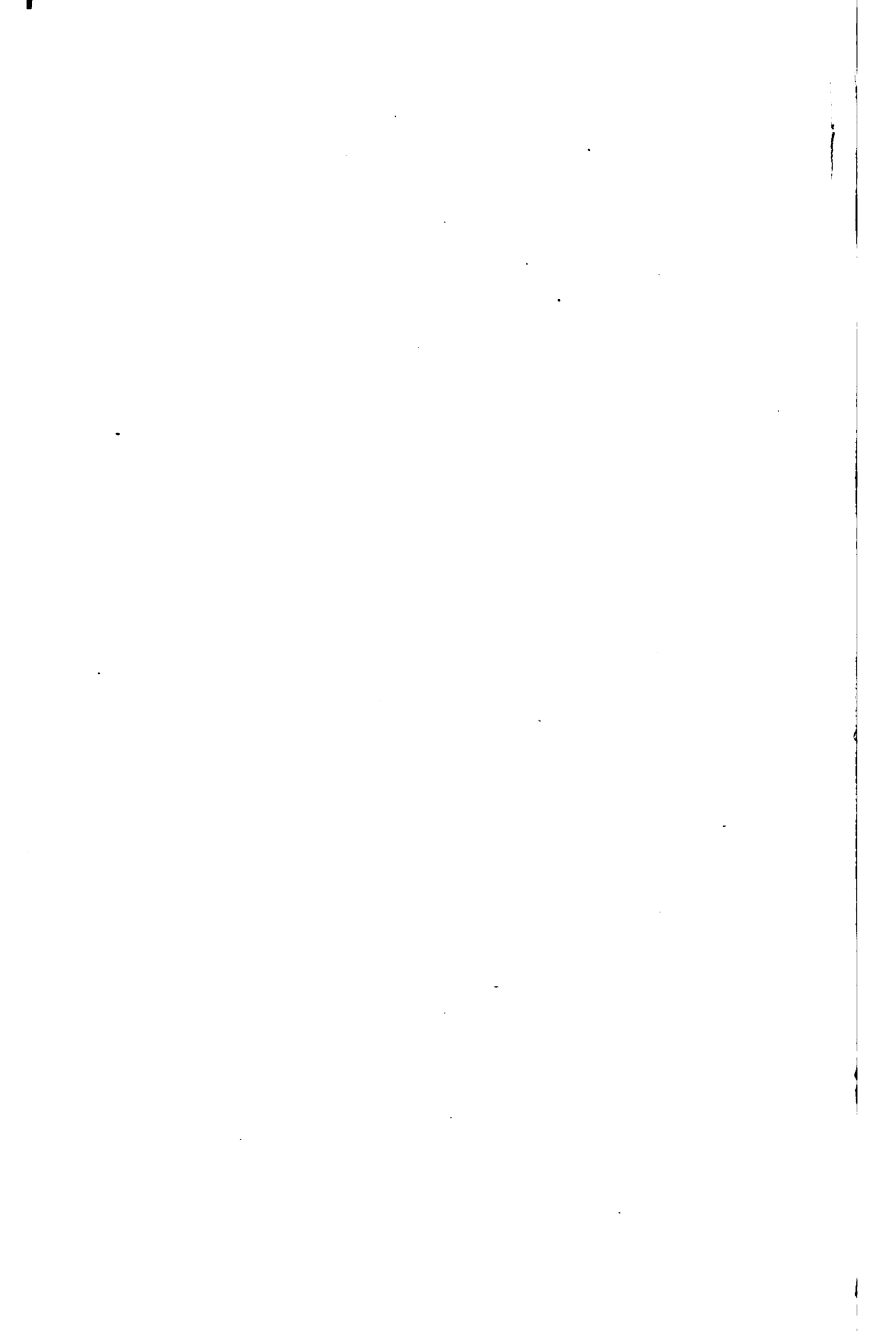
MADRID, ARIBAU Y CA., 1875, 8°. pp. xxxi, 593.

A *ne varietur* edition based on the original issues of Barcelona, 1543, and Antwerp, 1544, with additions from other sources, a full biography with twenty-two fac-similes, and the various readings of all editions.

2. OBRAS POÉTICAS DE D. DIEGO HURTADO DE
MENDOZA PRIMERA EDICION COMPLETA.

MADRID, MIGUEL GINESTA, 1877, 8°. pp. xxxi, 520.

A *ne varietur* edition prepared on the same critical scale, at the request of the directors of the *Colección de Libros Españoles, Raros & Curiosos*, of which it forms Vol. XI. The text is wholly reconstructed on the original Mss., and therefore does not follow the edition of 1610, while the contents are increased nearly one-half. Printed on hand-laid paper.



PREFACE.

IT has seemed to the writer of this volume that a systematic presentation of the laws that govern the official Castilian language, at the present stage of its development, and fresh from its native atmosphere, would need no apology. Whether in public or private instruction, nothing can adequately substitute the thorough acquisition of the forms and inflections of a language, and these are best comprehended and retained by the tabular arrangement, which at the same time furnishes an accessible base of supplies for reviews or reference.

Spanish is not usually the first foreign tongue the student meets, and therefore the experience he has gained in Greek and Latin, or in French and German, may be turned to profit in saving much irksome routine indispensable to his earlier studies. He does not need, for example, to be taught the rules of agreement, to which general grammar has already accustomed his mind, but what he wants above all to know is, the forms of the article, the pluralization of words, the variation of adjectives, and the conjugation of verbs. This done, he can proceed to read any ordinary prose, leaving the syntactical peculiarities to be noted by experience, until a second and more critical rehearsal puts him in possession of all the facts of the language. Therefore, a grammar that will facilitate this end, giving him, at a small outlay of time, the requisite preliminaries to reading and writing, while furnishing ample means for more thorough subsequent studies, would seem to be the one most urgently called for. At least this is the case in our colleges, wherein the use of the so-called speaking-methods is impracticable by reason of the diffusion of grammatical material.

The plan of teaching with the present book involves two perusals. The first will take the learner over essentials in a little more than eight weeks, at five recitations each. The lessons are arranged for the ordinary college class, by whom many of the rules and forms would require to be read over only, or would be self-evident by virtue of previous experience and discipline. With younger pupils, and such as are destitute of linguistic training, shorter lessons can be easily provided by a suitable parcelling out of the full ones. For a considerable distance in Section IV, only English themes are furnished for translation into Spanish, since this method best tests the student's diligence at the early stage of his work. Subsequently, however, after the essential elements have been reviewed, a Spanish dialogue has been inserted, made up out of a popular Madrid play, reduced and re-fashioned to adapt it to class purposes.

The second perusal of the grammar is to be made in conjunction with another volume, — the *Modern Spanish Readings*. While thus entering into the spirit of the literary life of the Spaniard of to-day, the learner, by a carefully graded series of Spanish-English and English-Spanish themes, will be insensibly conducted along to a degree of familiarity with the spoken language that will call for and satisfy every principle recorded in the present text-book. At the same time, he will have learned the mode of life and the manners and customs of the people of the Peninsula; and the usages of society, polite address, correspondence, etc., as they exist, or are carried on in all circles at Madrid. To possess the technical terms popularly employed there in most of the relations of life, will be, it is hoped, appreciated; at least they will be sought for in vain elsewhere in books.

CONTENTS.

SECTION FIRST.

	PAGE
PHONOLOGY — Alphabet	I
Vowels	2
Diphthongs and triphthongs	5
Consonants	7
Tonic accent	15
Graphic accent	17
Division of syllables	18
Capital letters	19
Orthographic signs	20
Castilian vulgarisms	21

SECTION SECOND.

FORM AND INFLECTION	25
Article	28
Noun — Gender	32
Number	44
Inflection	49
Adjective	51
Number	52
Gender	53
Apocopation	57
Position	61
Comparison	65
Comparative formulae	67
Superlative relative	70
Superlative absolute	74
Numerals — Cardinals	80
Ordinals	83
Fractionals	85
Multiplicatives, etc.	87

	PAGE
Personal pronoun	90
Inflection	94
Cases	96
Position of object	102
Disjunctive form	104
Pleonastic construction	105
Inflection and use of <i>usted</i>	106
Reflexive pronoun	108
Two objective pronouns	110
<i>Mismo, propio</i>	114
Possessive adjectives and pronouns	116
Demonstratives	124
Relative pronouns	129
Interrogative pronouns	138
Indefinite pronouns	140
Verb	161
Conjugation of the auxiliary verb <i>haber</i>	162
Remarks on	163
Conjugation of the impersonal verb <i>haber</i>	165
Remarks on	167
Regular verb—active conjugation	168
Verb endings	169
First conjugation— <i>hablar</i>	171
Second conjugation— <i>comer</i>	174
Third conjugation— <i>vivir</i>	178
Remarks on the three conjugations	181
Regular euphonic changes	184
Progressive form of the verb	188
Conjugation of <i>estar</i>	190
Passive voice	192
Conjugation of <i>ser</i>	193
Passive conjugation— <i>ser llamado</i>	196
Remarks on	198
Use of <i>ser</i> and <i>estar</i>	200
Reflexive verb	201
Conjugation of <i>alabarse</i>	203
Conjugation of <i>figurarse</i>	206
Remarks on the reflexive verb	208
Special uses of	212
Passive and reflexive	213
Reciprocal verb	216

Verb — <i>continued.</i>	PAGE
Impersonal verb	217
Irregular verb	221
Stems and changes	221
Present stem	224
Tonic preterit stems	227
Future stems	229
First class — first and second conjugations	229
<i>e</i> stems — first conjugation	230
Euphonic changes	231
<i>e</i> stems — second conjugation	232
<i>o</i> stems — first conjugation	233
Euphonic changes	234
<i>o</i> stems — second conjugation	236
Euphonic changes	237
Second class — third conjugation	238
<i>e</i> stems and <i>o</i> stems	241
Third class — third conjugation	242
Euphonic changes	244
Fourth class — verbs in <i>-uir</i>	245
Fifth class — tonic preterit verbs	247
First conjugation	248
Second conjugation	249
Third conjugation	255
Sixth class — miscellaneous	257
Defective verbs	263
Irregular past participles	265
Index to irregular verbs	271
Adverb	283
Use of certain adverbs	290
Negation in Spanish	296
Comparison of adverbs	299
Preposition	304
Use of	306
Conjunction	318
Interjection	320

SECTION THIRD.

	PAGE
ESSENTIALS OF SYNTAX — Article	323
Numerals	335
Laws of agreement — Adjective and noun	339
Verb with its subject	341
Use of the tenses	344
Subjunctive mode	356
Correspondence of tenses	362
Use of the infinitive mode	363
Gerund	370
Use of the past participle	371
Regimen of verbs	374

APPENDIX TO SECTION SECOND.

DIMINUTIVES AND AUGMENTATIVES	382
--	-----

SECTION FOURTH.

DRILL-BOOK	393
El Barómetro — Comedia	415
Spanish-English Vocabulary	440
English-Spanish Vocabulary	465

SECTION FIRST.

PHONOLOGY.

The Spanish Alphabet.

1. The Spanish Alphabet has in use at the present day twenty-four simple letters, with which certain compound and ligatured forms have been associated as independent signs. The whole, therefore, stands thus:—

a	á	ä in <i>ah</i> .	n	ene	ä'ney.
b	bé	bā in <i>bale</i> .	ñ	eñe	ain'yey.
c	cé	thā in <i>thane</i> .	o	ó	ō.
ch	ché	chā in <i>chase</i> .	p	pé	pā in <i>pale</i> .
d	dé	dā in <i>dale</i> .	q	cú	coo in <i>cool</i> .
e	é	ā in <i>ale</i> .	r	ere	ā'rey.
f	efe	ā'fey.	rr	erre	air'-r-rey.
g	gé	'hā in 'hate.	s	ese	ā'cey.
h	ache	ā'tchey.	t	té	tā in <i>take</i> .
i	f	ē in <i>eve</i> .	u	ú	oo in <i>ooze</i> .
j	jota	'hō'tā.	v	vé	vā in <i>vale</i> .
l	ele	ā'ley.	x	équis	ā'keece.
ll	elle	ail'yey.	y	y griega	ē grē'ā'gä.
m	eme	ā'mey.	z	zeta	thā'tä.

a. The Gothic or Black Letter (called in Spain *letra gótica*, or *de Tórtis*, from an early Venetian printer) was used for Mss. (*libros de mano*) throughout the Middle Age. The same was employed almost exclusively in printed books (*libros de molde*) from the introduction of the art into Spain (1474) till about 1550, when it had

well-nigh disappeared from new books, and was only occasionally seen in reprints of old Black Letter texts.

b. *U* and *v* were constantly interchanging in the older language, and are still designated in the primary schools by the ancient names *ú* and *ú de corazon* (heart-shaped *u*, that is, *v*) since the new Academic *vé* is not practically distinguishable from *bé*.¹

c. The letter *k* is at present authorized by government and by the Academy in a very few imported words, such as **kilómetro**, *kilometre*; **kilogramo**, *kilogram*; **képis** or **képi**, *a fatigue cap*.

d. *W*, called *doble ú*, is found only in foreign names or in learned transliterations. The Gothic and Arabic initials, *v*, *w*, usually became *gu* in Castilian. Thus **wad-ál-kebír**, *the great river*, became **Guadalquivir**; **al-wezír**, *the vizier*, became **alguacil**, *the constable*. The Teutonic "*war*" appeared as **guerra**; "*wassail*" as **guasa**, *jest*; and to "*ward*," *guard*, or *keep*, became **guardar**.

2. All letters of the alphabet are feminine in Spanish, and commonly stand with one of the articles:—

ponga usted una h ,	<i>put in an h.</i>
cuando vayas al correo no te	<i>when you go to the Post, don't</i>
olvides de mirar en la F ,	<i>forget to look in F.</i>
halagüejo se escribe con h ,	<i>halagüejo is spelled with an h.</i>

Pronunciation.

3. The present section on the Castilian pronunciation is based on the reformed orthography initiated by the Royal Spanish Academy in their Dictionary of 1803, improved in that of 1822, and finally adopted in their *Ortografía* of Madrid, 1826. A view of the ancient pronunciations or reference to the obsolete orthography do not come within the design of this elementary work.

The Vowels.

4. *Important General Law.*—In Castilian the vowel sounds predominate over those of the consonants to a

¹ *Vé*, as the name of the letter *v*, was first, I think, introduced into the Academy's Dictionary of 1837,—the eighth edition. Before that it was often called *ú consonante*, *u consonant*.

degree without parallel in the other Romance tongues; and whereas the vowel sounds are full and sonorous, those of the consonants are subordinate, smothered, and frequently suppressed.

5. The vowels have but one quality of sound each, and this they preserve uniformly in all situations. In ordinary passive discourse, however, *e* and *o* slightly lower their primitive key when they stand in an open syllable or before the letters *n* and *r* final.

6. The vowels are *a*, *e*, *i* (*y*), *o*, and *u*, pronounced as follows:—

a	like <i>a</i> in <i>ah</i> ,	never as in <i>add</i> , made:	<i>malo</i> , <i>ánimo</i> .
e	" <i>a</i> " <i>ale</i> ,	" <i>me</i> , <i>met</i> :	<i>mesa</i> , <i>lecho</i> .
i (y)	" <i>e</i> " <i>me</i> ,	" <i>hit</i> , <i>dish</i> :	<i>tino</i> , <i>tinta</i> .
o	" <i>o</i> " <i>lone</i> ,	" <i>not</i> :	<i>odio</i> , <i>tesoro</i> .
u	" <i>oo</i> " <i>ooze</i> ,	" <i>bud</i> , <i>use</i> :	<i>gula</i> , <i>usted</i> '.

a. Before *n* and *r* final, *o* sounds as in *gone*, and *e* as in *there*:—

error, error, — *air-r-rorr*'.
nación, nation, — *nah-the'on*'.
comer, to eat, — *ko-mair*'.
placer, pleasure, — *plah-thair*'.

b. *E* final has the *a* quality, but it is given short as *y* in *merry*. So *triste*, *sad*, — *tree'-stě*, not *triss'-tay*.

7. *Y* standing alone or final is a vowel, and is then a mere substitute for the Spanish *i*. At the beginning of a word or syllable (between vowels) it is a true consonant with the phonetic value of *y* in *year*, enunciated with emphasis:—

Y VOWEL.		Y CONSONANT.	
y , <i>and</i> .	<i>muy</i> , <i>very</i> .	yo , <i>I</i> .	<i>leyes</i> , <i>laws</i> .
ley , <i>law</i> .	<i>voy</i> , <i>I go</i> .	ya , <i>now</i> .	<i>reyes</i> , <i>kings</i> .

REMARK. — In English one syllable is often accentuated at the expense of the vowel sounds in the other syllables; but in Spanish a vowel never suffers its original quality to be absorbed or shrunk because the syllable in which it lies does not receive the primary stress. Thus, do not pronounce, for example, *cansado*, *tired*; *piélago*, *sea*; *animalito*, *a small animal*; *imposibilidad*, *impossibility*, — as if written *cân-sah'-do* or *k'n-sah'-do*, *pyail'-t-go*, *ânnâ-müll-ee'-to*, *imm-possy-billy-dahd'*; but *kân'-sah'-tho*, *pyail'-ah'-go*, *ah'-ne'-mah'-le'-to*, *eem'-po'-se'-be'-le'-dah!h'*.

8. The five vowels are divisible into strong (*a, o, u*) and weak (*e, i*), with reference to the phonetic influence they exert on the consonants *c* and *g*: —

9. *C* before the strong vowels equals *k*: *ca, co, cu.*
10. *C* before the weak vowels equals *th* in *think*: *ce, ci.*
11. *G* before the strong vowels equals *gh* (*g* hard): *ga, go, gu.*
12. *G* before the weak vowels equals guttural '*h*': *ge, gi.*
13. *C* with the *k* sound is written *qu* before weak vowels: *que, qui.*
14. *C* with the *th* sound is written *z* before strong vowels: *za, zo, zu.*
15. *G* with the *gh* sound is written *gu* before weak vowels: *gue, gui.*
16. *G* with the guttural sound is written *j* before strong vowels: *ja, jo, ju.*
17. *U* is silent between *q* or *g* and the weak vowels. When it should be vocal in those positions it assumes the diaeresis (*ü*), and *cu, gü* diphthongal are pronounced *kw, gw*, as also elsewhere, when *u* is not mute.

18. Note well, therefore, the following combinations:

Vowels.

Like k :	<i>ca,</i>	<i>que,</i>	<i>qui,</i>	<i>co,</i>	<i>cu.</i>
" th :	<i>za,</i>	<i>ce,</i>	<i>ci,</i>	<i>zo,</i>	<i>zu.</i>
" gh :	<i>ga,</i>	<i>gue,</i>	<i>gui,</i>	<i>go,</i>	<i>gu.</i>
" 'h :	<i>ja,</i>	<i>ge,</i>	<i>gi,</i>	<i>jo,</i>	<i>ju.</i>

Diphthongs.

Like kw :	<i>cua,</i>	<i>cue,</i>	<i>cui,</i>	<i>cuo.</i>
" gw :	<i>gua,</i>	<i>güe,</i>	<i>güi,</i>	<i>guo.</i>
" 'hw :	<i>jua,</i>	<i>jue,</i>	<i>jui,</i>	<i>juo.</i>

19. The two stem vowels *e* and *o* amplify into *ie* and *ue* respectively when the accent falls on those vowels ; but they recover their primitive form as soon as the stress is transferred to another syllable : —

sentir', <i>to feel.</i>	siento, <i>I feel.</i>
sentímos, <i>we feel.</i>	sienten, <i>they feel.</i>
tendéro, <i>shopkeeper.</i>	tienda, <i>shop.</i>
sentimental', <i>sentimental.</i>	sentimiento, <i>feeling.</i>
rogar', <i>to request.</i>	ruego, <i>I request.</i>
rogámos, <i>we request.</i>	ruegan, <i>they request.</i>
bondad', <i>goodness.</i>	bueno, <i>good.</i>
agoréro, <i>diviner.</i>	agüero, <i>omen.</i>
Oscénse, <i>of Huesca (Lat. Osca).</i>	Huesca, <i>name of a town.</i>

a. Hence *ie* is the diphthong of *e*, and *ue* that of *o*.

Diphthongs and Triphthongs.

20. These are vowels in juxtaposition which are pronounced in one wave of sound, forming, either alone or with a foregoing consonant, a single syllable ; they are, therefore, divisible neither in prosody nor in printing. They always preserve the alphabetic sound of each of the vowels composing them, never passing over into new phonetic combinations as in English and French. Nevertheless the complex sounds they produce are reckoned as *one*, and the tonic accent, if it be on that syllable, is distributed over the vowels as if they constituted a single long vowel. Hence, if one of the vowels *i* or *u* is accentuated, these do not form diphthongs or triphthongs with the other vowels. Thus *uo* in *continúo*, *continuous*, is a diphthong, but not in *continúo*, *I continue* ; so *reíno*, *a kingdom*, — diphthong ; *leído*, *read*, — not a diphthong ; *veníá*, *indulgence* ; *veníá*, *I came*.

21. True diphthongs and triphthongs are : —

ai (ay) :	balle,	donaire,	hablaís,	hay.
au :	causa,	pauta,	caudal'.	
ea :	línea,	tráquea,	Bóreas.	
ei (ey) :	refna,	peíne,	hableís,	grey.
eo :	idóneo,	marmóreo,	virgíneo.	

eu :	deuda,	reuma,	Europa.	
ia :	gracia,	ténia,	calumnia.	
ie :	cielo,	siento,	tiene.	
io :	precio,	ódio,	estudio.	
lu :	ciudad,	triunfar,	enviudado.	
oi (oy) :	heróico,	doite,	sois,	hoy.
ua :	fragua,	recua,	igual.	
ue :	duelo,	bueno,	pues.	
ui (uy) :	cuidado,	ruidoso,	huiría,	muy.
uo :	mutuo,	arduo,	antíguo.	
iai :	avials,	cambials,	varials.	
iei :	avieis,	cambieis,	varieis.	
uai (uay) :	averiguais,	santiguais,	fraguais,	guay.
uei (uey) :	averigüeis,	santigüeis,	fragüeis,	buey.

22. Improper diphthongs are :—

ae :	trae,	Páez.	io :	amorío,	desvarío.
ai :	ralz,	traldo.	oa :	canóa,	proa.
au :	baul,	ataud.	oe :	héroe,	corroe.
ea :	pelea,	lancea.	oi :	oido,	oiste.
ee :	leer,	lee.	oo :	loor,	Feijóo.
ei :	leí,	sonreí.	ua :	ganzúa,	falúa.
eo :	veo,	beodo.	ue :	continúe,	cruento.
ia :	día,	alegría.	ui :	ruido,	huida.
ie :	fle,	confie.	uo :	continúo,	duo.

23. Thus are pronounced, rapidly indeed, but not constituting true diphthongs, all concurrent vowels in different words ; as, *la alegría, the joy ; la alta casa, the lofty house ; mi alma, my soul ; la ida, the departure ; tu esposa, thy wife ; su época, his times ; á usted, to you.* Identical letters are more perfectly run together in the ordinary language ; *la amistad, the friendship ; su utilidad, his usefulness ; de este, of this ; mi ida, my departure.* This principle has occasioned many contractions, as, *del* for *de el* ; *deste*, for *de este* ; *dende*, from Latin *de inde, thence ; donde*, from *de unde, where.*

24. Likewise vowels separated by the silent *h* are sounded as if concurrent :—

ahí, <i>there</i> .	desahucio, <i>ejection (law)</i> .
ahora, <i>now</i> .	almohadilla, <i>cushion</i> .
tahona, <i>bakery</i> .	rehusar, <i>to refuse</i> .
tahur, <i>gambler</i> .	Sahagun, <i>St. Facundus (town)</i> .
ha hablado, <i>has spoken</i> .	mi hijo, <i>my son</i> .

25. In poetry a diphthong may be dissolved by the diæresis when the metre requires it :—

suave, <i>mild</i> , — süave.	|	riela, <i>twinkles</i> , — rïela.
-------------------------------	--	-----------------------------------

Consonants.

B, V.

26. These two letters are distinct in theory, and in most situations interchangeable in practice.¹ The Castilian does not give either of them the full English sound, except after *m*, because with him the approximation of the organs employed in their production amounts to simple contact without pressure (§ 4) :—

beber, <i>to drink</i> (anc. <i>bever</i>).	volver, <i>to turn</i> (anc. <i>boluer</i>).
vivir, <i>to live</i> (anc. <i>biuir</i>).	enviar, <i>to send</i> (anc. <i>embiar</i>).
vuelta, <i>turn</i> (anc. <i>buella</i>).	envidia, <i>jealousy</i> (anc. <i>ymbidia</i>).

The ancient orthography is, as usually happens in Spain, the modern popular pronunciation, especially in the Castiles.

¹ Blanco White, a learned Spaniard of this century, declared the identity of *b* and *v* rather strongly, in these words: "My friend's destination was a town in the mountains or Sierra de Ronda, called Olbera or Olvera, for we make no difference in the pronunciation of the *b* and the *v*."—*Letters from Spain*, by Don Leucadio Doblado, London, 1822, p. 161. The Spanish Academy affirm, also, that these two letters "are alike in a great part of Spain, although they ought not to be."—*Gramática*, ed. of 1870, p. 315. See, also, their *Ortografía*, Madrid, 1826, p. 51.

C HARD and Qu.

27. *C*, before the strong vowels or another consonant, and *qu* before the weak vowels, sound always like *k*: —

casa, *house*.

cosa, *thing*.

cura, *parish priest*.

claro, *clear*, *light*.

que, *that*, *which*.

quiere, *he wishes*.

tabique, *thin partition*.

inquieta, *restless*.

C WEAK and Z.

28. *C*, before the weak vowels, and *z* before the strong vowels, have the value of *th* in *think*: —

cena, *supper*.

cita, *appointment*.

cielo, *heaven*.

hace, *makes*, *does*.

acento, *accent*.

acéquia, *canal for irrigation*.

nacion, *nation*.

hizo, *he made*, *did*.

brazo, *arm*.

corazon, *heart*.

razon, *reason*.

caza, *game*.

azogue, *quicksilver*.

taza, (*tea*) *cup*.

a. *Z* cannot stand before the weak vowels, but is changed into *c*: —

razon, *reason*.

feliz, *happy*.

luz, *light*.

racional, *rational*.

felicidad, *felicity*.

luzes, *lights*.

b. *Cc* are found together only before the vowel *i*, and are pronounced regularly *k'th*: —

accion, *action*.

faccioso (*Carlist*) *rebel*.

Ch.

29. This letter has been considered as distinct in the Dictionaries only since 1803. Its constant phonetic value is that of *ch* in *church*. Formerly it represented also the *k* sound in classic and scripture words; but these are now written with *c* before the strong vowels, and *qu* before the weak ones: —

mUCHO, <i>much.</i>	duCHO, <i>expert.</i>
heCHO, <i>done, made.</i>	cuchara, <i>spoon.</i>
mUCHACHO, <i>boy.</i>	bicho, <i>insect.</i>
aveCHUCHO, <i>sparrow-hawk.</i>	alcachofa, <i>artichoke.</i>
chillar, <i>to shout, scream.</i>	chiquitin, <i>a little one.</i>
Acates, <i>Achates.</i>	Aquiles, <i>Achilles.</i>
Cristiano, <i>Christian.</i>	Ecequías, <i>Hezekiah.</i>

D.

30. *D* has technically the common English sound ; but, as in the case of *b* and *v*, there is simple contact without pressure, on the part of the organs involved in its formation. The Spanish *d*, therefore, has never the decided English sound, being rather inclined to a smothered *th* in *though* :—

doRar, <i>to gild.</i>	indio, <i>East Indian.</i>
desde, <i>from.</i>	arde, <i>it burns.</i>
dehesa, <i>pasture ground.</i>	sordera, <i>deafness.</i>
súbdito, <i>subject.</i>	tildar, <i>to censure.</i>
albedrío, <i>free will.</i>	verdadero, <i>true.</i>

31. Between vowels, especially in the endings *ado*, *eda*, *ido*, *odo*, *udo*, *d* has a less equivocal sound of *th* in *though*, *weather*. At the end of a word its quality is the same, but it is asserted with much less decision :—

haDO, <i>fate.</i>	comed, <i>eat ye.</i>
olvidado, <i>forgotten.</i>	virtud, <i>virtue.</i>
marido, <i>husband.</i>	ciudad, <i>city, town.</i>
polvareda, <i>cloud of dust.</i>	verdad, <i>truth.</i>
lodo, <i>mud.</i>	usted, <i>you.</i>
engrudo, <i>paste.</i>	vivid, <i>live ye.</i>

The *d* thus pronounced may be graphically represented by the *th* raised above the line to suggest the tenuity of its value ; as, *ãtho*, *co-mẽth*, *lathráthr*. This *th*

must never be pronounced as in *think*, however, which is the characteristic of *c* weak (§ 28).

a. *Dr* always equals *d'r* or *th'r*, but not as in *dream*: *drama*, *drama*; *adrede*, *on purpose* (obsolete); *Madrid*.

G HARD and Gu.

32. *G*, before the strong vowels or another consonant, and *gu* before the weak vowels, sounds like *g* in *go* and *guilt*:—

<i>gasto</i> , <i>expense</i> .	<i>albergue</i> , <i>refuge</i> .
<i>goce</i> , <i>fruition</i> .	<i>manguito</i> , <i>muff</i> .
<i>gula</i> , <i>gluttony</i> .	<i>guinda</i> , <i>cherry</i> .
<i>guante</i> , <i>glove</i> .	<i>malagueño</i> , <i>of Málaga</i> .
<i>greda</i> , <i>chalk</i> .	<i>guisado</i> , <i>stew</i> .

a. If etymology or uniformity of the *g* value in inflection require the *u* in *gue*, *gui*, to become vocal, as it is in the combinations *gua*, *guo*, then the diæresis must always be employed:—

<i>agua</i> , <i>water</i> .	<i>desagüe</i> , <i>drainage</i> .
<i>lengua</i> , <i>tongue</i> .	<i>lingüista</i> , <i>linguist</i> .
<i>fragua</i> , <i>he forges</i> .	<i>fragüe</i> , <i>he may forge</i> .

So also

agüero, *omen* (*augurium*). | *agüelo*, *grandfather* (for *abuelo*).

G, J, GUTTURAL.

33. *G*, before the weak vowels, and *j* in all positions, but chiefly before the strong vowels, have the guttural sound of the Arabic *ḥḥā*. This sound is often represented by the German *ch* after strong vowels (as in *Bach*, *Loch*, *Buch*; not as in *Pech*, *Licht*, *Bücher*), and the modern Greek *τεῖχος*, *μάχαιρα*, etc., but it is like none of them sufficiently to be cited as equivalents, save the Arabic. It must be learned from a native of Castile:—

giro, <i>money-order</i> .	hijo, <i>son</i> .
algibe, <i>cistern</i> .	jarro, <i>water-pitcher</i> .
aflige, <i>he afflicts</i> .	atajo, <i>short cut (path)</i> .
diligencia, <i>mail-coach</i> .	trabajo, <i>labor</i> .
gime, <i>he groans</i> .	mujer, <i>woman</i> .
página, <i>page</i> .	bandeja, <i>waiter (for serving)</i> .

a. In Andalusia (Southern Spain) this sound is reduced to the Arabic *hā*.

H.

34. *H* is totally silent. In the sixteenth century it had a decided aspiration, of which it still retains a slight trace before the diphthong *ue*, not, however, appreciable to most foreigners:—

hablar, <i>to speak</i> .	huevo, <i>egg</i> .
haber, <i>to have</i> .	huerta, <i>plantation</i> .
ahí, <i>there</i> .	hueso, <i>bone</i> .
hacemos, <i>we make</i> .	Huelva, } <i>names of places</i> .
hermano, <i>brother</i> .	Huesca, }

M.

35. *M* sounds as in English. The Latin *mīn*, or, by loss of the short vowel, *m'n*, becomes Spanish by changing *n* into *r* and inserting *b*, which in this situation is distinctly enunciated. Thus,

hombre, <i>man</i> ,	from	homīne-m.
nombre, <i>name</i> ,	“	nomīn[e-m] for <i>nomen</i> .
cumbre, <i>top</i> ,	“	culmīne-m.
lumbre, <i>light</i> ,	“	lumīn[e-m] “ <i>lumen</i> .
mimbre, <i>rush</i> ,	“	vimīne-m.
hambre, <i>hunger</i> ,	“	fam[īne-m] “ <i>famem</i> .
hembra, <i>female</i> ,	“	foemīna-m.

a. *Mn*, not contracted from *mīn*, usually becomes *ñ* (*nn*) by assimilation of the *m*¹; *somnu-m* makes *suenno*, *sueño*, *dream*. Even in words in which the *mn* are retained, the lower orders often pronounce them *pn* and *gn*; as *hīpno* or *higno* for *himno*, *hymn*. So the ancients (thirteenth century) occasionally wrote *Dyḡna* and

¹ See note on *ñ*.

Dygna for Calila e Dimna (Fables of Bilpay). Compare the Greek *hupnos* and Latin *somnus*.

b. Latin and English *mm* stand in modern Spanish as *nm* : —

inmenso, boundless.

inmortal, immortal.

R SMOOTH.

36. Single *r*, between vowels, has the pure alphabetic sound, as in very : —

ara, altar.

| *bolero*, a dance.

| *toro*, bull.

37. Before any consonant, and after *b*, *d*, *t*, *v*, — *r* must always have a full, decided, and independent sound : —

arde, it burns.

| *ladra*, (the dog) barks.

hombre, man.

| *lastre*, ballast.

catre, cot-bed.

Thus *arr-^{they}*, *ōm'-b'rey*, *kā't'rey*.

38. When final, the single *r* is still more distinctly pronounced, and is emphasized almost into the character of the double *rr* : —

hablar, to speak.

| *vivir*, to live.

comer, to eat.

| *placer*, pleasure.

The vowel before *r* is to be given quick and emphatic, not drawling as in English.

R ROUGH.

39. When the single *r* stands at the beginning of a word, or after the letters *l*, *n*, *s*, it is pronounced with a rolling sound.¹ The same is always the case and in all positions when the *r* is doubled : —

¹ This rough sound of *r* after *l*, *n*, and *s*, has occasioned the intercalation of *d*, as well as the obsolete makeshift of transposition. Thus *valdrá* for *val'rd*; *vendrâ* for *ven'rd* (ancient *verna*); *tendrâ* for *ten'ra* (ancient *terna*); *Esdras*, for *Es'ras*. So also *tierno*, tender, came from *ten'ro* (*těněru-m*) and *verno* (French *gendre*) from *gen'ro* (*gěněru-m*), by metathesis of *nr*.

R SMOOTH.

pera, *pear*.
 aro, *hoop*.
 pardo, *grey*.
 puerto, *port*.
 tarde, *evening*.
 cordero, *lamb*.
 bruto, *brute*.
 ladron, *thief*.
 triste, *sad*.
 arar, *to plough*.
 acabar, *to finish*.
 ver, *to see*.

R ROLLING.

ruedo, (*door*) *mat*.
 rogar, *to request*.
 ramo, *bough*.
 roto, *broken*.
 ruído, *noise*.
 alrededor, *around*.
 enredo, *snarl, plot*.
 honra, *honor*.
 Israelita, *Israelite*.
 error, *error*.
 parra, *grapevine*.
 torre, *tower*.

S.

40. *S* is always and in every position pronounced like the English *s* in said, never as in phase, ways : —

mesa, *table*.
 camisa, *shirt*.
 base, *basis*.
 los, las, *the*.
 desde, *from, since*.

racimos, *clusters*.
 pasas, *raisins*.
 ese, esa, eso, *that (is, ea, id)*.
 grueso, *bulky*.
 lesna, *awl*.

X.

41. *X* is now everywhere pronounced as in English, that is, *ks* : —

~~ex~~acto, *exact*.

~~se~~xo, *sex*.

REMARK. — The national prefix *es*, when it comes from the Latin *ex*, has now been graphically (at least) fixed by the Academy as *ex*. The people, however, very generally continue to pronounce, for example,

estranjero, *foreigner*, } while they write { extrangero.
 esterior, *external*, } { exterior.

This has produced among the illiterate great confusion, by reason of their interchanging the *es* from *ex* with *es* prothetic, as in espléndido, escuela, from the Lat. *splendidus*, *schola*. So one hears explendor, excalera, excándalo, and even excoba, — for esplendor,

splendor; escalera, *staircase*; escándalo, *scandal*; and escoba, *a broom*.¹

Ligatured Consonants.

Ll.

42. *Ll* is pronounced like *l'y* in "will you," or *lli* in *William*: —

sello, *stamp*.
silla, *chair*.
polilla, *moths*.
rastrillo, *rake*.

llave, *key*.
lloro, *weeping*.
lleno, *full*.
llueve, *it rains*.

Ñ.

43. *N* with tilde² (*ñ*) is pronounced *n'y*, as in "an yew," or like *ni* in *union*³: —

año, *year*.
peldaño, *round (of a ladder)*.
leña, *firewood*.
guiñada, *wink*.

otoño, *autumn*.
barreño, *dish-trough*.
engaño, *deception*.
rebaño, *flock*.

44. Ligatured *vowels* are diphthongs and triphthongs.

¹ A copy of the last Dictionary of the Academy (1869), printed on one side of a leaf only, leaving the other blank, and which belonged to the late Academician Señor Segovia Izquierdo, fell into my possession at Madrid shortly after the owner's death in 1875. In it I find in his handwriting twenty-eight examples of these false *ex*'s under this characteristic epigraph: "Voces que, comenzando con la sílaba *es*, han dado los ignorantes en escribir con *ex*." He omitted, however, *explendor* and *expléndido*, which I have often heard from otherwise clever, though unlearned, persons.

² From *titüle-m*, a corrupt form of *titülü-m*, in its later signification of mark, sign — contracted regularly *tit'le-m*, and by metathesis of the *t'l*, *tilte*, tilde.

³ The origin of *ñ* is the mark of abbreviation over the original *nn*, *nm* (*damnu-m*, *danno*, *daño*, *loss*). In the earliest Spanish MSS. the bar (*rasgo*) appears as a mere sign of shortening, as *āno* for *anno*. Mr. Vollmöller, in his edition of the *Poema del Cid*, has mistaken this *rasgo* for a phonetic sign or tilde, which it certainly came to be later. Mr. Pidal was therefore correct in regarding it as a mere note of abbreviation, and in printing *anno*, although we opine it were preferable to have reproduced faithfully the original bar (*āno*).

Tonic Accent.

45. Words ending in a consonant not inflectional, are regularly accentuated on the ultimate, unless otherwise graphically indicated : —

verdad, <i>truth.</i>	cáliz, (<i>sacramental</i>) <i>cup.</i>
comer, <i>to eat.</i>	huésped, <i>guest.</i>
jardin, <i>garden.</i>	árbol, <i>tree.</i>
amor, <i>love.</i>	mármol, <i>marble.</i>
desleal, <i>disloyal.</i>	cárcel, <i>prison.</i>
después, <i>afterwards.</i>	alcázar, (<i>fortified</i>) <i>palace.</i>
Adam, <i>Adam.</i>	útil, <i>useful.</i>
Frances, <i>Frenchman.</i>	Cádiz, <i>Cadiz.</i>
Aleman, <i>German.</i>	Támesis, <i>Thames.</i>
capaz, <i>capable.</i>	Estéban, <i>Stephen.</i>
desliz, (<i>moral</i>) <i>slip.</i>	Búrgos, <i>Burgos</i> (Πύργος).

An inflectional termination is the plural sign (*s, es*) or the tense endings (*s, es, mos, an, en*).

a. The words **carácter**, *character*, and **régimen**, *government, regimen*, form the irregularly accented plurals *caractéres, regímenes*.

b. Infinitives and Imperatives second person plural, follow the regular rule of consonant terminals : —

querer, <i>to wish.</i>	quered, <i>wish ye.</i>
comprar, <i>to buy.</i>	comprad, <i>buy ye.</i>

c. The second person plural of verbs has the accentuation on the ultimate, or the diphthong, unless otherwise graphically marked : —

llamais, <i>ye call.</i>	llamábais, <i>ye were calling.</i>
queréis, <i>ye wish.</i>	queríais, <i>ye were wishing.</i>
decís, <i>ye say.</i>	compráseis, <i>ye should buy.</i>

d. Proper names in *ez* and a few in *es* accentuate the penult; the rest follow the general rule of consonant terminals : —

Fernández.	Cervántes.	Solís.
Martínez.	Móntes.	Madóz.
Sánchez.	Sanchíz.	Valdés.
Díez.	Rufz.	Vivés.
Flóres.	Muñíz.	Cortés. ¹

46. Words ending primarily in a vowel or a diphthong (which is always considered as constituting a single syllable) are regularly accentuated on the penult, unless otherwise marked : —

odio, <i>hatred.</i>	lástima, <i>pity.</i>
rostro, <i>countenance.</i>	zángano, <i>drone.</i>
buitre, <i>vulture.</i>	máquina, <i>machine.</i>
manteca, <i>butter.</i>	alegría, <i>joy.</i>
audiencia, <i>upper court.</i>	alelí, <i>gilly flower.</i>
andamio, <i>staging.</i>	compró, <i>he bought.</i>

a. This principle is not modified by inflectional endings. See, however, § 45, *b, c* : —

odios, <i>rancor.</i>	máquinas, <i>machines.</i>
amas, <i>thou lovest.</i>	quieren, <i>they wish.</i>

47. Compound words have the accentuation of their simple components, and adverbs in *mente* follow the natural stress of the adjective to which that ending is attached : —

un pisa-verde, <i>an exquisite.</i>	fácilmente, <i>easily.</i>
un saca-corchos, <i>a corkscrew.</i>	sábiamente, <i>sagely.</i>
un corta-plumas, <i>a penknife.</i>	tenázmente, <i>tenaciously.</i>

¹ The unaccented endings *ez, es*, are patronymics, formed on the basis of the Latin ablative *is*. Thus, Fernández is from *ð Ferdinandis*, of the *Ferdinand family*; Cervántes, from *ð Servandis*, of the *Servandos*. The accented ending *es*, on the contrary, is geographical, from *-ensis*, formed like *Cartha-*

Graphic Accent.

48. The acute accent (') is the only mark now in use in Spanish. It should be graphically applied only in the following cases :—

a. To indicate an irregularly accentuated syllable :—

melancólico, <i>melancholy</i> .	mucho, <i>much</i> .
paréntesis, <i>parenthesis</i> .	español, <i>Spanish</i> .
veníamos, <i>we were coming</i> .	frances, <i>French</i> .

b. To distinguish homonyms :—

a, <i>has</i> (obsolete).	á, <i>to, in, at</i> .
al, <i>to the</i> .	ál, <i>otherwise (aliàs)</i> .
aún, <i>yet, still</i> .	áun, <i>even, also</i> .
de, <i>of, from</i> .	dé, <i>he may give</i> .
e, <i>I have</i> (obsolete).	é, <i>and</i> (before <i>i</i> or <i>hi</i>).
el, <i>the</i> .	él, <i>he, him</i> .
ha, <i>has</i> .	há, <i>ago</i> .
luego, <i>afterward</i> .	luégo, <i>therefore</i> .
mi, <i>my</i> .	mí, <i>me</i> (prepositional case).
mas, <i>but</i> .	más, <i>more</i> .
o, <i>oh</i> .	ó, <i>or</i> (and <i>ú</i> before <i>o</i>).
se, <i>one's self</i> .	sé, <i>I know; be thou</i> .
si, <i>if</i> .	sí, <i>yes; one's self</i> (prepos. case).
te, <i>thee</i> .	té, <i>tea</i> .
tu, <i>thy</i> .	tú, <i>thou</i> .

c. To distinguish verbs identical in form with other parts of speech ; also verbs with pronouns attached to them :—

como, <i>as</i> .	cómo, <i>I eat</i> .
sueño, <i>dream</i> .	suéño, <i>I dream</i> .
dáme, <i>give me</i> .	siéntese, <i>sit down</i> .
téngase, <i>let him have</i> .	véte, <i>be off (go thyself)</i> .

giniensis, Span. *Cartaginés* ; *Valdensis*, Span. *Valdés*. See Godoy Alcántara : *Apellidos Castellanos*, Madrid, 1871.—a very interesting, but not very scholarly, book, in view of the author's facilities.

d. To distinguish demonstrative adjectives used substantively : —

aquel, <i>that (ille)</i> .	aquél, <i>that one.</i>
ese, <i>that (iste)</i> .	ése, <i>that one.</i>
este, <i>this (hic)</i> .	éste, <i>this one.</i>

e. To distinguish the interrogative and exclamatory use, direct and indirect, of certain pronouns and adverbs : —

como, <i>as.</i>	cómo, <i>how ?</i>
cual, <i>as, which.</i>	cuál, <i>which ?</i>
cuan, <i>as.</i>	cuán, <i>how !</i>
cuando, <i>when.</i>	cuándo, <i>when ?</i>
cuanto, <i>as much.</i>	cuánto, <i>how much ?</i>
cuyo, <i>whose.</i>	cúyo, <i>whose ?</i>
donde, <i>where.</i>	dónde, <i>where ?</i>
que, <i>which, that.</i>	qué, <i>what ?</i>
quien, <i>who.</i>	quién, <i>who ?</i>

f. In certain correlatives : —

quién—quién, <i>one—another, some—others.</i>
cuáles—cuáles, <i>some—others.</i>

REMARK.—The Academy does not always strictly observe its own rules touching the graphic accent, but the great printers of Madrid (Aribau & Co., Fortanet, and Ginesta) are sufficient guides.

Division of Syllables.

49. A single consonant between vowels begins a syllable : —

me-sa, <i>table.</i>	la-bor, <i>needle-work.</i>
----------------------	-----------------------------

a. The letters *ch*, *rr*, *ll*, and *ñ*, are considered as simple consonants, and follow the same rule : —

mu-cha-cho, <i>boy.</i>	ni-ño, <i>child.</i>
pan-ta-lla, <i>lamp-shade.</i>	tie-rra, <i>land.</i>

50. Two separable consonants standing between vowels are divided : —

puer-ta, <i>door</i>.	|	gus-to, <i>pleasure</i> .
------------------------	--	---------------------------

Exception. — The letters *b, c, ch, d, f, g, j, p, q, t, v, z*, followed by *l* or *r*, cannot be separated, unless they unite compound words : —

pa-la-bra, <i>word</i>.	|	ta-bla, <i>board</i> .
si-glo, <i>century</i>.	|	po-drá, <i>he will be able</i> .
sub-lu-nar, <i>sub-lunar</i> .		

51. Three or four consonants, of which *s* is the second, divide after the *s* : —

cons-tan-te, <i>constant</i>.	|	trans-cri-bir, <i>to copy</i> .
--------------------------------	--	---------------------------------

a. Otherwise compound words are to be resolved into their elements : —

cor-ta-plu-mas, <i>penknife</i>.	|	ca-ri-lar-go, <i>long-faced</i> .
pre-po-si-cion, <i>preposition</i>.	|	ad-je-ti-vo, <i>adjective</i> .

52. True diphthongs and triphthongs are indivisible :

vie-ne, <i>he comes</i>.	|	bue-no, <i>good</i> .
pre-ciais, <i>ye prize</i>.	|	va-cieis, <i>ye may empty</i> .

but

lo-or, <i>praise</i>.	|	le-er, <i>to read</i> .
a-ta-ud, <i>coffin</i>.	|	gan-zú-a, <i>false key</i> .

Capital Letters.

53. These follow the same general laws as in English, with the following important exceptions : —

a. Adjectives derived from the names of nations,

provinces, towns, and men, are written with small initials : —

el idioma frances, *the French language*.
 la sal andaluza, *Andalusian wit and humor*.
 las tablas alfonsíes, *the Alfonsinian Tables*.
 la escena madrileña, *the Madrid stage (theatre)*.

but

el Andaluz, <i>the Andalusian</i>.	|	el Frances, <i>the Frenchman</i> .
el Madrileño, <i>the Madrilénian</i>.	|	el Catalan, <i>the Catalanian</i> .

b. The pronoun **yo**, *I*, is written with a small initial, unless it begins a sentence after a period, or introduces a quotation : —

él y yo, *he and I*. | dijo : "Yo soy," *he said : "it is I."*

Orthographic Signs.

54. The diæresis is used to dissolve a diphthong, and to render vocal a silent *u* after *g* : —

süave, <i>mild</i>.	|	ríela, <i>it glimmers</i> .
cigüena, <i>stork</i>.	|	argüir, <i>to argue</i> .

55. The punctuation marks are identical in Spanish and English, except the signs of interrogation and exclamation, which in Spanish, beside the regular form at the end of the phrase, are inverted at the beginning : —

¿ tiene usted un libro ? *have you a book ?*
 ¡ cuán presto se va el placer ! *how quickly pleasure passes away !*

56. The following are the technical names of most of the terms relating to orthographical signs : —

<i>comma</i> (,) coma.	|	<i>interrogation</i> (¿-?) interrogacion.
<i>semicolon</i> (;) punto y coma.	|	<i>exclamation</i> (¡-!) admiracion.
<i>colon</i> (:) dos puntos.	|	<i>dash</i> (—) rayita.
<i>period</i> (.) punto.	|	" (....) puntos suspensivos.
<i>full stop</i> , punto final.	|	<i>double dash</i> (=) dos rayitas.

hyphen (-) guion.
diaeresis (¨) crema.
parenthesis () paréntesis.
brackets ([]) corchetes.
brace (}) corchete.
apostrophe (') apóstrofo or virgullilla.
quotation marks (" ") comillas.
index (☞) manecilla.
star (*) estrellita.
asterisk, asterisco.
dagger (†) cruz.

section (§) párrafo.
paragraph (¶) calderon.
tilde (~) tilde, as ñ.
bar (—) rasgo, as admon. for administracion, office.¹
cedilla (ç) cedilla (obsolete).
caret (^) llamada.
capitals (letras) mayúsculas.
small letters, minúsculas.
catch word, reclamo.
reference, cita, llamada.
italics, cursiva, bastardilla.

to underscore, subrayar.

NOTE

ON CASTILIAN VULGARISMS AMONG THE LOWER CLASSES, FREQUENTLY QUOTED IN LITERATURE.

Vowels.

57. The vowel *e* is occasionally employed for *i* : —

prencipal for principal.
 prencipio “ principio.
 vesitar “ visitar.

vesita for visita.
 enquilino “ inquilino.
 endina “ indigna.

ðenguno for ninguno.

58. Vowels are diphthongized irregularly, and *i* inserted : —

haiga for haya.
 cudtáo } “ cuidado.
 cuidtáo }

quía for ca.
 naide “ nadie.
 Alfonso, a, “ Alfonso, a.

59. The diphthong *ie* is reduced to its primitive *e*, and *vice versa* : —

pacencia for paciencia. | concencia for conciencia.
 diferiencia for diferencia.

¹ This sign of abbreviation which originated the tilde is taken from the Arabs. See Wright's Arabic Grammar, Vol. I., p. 23, d.

Consonants.

60. *B* and *v* easily pass over into *g* by the aspirate *h* :—

vuelve, <i>he returns</i> ,	makes	huelve	and	güelve.
bueno, <i>good</i> ,	"	hueno	"	güeno.
abuelo, <i>grandfather</i> ,	"	ahuelo	"	agüelo.
buhardilla, <i>attic</i> ,	"	huardilla	"	guardilla.

a. On the other hand, *g* passes over into *b* through *h* :—

agur, <i>bye-bye</i> ,	makes	ahur	and	abur. ¹
aguja, <i>needle</i> ,	"	ahuja	"	abuja.
agujero, <i>hole</i> ,	"	ahujero	"	bujero.

Some of these forms, viz., *agüelo*, *guardilla*, *abur*, *avur*, and *ahur*, are included in the native dictionaries, while all are frequent in the national drama and *novela de costumbres*.²

61. *Cc*. *C* is rejected before *c* and *t*, as might be expected from the national repugnance to double letters :—

acion for accion.	efeto for efecto.
aflicion " affliccion.	direto " directo.
facioso " faccioso.	conduta " conducta.

Hence the literary forms *objeto*, *object*, and *sujeto*, *subject*, *aficion* (*affectio*), *fondness*, in obedience to this popular law.

62. *Ch*. Among the peasants of both Castiles, a very peculiar sound of the *ch* is frequently heard, approaching the Basque *ts* :—*muchacha*, *leche*, *chata*.

¹ *Agur* (French *heur* in *bonheur*, *malheur*) is a remnant of the Roman passing salutation "bonum augurium tibi sit," our "good luck to you," now used in Spain in turning from a person or on leaving a shop. The popular tradition is that it means the *devil*, and perhaps the original should read "prosit tibi Augur," the Augur (*i.e.* Apollo) be with thee. At all events, the celebrated statesman and scholar, Martinez de la Rosa, sought to exorcise the paganism by saying "*Abur adios*."

² See among many others the *sainetes* of Ramon de la Cruz, Madrid, 1843, 2 vols. 8°; the *Escenas Matritenses*, of the now venerable Mesonero Romanos, best edition, Madrid, 1862; the *Escenas Andalusas*, by "El Solitario" (Serafin Estébanez Calderon), Madrid, 1847, 4°, and the *Españoles Pintados por sí mismos*, containing articles by the best talent of contemporary Spain.

63. *D*. This letter is constantly omitted between vowels and when final:—

Práo	for Prado.	tóo	for todo.
casáo	" casado.	é	" de.
láo	" lado.	pué ser	" puede ser.
ocupáo	" ocupado.	Madrí	" Madrid.
marío	" marido.	comé	" comed.
vía	" vida.	berdá	" verdad.
náa and ná	" nada.	necesiá	" necesidad.

usté and osté for usted.

The contraction *áo* for *ado* is common to all classes.

a. This system of suppression has produced the degeneration of Spanish words from the Latin:—

sedēre, to sit,	Old Span.	seer, ¹	Modern	ser, to be.
vidēre, to see,	"	veer,	"	ver, to see.
legēre, to read,	"	leer,	"	leer.
comedēre, to eat,	"	comer,	"	comer.
delictum, crime,	"	delicto	"	delito.
mente captus, silly,	"	mentecapto,	"	mentecato.
civitat-em, state,	"	cibdad, town,	"	ciudad.

64. *H* before *ue* frequently passes over into *g*:—

güevo	for huevo.	güeso	for hueso.
güerta	" huerta.	güésped	" huésped.

These incorrect forms are met with in the old literature, especially in Mss. *Güete* for *Huete*, *Güesca* for *Huesca*. See also *B*, *V*.

65. *Ll* like *y* consonant:—

yeno	for lleno.	yeba	for lleva.
------	------------	------	------------

66. *S* is frequently dropped or barely aspirated, especially when final:—

pué or pue'	for pues.	lo' bueno'	for los buenos.
-------------	-----------	------------	-----------------

¹ Gerund: *seyendo*; part, past, *seydo*, *seido*, and *sido*, in Old Spanish, even in documents dated as late as 1502 to 1546, in my possession.

67. *Y* is often pronounced too emphatically, like the English *j*:—

yégua, *mare*.

yeso, *lime*.

ya, *already*.

yo, *I*.

68. Metathesis is very common:—

Blivia and blibia	for	Biblia, <i>Bible</i> .
probe	"	pobre, <i>poor</i> .
pedricar	"	predicar, <i>to preach</i> .
presona	"	persona, <i>person</i> .
percurador	"	procurador, <i>attorney</i> .
perlado	"	prelado, <i>prelate</i> .
naide	"	nadie, <i>nobody</i> .
"abernuncio" (Sancho)	"	"abrenuncio" (D. Quijote), <i>I renounce</i> .

69. Other vulgar forms are **conozgo** for **conozco**, *I know*; **dende** for **desde**; **denantes** for **antes**; **onde** for **donde**. Gipsy words abound in the vocabulary of the lower orders; as, **chavó** for **muchacho**; **parné** for **dinero**; **camelar** for **querer**; **diquelar** for **ver**,¹ etc. Of English the Peninsular war seems to have bequeathed only **el monía**, *the money*!

¹ The best work for these terms, which are scattered about the modern popular drama, is *El Gitanismo*, containing Grammar and Vocabulary, by F. S. Mayo, *alás* Quindalé, Madrid, 1870, 12°, pp. 152.

SECTION SECOND.



FORM AND INFLECTION.

Preliminary Remarks.

70. There are in Spanish the usual nine Parts of Speech ; namely, the noun, adjective, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection.

71. Of these Parts of Speech, the first five are capable of various degrees of *inflection* ; the rest are said to be *invariable*.¹

72. The inflection of nouns, adjectives, and pronouns may also be called *declension* ; that of verbs, *conjugation*. Adjectives, adjective pronouns, and past participles are likewise said to be *varied*, with respect to gender and number.

73. Declinable or inflected words have number, gender, and, to a certain extent, case. Verbs have number and person, mode and tense.

74. The declinable parts of speech are inflected by the aid of prepositions, chiefly *de*, *of*, *from*, and *á*, *to*, *at*, which may for this reason be termed case-prepositions.

75. Although cases are, properly speaking, wanting in Spanish, except in the personal pronouns, their technical names are convenient for exact and concise statement. We shall, therefore, designate them as follows : —

¹ The inflection of a word signifies the various changes that take place in its structure or endings to express number, gender, case, person, mode, and tense.

	Case Name.	Eng. Equivalent.	Span. Signs.	Eng. Signs.
N.	Nominative.	Nomin. or Subject.		
G.	Genitive.	Possessive.	de	's, s', of, from.
D.	Dative.	Indirect Objective.	á	to, at.
I. A.	Impersonal Accusative.	Direct Objective.		
P. A.	Personal Accusative.	Direct Objective.	á	
P.	Prepositional.	(With any preposition.)		

76. The Accusative is usually like the Nominative when the direct object of an active transitive verb is the name of a thing, animal, or place (*Impersonal Accusative*), and like the Dative when the direct object represents a person, thing, or abstract quality personified (*Personal Accusative*):—

este muchacho destroza sus libros ,	this boy mutilates his books.
un buen padre quiere á sus hijos ,	a good father loves his children.
el vicio aborrece á la virtud ,	vice abhors virtue.

77. The Prepositional case is like the Nominative, except in certain personal pronouns:—

el niño sale á paseo con el vecino ,	the child goes out to walk with the neighbor.
no podrá hacer eso sin mí ,	he cannot do that without me.
estaba fuera de sí de gozo,	he was beside himself for joy.
¡Dios se apiade de tí !	may God take pity on thee!
no quiero ir con él ,	I do not care to go with him.

78. Leading prepositions are:—

á, <i>to</i> (motion to); <i>at</i> (position).	hácia, <i>towards, toward.</i>
ante, <i>before</i> (presence).	hasta, <i>till, until, to, up to.</i>
con, <i>with</i> (means, accompaniment).	para, <i>for</i> (destination); <i>to</i> (end).
contra, <i>against.</i>	para con, <i>toward</i> (moral direction).
de, <i>of, from</i> (possession, origin).	por, <i>by</i> (agent); <i>for</i> (motive).
desde, <i>from, since</i> (time, place).	sin, <i>without.</i>
en, <i>in, at</i> (state, place).	sobre, <i>on, upon.</i>
entre, <i>between</i> (two); <i>among</i> (several).	tras, <i>after, behind</i> (order).

a. The following govern the Genitive : —

á casa de, <i>to one's house</i> (motion).	cerca de, <i>near</i> .
antes de, <i>before</i> (time, order).	en casa de, <i>in, at, one's house</i>
despues de, <i>after</i> (time, order).	(rest).
delante de, <i>before</i> (place, position).	léjos de, <i>far from</i> .
detrás de, <i>behind</i> (place, position).	encima de, <i>on, upon, over</i> .
	debajo de, <i>under, beneath</i> .

Examples.

entrega el libro al hombre,	he delivers the book to the man.
vamos todos á Sevilla,	let us all go to Seville.
cartas á varios,	letters to divers (persons).
Pedro quiere á Juan,	Peter likes John.
está á la puerta,	he stands at the door.
ante el rey, el alcalde,	before the king, the mayor.
se hirió con una lanza,	he wounded himself with a lance.
salió con un amigo,	he went out with a friend.
se sublevaron contra la autori-	they revolted against the authori-
dad,	ties.
la madre del mozo,	the lad's mother.
la fuerza de la sangre,	the power of blood.
vengo de Italia,	I come from Italy.
construido de laton,	made out of brass.
contento de álguien,	satisfied with somebody.
vive del viento,	he lives on air.
bebe del vaso,	he drinks out of a glass.
es amado de todos,	he is beloved by all.
desde aquel dia,	from (since) that day.
desde el palacio,	from the palace.
en Madrid ; en casa,	at Madrid ; at home.
en el campo ; en la ciudad,	in the country ; in the city.
esta carta es para mí,	this letter is for me.
lo hago para un amigo,	I do it for a friend.
se come para vivir,	men eat to live.
justo para con los hombres,	just toward men.
hecho por un artesano,	made by a mechanic.
creado por Dios,	created by God.
por un buen motivo,	for a good reason.

salió **sin** capa,
tras este sugeto vino otro,
á casa **del** cura,
án**tes** **de** éste entré yo,
án**tes** **del** tiempo,
usted está **á**n**tes** **de** él,
despues **de** esto,
vino **des**pues **de** mí,
delante **del** palacio,
detrás **de** la puerta,
cerca **de** la ciudad,
en casa **de** un amigo,
léjos **de** la poblacion,
encima **de** la mesa,
debajo **de** la mesa.

he went out without a cloak.
after this person came another.
to the curate's (house).
I came in before this (man).
before the time.
you are before him (rank).
after this.
he came after me.
before the palace.
behind the door.
near the city.
at a friend's (house).
far from the town.
on the table.
under the table.

REMARK. — In giving the various inflections of declinable words, the enumeration of cases will ordinarily be limited, for brevity's sake, to the Nominative, Genitive, Dative, and one of the two Accusatives.

The Articles.¹

79. The Articles are of two sorts : the Definite, **el**, *the*, and the Indefinite, **un**, *an* or *a*. They agree with the noun they limit in gender, number, and case, and are inflected as follows :—

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
	Masc.	Fem.		Masc.	Fem.		
N.	el	la	<i>the.</i>	los	las	<i>the.</i>	
G.	del	de la	<i>'s, of, or from the.</i>	de los	de las	<i>s', of or from the.</i>	
D.	al	á la	<i>to or at the.</i>	á los	á las	<i>to or at the.</i>	
A.	el	la	<i>the.</i>	los	las	<i>the.</i>	
N.	un	una	<i>an or a.</i>	(Wanting.)			
G.	de un	de una	<i>of or from an or a.</i>				
D.	á un	á una	<i>to or at an or a.</i>				
A.	un	una	<i>an or a.</i>				

¹ Although the Articles are properly determinative adjectives, they are given here because they serve to distinguish the gender and case of nouns.

80. **Del** and **al** are contractions of *de el* and *á el* respectively. At the present day the uncontracted forms are used only when the article **el** belongs to a quoted epithet, title, or heading :—

un suelto de 'El Imparcial,'	an item in 'The Impartial.'
una extraordinaria á 'El Porvenir,'	a 'Porvenir' extra.
una carta de 'El Globo,'	a letter in 'The Globe.'
but	
un artículo de fondo del Diario de la Corte,	a leader in the Court Journal.
una carta al Diario oficial,	a letter to the official Gazette.

81. The Masculine Definite Article **el** is at present regularly employed before a feminine noun in the singular number, when it begins with the syllable *a* or *ha* having the tonic accent :—

el alma, <i>the soul</i> (in general).	la alegría, <i>the joy</i> .
el ánima, <i>the soul</i> (in purgatory).	la animacion, <i>the stir</i> .
el ama, ¹ <i>the mistress, nurse</i> .	la aguja, <i>the needle</i> .
el agua, <i>the water</i> .	la alhaja, <i>the jewel</i> .
el águila, <i>the eagle</i> .	la avenida, <i>the inundation</i> .
el ave, <i>the bird</i> (generic).	la armadura, <i>the mounting</i> .
el arte, <i>the art</i> .	la hacienda, <i>the estate</i> .
el habla, <i>the speech</i> .	la hazaña, <i>the exploit</i> .
el hambre, <i>the famine</i> .	la Habana, <i>(the) Havana</i> .

but

las almas, las águilas,	the souls, the eagles.
el arte poética,	the art of poetry (poetic art).
la alta casa,	the lofty house.
el agua está ya clara,	the water is now clear.

¹ Una ama de llaves or de gobierno, *a housekeeper*; una ama de leche, *a wet-nurse*; una ama, in general, *a mistress, the lady of the house*, with reference to the servants, employees, etc.

a. The Indefinite Article is often found employed in the same way, whatever be the accent, but not by the best modern writers and speakers:—

un ave, for una ave,	| a bird.
“con un alma toda fuego,”	| with a soul all fire.

82. The Indefinite Article has properly no plural; the adjective **unos**, fem. **unas**, *some*, may, however, be used to express the partitive value of a substantive, especially when it has an attribute:—

tengo casas y heredades,	| I have houses and lands.
el rey posee palacios,	| the king possesses palaces.
tengo unas casas muy bonitas,	| I have some very pretty houses.
el rey posee unos palacios muy regalados,	| the king possesses some very sumptuous palaces.

a. When the noun has no attribute, *unos* is equivalent to *a few*, but with a weaker force than *algunos* or *unos cuantos*, in the signification of *some*, *any*, *a few*:—

una frutera con unas frutas,	| a dish with fruit.
quiso dar unos pasos,	| he was about to take (a few) steps.
¿tiene usted (algunos) libros?	| have you (any) books?
tengo algunos; no tengo más que unos cuantos,	| I have some; I have only a few.

REMARK.—It is evident, therefore, that there is no partitive article in Spanish as in French, although there is a partitive construction formed by the genitive case:—

son gentes de las más ricas que hay en la ciudad,	| they are (some) of the wealthiest people in town.
su marido es elector y de los influyentes,	| her husband is a voter, and (one) of the influential (ones).

The Determinative Lo.

83. The so-called neuter article *lo*, *the*, is employed with adjectives, adverbs, and pronouns (very seldom and always illogically with nouns), to express substantive ideas:—

lo bueno,	the good, that which is good, the good thing (<i>τὸ ἀγαθόν</i>).
lo malo,	the evil, that which is bad, the evil thing (<i>τὸ κακόν</i>).
lo ameno,	what is lovely, the loveliness (<i>i.e.</i> of nature).
lo posible,	what is possible, one's best, the possibility.
lo infame,	what is infamous, the infamy.
lo mejor,	the best, that which is best, the best thing.
lo olvidado,	that which is forgotten, the past and gone.
lo que,	that which, what; todo lo que, <i>all that</i> .
lo cual,	which thing, which; todo lo cual, <i>all of which</i> .
lo mio,	mine, that which or what is mine (<i>τὸ ἐμόν</i>).
lo demás,	the rest, that which or what remains.

lo justo no es siempre lo más hacedero,	what is just is not always what is most feasible.
lo ameno de este valle,	the loveliness of this vale.
haré lo posible para efectuarlo,	I shall do my best to bring it about.
reconozco lo infame de su accion,	I acknowledge the infamousness of his act.
no entiendo lo que dice,	I do not catch what he says.
todo lo que reluce no es de oro,	all is not gold that glitters.
dicho lo cual se retiró,	saying which he withdrew.
dió á cada uno lo suyo,	he gave to each his own.

a. As a pronoun, as well as an article, *lo* has a variety of uses that need only be illustrated at this point:—

lo creo, lo aseguro,	I think so, I assert it confidently.
yo soy ciego y él no lo es,	I am blind and he is not (so).
él es artista y yo no lo soy,	he is an artist and I am not (one).

es lo de siempre,
lo del palacio, lo del rey,

versos á lo divino,¹

it is the old story (that of alway).
the (affair) of the palace, of the
king.

verses (turned) into the sacred
(style).

See further under The Adjective.

The Noun.

GENDER.

84. Spanish nouns have two Genders only: the Masculine and Feminine. All substantives, even those designating inanimate things, substances, and abstract ideas, are of one of these two genders:—

el hombre, *the man.*

el caballo, *the horse.*

el libro, *the book.*

el azúcar, *(the) sugar.*

el vicio, *(the) vice, bad habit.*

la mujer, *the woman.*

la vaca, *the cow.*

la pluma, *the pen.*

la leche, *(the) milk.*

la virtud, *(the) virtue.*

Hence *libro*, *azúcar*, *vicio*, for example, are grammatically considered to be males, like *hombre*, *caballo*; and the corresponding pronouns *él*, *he*, *le*, *him*, apply equally in both cases. So *pluma*, *leche*, *virtud*, are considered as females, and the corresponding pronouns would be *ella*, *she*, *la*, *her*. *It*, then, is not a translation of *él*, *le*, *ella*, *la*, when reference is made to the name of a thing, substance, or an abstract idea, but an idiomatic adaptation to English usage. The Spanish translation of *it* could only be *ello* as subject, if expressed, and *lo* as object or predicate:—

¹ Such is court or secular poetry metamorphosed into religious verse by a sort of sacred travesty. Boscan and Garcilaso (1543) were so transmuted by one Sebastian de Córdoba (1575). For examples, see my edition of Boscan, Madrid, 1875, at pp. xxvii and 520.

veo al hombre, le veo,
tengo el libro, le tengo,
busco á la dama, la busco,
busco la pluma, la busco,
¿crees lo que dice? lo creo,
(ello) consta, *it is evident*.

I see the man, I see him.
I have the book, I have him (it).
I seek the lady, I seek her.
I seek the pen, I seek her (it).
do you believe what he says? I
believe it.

85. General Rule. — In the greatest number of Spanish nouns, the ending *o* indicates the masculine gender, and the ending *a* the feminine : —

el hermano, *the brother*.
el gozo, *the joy*.

la tia, *the aunt*.
la alegría, *(the) delight*.

86. The gender of a word may be determined in part by its signification and in part by its ending.

87. Masculines by signification are : —

a. All nouns of whatever ending that denote males, or the dignities, professions, and pursuits commonly assigned to males : —

el papa, *the pope*.
el rey, *the king*.
el juez, *the judge*.
el cura, *the curate*.
el periodista, *the journalist*.
el tahir, *the gambler*.

el grabador, *the engraver*.
el albañil, *the mason*.
el ebanista, *the cabinet-maker*.
el sastre, *the tailor*.
el buey, *the ox*.
el avestruz, *the ostrich*.

b. The names of countries, cities, and towns usually follow the gender indicated by the final vowels *o*, *a* ; if they end in a consonant they are mostly masculine : —

Valencia, Segovia, la Andalucía.
Madrid, Vélez, Burgos.

Logroño, Oviedo, Lugo, el Cárpio.
Jaén, Almodóvar, el Escorial.

REMARK. — Masculines in *o* may be poetically used in the feminine, the noun *la ciudad*, *the city*, being understood; and feminines in *a* are masculine when the inhabitants are intended: —

la gran Toledo, *great Toledo*. | todo Málaga, *all Malaga*.

Except in those proper names of places from which the article is inseparable: —

la gran ciudad del Toboso,	| the great city of El Toboso.
Bernardo del Carpio,	| Bernard of El Carpio.
la Coruña entera,	| All Corunna (the "Groyne" en-
	| tire).

c. The names of most rivers, whatever be the ending: —

el Guadiana (<i>wâdi-Anas</i>).	| el Guadalaviar (<i>wâd-âl-abiâd</i> ,
el Guadalquivir (<i>wâd-âl-kebir</i>,	| <i>the white river</i>).
<i>the great river</i>).	| el Guadalajara (<i>stony river</i>).

d. Indeclinable parts of speech and phrases used substantively: —

el porqué, <i>the wherefore</i>.	| el besamanos, <i>the (royal) saluta-</i>
el sí, <i>the consent</i>.	| <i>tion</i> .
el pagaré, <i>the promissory note</i>.	| el pro y el contra, <i>the pro and</i>
los afueras, <i>the outskirts</i>.	| <i>con</i> .
el viva, <i>the applause</i>.	| el quién sabe, <i>the query</i> .
el pésame, <i>the condolence</i>.	| el qué dirán, <i>public gossip</i> .
el conquis, <i>the wherewithal</i>.	| el vayven or vaiven (<i>va y viene</i>),
el creer, <i>believing, belief</i>.	| <i>the oscillation</i> .

e. The names of most fruit-trees or their wood are masculine, while those of their fruits are feminine: —

el manzano, <i>the apple-tree</i>.	| una manzana, <i>an apple</i> .
el castaño, <i>the chestnut-tree</i>.	| una castaña, <i>a chestnut</i> .
el naranjo, <i>the orange-tree</i>.	| una naranja, <i>an orange</i> .
el guindo, <i>the cherry-tree</i>.	| una guinda, <i>a cherry</i> .
el avellano, <i>the hazel-tree</i>.	| una avellana, <i>a hazelnut</i> .

el olivo, <i>the olive-tree.</i>	una aceituna, <i>an olive.</i>
el peral, <i>the pear-tree.</i>	una pera, <i>a pear.</i>
el moral, <i>the mulberry-tree.</i>	una mora, <i>a mulberry.</i>
el nogal or la noguera, <i>the walnut.</i>	una nuez, <i>a walnut.</i>
el roble or la encina, ¹ <i>the oak.</i>	una bellota, <i>an acorn.</i>

Exceptions.

la palmera, <i>the palm-tree.</i>	un dátíl, <i>a date.</i>
la higuera, <i>the fig-tree.</i>	{ un higo, <i>a fig.</i>
	{ una breva, <i>an early fig.</i>
el limonero, <i>the lemon-tree.</i>	un limon, <i>a lemon.</i>
el membrillero, <i>the quince.</i>	un membrillo, <i>a quince.</i>
el albaricoquero, <i>the apricot.</i>	un albaricoque, <i>an apricot.</i>

REMARK. — *El fruto* (masc.) is the fruit on the tree, or in a figurative sense; *la fruta* (fem.) is the fruit gathered, exposed in the market, or served on the table. On the other hand, *la rama* is the bough or branch attached to the tree, and *el ramo*, when plucked, as also in a metaphorical sense.

88. Feminine by signification are :—

a. All nouns, of whatever ending, which denote females, or the dignities, offices, professions, and pursuits which may be ascribed in Spanish countries to women :—

la emperatriz, <i>the empress.</i>	la estanquera, <i>the tobacconist.</i>
la reina, <i>the queen.</i>	la patrona, <i>the landlady.</i>
la infanta, <i>the princess royal.</i>	la peinadora, <i>the lady's hair-dresser.</i>
la vaca, <i>the cow.</i>	la doncella, <i>the lady's maid.</i>
la gallina, <i>the hen.</i>	la oficiala, <i>the work-woman.</i>
la costurera, <i>the seamstress.</i>	

Except: *el dueño*, *the owner*, *proprietor*, or *proprietress*; *un ángel*, *an angel*, which are applicable to persons of either sex.

¹ The Latin *quercus* exists only in the family name *Alburquerque*; that is, *arbor querci* (kerki), the ancestral arms being an oak on a white ground. See Madoz and Nuñez de Castro. *Encina* is from the diminutive of *ilix*, — *ilicina*, *elcina*, *encina*. The ancient family name was written *Enzina*, *Enzinas*, and *Ençina*, etc. *Roble* is from *robur* (*róððre*, *roble*).

b. All letters of the alphabet :—

la b (bé), *the letter b*.| una h (ache), *an h*.

89. Masculines by ending are :—

a. All nouns, of whatever signification, when they end in *o* :—el libro, *the book*.| el tintero, *the inkstand*.el reino, *the kingdom*.| el cerro, *the hill*.el suelo, *the ground, floor*.| el palacio, *the palace*.Except: la mano, *the hand*; la reo, *the (female) culprit*.b. Nouns in *a* designating males, or derived from Latin masculines :—el monarca, *the monarch*.| el planeta, *the planet*.el Carlista, *the Carlist*.| los albacéas, *executors* (Arabic).el cometa, *the comet*.| el día, *the day*.Also, el mapa, *the map*.Likewise foreign words in general ending in an accented *á*: el sofá, *the sofa*; el maná, *(the) manna*; el albalá, *the royal patent or certificate*.c. Nouns in *a* derived from Greek and Latin neuters in *a* (genitive *-ας, -atis*), or such as follow their analogy :—el clima, *the climate*.| el problema, *the problem*.el drama, *the drama*.| el poema, *the poem*.el enigma, *the enigma*.| el réuma, *the cold*.el idioma,¹ *the language*.| el sistema, *the system*.el lema, *the motto, legend* (λήμμα).| el telegrama, *the telegram*.el tema, *the theme, exercise*.| el programa, *the program*.¹ Never *idiom* as a peculiarity of speech, which is *idiotismo* in Spanish.

90. Feminines by *ending* are: —

a. All nouns, of whatever signification, when they end in *a*, derived from Latin feminines of the first declension, or from neuter plurals. The latter often have, besides the singular meaning, a collective one echoing their plural origin: —

la mesa, <i>the table.</i>	la hoja, ¹ <i>the leaf, leaves.</i>
la tabla, <i>the board, plank.</i>	la caza, <i>the shooting, game.</i>
la regla, <i>the rule.</i>	la leña, <i>the firewood.</i>
la casa, <i>the house.</i>	la viña, <i>the vine, vineyard.</i>
la silla, <i>the chair.</i>	la boda, <i>the marriage, nuptials.</i>
la puerta, <i>the door, gate.</i>	la loza, <i>the crockery.</i>

From mensa, tabŭla, regŭla, casa, sella, porta; folia, capta, ligna, vinea, vota, lutea.

b. Nouns terminated in *dad, tad, tud, ion, umbre, ie*, which are derived from Latin accusatives feminine, in *tatem, tutem, ionem, inem, iem*: —

la verdad, <i>the truth.</i>	la servidumbre, <i>the servants</i> (collectively).
la libertad, <i>(the) liberty.</i>	la esp�cie, <i>the species.</i>
la virtud, <i>(the) virtue.</i>	la s�rie, <i>the series.</i>
la nacion, <i>the nation.</i>	la superficie, <i>the surface.</i>
la muchedumbre, <i>the throng.</i>	

From veritatem, libertatem, virtutem, nationem, multitudinem, speciem, etc.

91. Nouns not denoting males or females, and those terminated or derived otherwise than above indicated, do not uniformly show the gender, in which case it is to

¹ The collective sense is illustrated in this sentence: *esta planta lleva mucha hoja, this plant bears much leaf, or has all gone to leaves, a phraseology very common among Castilian farmers and peasants.*

be learned by a habit of associating the noun with an article¹ :—

el árbol (<i>arborem</i> , f.), <i>the tree</i> .	la cárcel (<i>carcerem</i> , m.), <i>the jail</i> .
el tallo (<i>la taille</i>), <i>the waist</i> .	la calle, <i>the street</i> .

92. Masculine nouns in *a* may assume the feminine article when they are applicable to women :—

un Belga,	una Belga,	a Belgian.
un Carlista,	una Carlista,	a Carlist.
un artista,	una artista,	an artist.
un compatriota,	una compatriota,	a compatriot.
un atleta,	una atleta,	an athlete.
un indígena,	una indígena,	a native, aboriginal.

a. On the other hand, a few feminines in *a* now generally assume the masculine article when they denote male persons :—

la centinela,	el centinela,	the sentinel.
la espía,	el espía,	the spy.
la guardia,	el guardia marina,	the midshipman.
la guía,	el guía,	the guide.

Except : la recluta, *the recruit* ; la escolta, *the escort*.

b. Several nouns denoting persons, of other endings than *a*, have a common form for both genders :—

el or la cómplice,	the accomplice.
el or la hereje,	the heretic.
el or la intérprete,	the interpreter.
el or la joven,	the youth (young man or woman).
el or la mártir,	the martyr.
el or la reo,	the criminal, defendant.
el or la testigo,	the witness.
el or la asistente,	the sick-nurse.

¹ Better with the indefinite article, since the definite does not always serve as a guide to gender. See 81.

93. Many feminine nouns in *a*, denoting things, assume personal significations, and then may belong to either gender, but are preferably masculine :—

la espada, <i>sword</i> .	el espada,	the swordsman.
la atalaya, <i>watch-tower</i> .	el atalaya,	the warden or keeper of a watch-tower.
la trompeta, <i>trumpet</i> .	el trompeta,	the trumpeter.
la ayuda, <i>aid</i> .	el ayuda,	the aid or aide.
la máscara, <i>mask</i> .	el or la máscara,	the masker.
la calavera, <i>skull</i> .	el calavera,	the mad-cap, harum scarum fellow.
una ordenanza, <i>ordinance</i> .	un ordenanza,	an orderly.
la cabeza, <i>head</i> .	el cabeza (<i>seldom</i>),	the head, chief.
la guía, <i>guide, guide-book</i> .	el guía,	the guide (man).
la alhaja, <i>jewel</i> .	el alhaja,	the "gem" (irony). ¹
la guarda-ropa, <i>wardrobe</i> .	el guarda-ropa,	the master of the w. (office).

94. Many nouns were formerly feminine which are now masculine in ordinary plain prose ; preserving the archaic feminine, however, in the poetic, sublime, or affected style, and in certain traditional phrases :—

el mar, <i>the sea</i> .	allende la mar, <i>beyond the sea</i> (archaic).
el puente, <i>bridge</i> .	la puente Segoviana, <i>the aqueduct at Segovia</i> .

a. Márgen, margin of a book, or edge of a stream, is either masculine or feminine, without difference of meaning :—

las márgenes de este libro han de ser muy anchas,	the margins of this book are to be very broad.
paséandome por el márgen del río,	walking along the margin of the river.

¹ Generally in the phrase: *es buen alhaja*, *he's a "pretty" fellow*, a "*bright boy*," etc., meaning, he is a man of doubtful reputation, a "lark," a hypocrite, etc.

So *el* or *la* dote, *the dowry*; but *las* dotes, (intellectual or moral) *endowments*.

b. Arte is feminine in the plural in all senses. In the singular it is feminine with some adjectives and masculine with others, although the feminine greatly predominates:—

<i>las bellas artes, the fine arts.</i>	<i>las artes mecánicas, the mechanical arts.</i>
<i>el arte poética (81), poetic art,</i>	<i>el arte dramático, the drama.</i>
<i>the art of poetry.</i>	

95. Some nouns, denoting things, have a different meaning according as they are masculine or feminine:—

<i>el cometa, the comet.</i>	<i>la cometa, the kite (child's toy).</i>
<i>el crisma, (the) holy oil.</i>	<i>la crisma,¹ the head (vulgar).</i>
<i>el cólera, the cholera.</i>	<i>la cólera, the rage.</i>
<i>el corte, the cut, edge.</i>	<i>la corte, the court, metropolis.</i>
<i>el canal, the canal (or for irrigation).</i>	<i>la canal, the channel (straits).</i>
<i>el capital, capital (money).</i>	<i>la capital, the capital (city).</i>
<i>el moral, mulberry-tree.</i>	<i>la moral, morals, the moral.</i>
<i>el frente, front, head.</i>	<i>la frente, the forehead.</i>
<i>el órden, order (eccles., polit., archit.).</i>	<i>la órden, order (command, order, e.g., of St. James, etc.).</i>
<i>el parte, despatch, message, (telegram, etc.).</i>	<i>la parte, the part, portion.</i>
<i>el pendiente, ear-ring.</i>	<i>la pendiente, slope, declivity.</i>
<i>el pez, fish (in the water).</i>	<i>la pez, pitch.</i>

96. Compound nouns usually assume the gender of the second member when that is in the singular; but if it be in the plural the whole word is masculine, whichever be the gender of the second term:—

¹ Because the part *christened*. The people say: *te rompo la crisma* (or *el bautismo*), *I'll break your head (chrism, baptism)*.

la guardaropa, <i>the wardrobe.</i>	el cortaplumas, <i>the pen-knife.</i>
el guarda-canton, ¹ <i>guard-post.</i>	el portamonedas, <i>porte-monnaie.</i>
el ferro-carril, <i>the railway.</i>	el mondadientes, <i>the tooth-pick.</i>

Except: el tranvía,² *the tramway* (horse railroad).

REMARK. — Of course if the word indicates a male person or his office it will be masculine: —

el guarda-aguja, <i>the switch-tender.</i>	el guarda-ropa, <i>the master of the wardrobe.</i>
--	--

Formation of the Feminine of Personal Nouns.

97. Masculine nouns indicating persons, their employments, creeds, etc., may be made feminine at will by observing the following rules: —

a. By changing final *o* into *a*: —

el abuelo, <i>grandfather.</i>	la abuela, <i>grandmother.</i>
el hermano, <i>brother.</i>	la hermana, <i>sister.</i>
el muchacho, <i>boy, lad.</i>	la muchacha, <i>girl.</i>
el niño, <i>child, little boy.</i>	la niña, <i>child, little girl.</i>
el amigo, <i>friend.</i>	la amiga, ³ <i>friend.</i>
el amo, <i>master.</i>	el ama (81), <i>mistress.</i>
el compañero, <i>companion.</i>	la compañera, <i>companion.</i>

Except: el diablo, *the evil one*; el diácono, *the deacon*, which make in the feminine la diablesa, *the she-devil*; la diaconisa, *the deaconess*. Reo is unchangeable: el reo, la reo, *the defendant*, and el dueño means the *owner*, male or female, while la dueña signifies

¹ I am ignorant of the technical English equivalent of *guardacanton*. It is a stone post set at the corner or edges of a park and along the country highways to keep carriages in the road.

² First introduced into Madrid with the thing itself in 1871, and the gender was the object of considerable discussion in the journals. It is now universally given as masculine, and sometimes spelled *tramvia*.

³ In good society, among *ladies* only. Gentlemen (unless intimate friends) use it with qualificatives, or prefer *conocida*, *acquaintance*. Es una conocida mia, *she is a friend of mine*, or es mi buena amiga; es muy amiga mia, *she is a good friend of mine*.

the *duenna* in all its associations. But *dueño*, fem. *dueña*, is regular in the sense of master, mistress of one's self; as, no fui dueña de mí misma, *I was not mistress of myself, I could not control myself.*

b. By adding *a* to the masculine endings *d, l, n, r, s*, and *z*:—

el huésped, <i>guest, boarder.</i>	la huésped, <i>the guest.</i>
el Español, <i>Spaniard.</i>	la Española, <i>Spanish woman.</i>
un oficial, <i>officer, journeyman.</i>	una oficial, <i>journeywoman.</i>
el Alemán, <i>German.</i>	la Alemana, <i>German woman.</i>
el chiquitín, <i>little one, wee thing.</i>	la chiquitina, <i>wee thing.</i>
el señor, <i>the gentleman, Mr.</i>	la señora, <i>the lady, Madam, Mrs.</i>
un aguador, <i>water-carrier.</i>	una aguadora, <i>water girl.</i>
el marqués, <i>marquis.</i>	la marquesa, <i>marchioness.</i>
el Francés, <i>Frenchman.</i>	la Francesa, <i>French woman.</i>
un Andalúz, <i>Andalusian.</i>	una Andaluza, <i>Andalusian.</i>

c. A few in *dor* and *tor* change those endings into *triz*:—

el actor, <i>the actor.</i>	la actriz, <i>the actress.</i>
el emperador, <i>the emperor.</i>	la emperatriz, <i>the empress.</i>

d. The following add *esa* to the stem of the masculine:—

el abad, <i>the abbot.</i>	la abadesa, <i>the abbess.</i>
el alcáid-e, ¹ <i>the warden.</i>	la alcaidesa, <i>the warden's wife.</i>
el alcald-e, <i>the mayor.</i>	la alcaldesa, <i>the mayor's wife.</i>
el barón, <i>the baron.</i>	la baronesa, <i>the baroness.</i>
el cond-e, <i>the earl.</i>	la condesa, <i>the countess.</i>
el duqu-e, <i>the duke.</i>	la duquesa, <i>the duchess.</i>

e. The following add *isa* to the masculine stem:—

el diácon-o, <i>the deacon.</i>	la diaconisa, <i>the deaconess.</i>
el poet-a, <i>the poet.</i>	la poetisa, <i>the poetess.</i>
el profet-a, <i>the prophet.</i>	la profetisa, <i>the prophetess.</i>
el sacerdot-e, <i>the priest.</i>	la sacerdotisa, <i>the priestess.</i>

¹ Formerly an *alcáide* was the *commander* of a fortress; such a personage is now a *general* or *commandante*, while *alcáide* has descended to the chief of a state or city *prison*. The turnkey is *el llavero*; jailor, *carcelero*.

f. Nouns in *e* not derived from Latin present participles generally change that ending into *a* :—

el sastre, <i>the tailor.</i>	la sastra, <i>the tailoress.</i>
el monje, <i>the monk.</i>	la monja, <i>the nun.</i>
el elefante, <i>the elephant.</i>	la elefanta, <i>the elephant.</i>

REMARK. — Héroe, *hero*, makes heroína, *heroine*, and jabalí, *wild boar*, makes jabalina.

g. Nouns in *ante*, *ente*, *iente* (*yente*), formed from, or on the analogy of, the Latin present participle, should be invariable ; but popular usage tends more and more to give them the feminine in *a* :—

el comediante,	la comediante, <i>or</i>	la comedianta,	the actor, actress.
el farsante,	la farsante,	la farsanta,	the "humbug."
el pariente,	la pariente,	la parienta,	the relative.
el asistente,	la asistente,	la asistenta,	the sick-nurse.
el pretendiente,	la pretendiente,	la pretendienta,	the claimant.
el presidente,	la presidente,	la presidenta,	the president.
el protestante,	la protestante,	la protestanta,	the protestant.

Exception : la infanta, *the princess royal*, never *la infante*.

98. Some nouns are irregular in the formation of the feminine :—

don (with Christian name), <i>Mr.</i>	doña (with Christian name), <i>Mrs.</i>
el príncipe, <i>the prince.</i>	la princesa, <i>the princess.</i>
el rey, <i>the king.</i>	la reina, <i>the queen.</i>
el raton, <i>the rat.</i>	la rata, <i>the mouse.</i>
el gallo, <i>the cock.</i>	la gallina, <i>the hen.</i>

a. Likewise the following proper names :—

Cárlos, <i>Charles.</i>	Carlota, <i>Charlotte.</i>
Enrique, <i>Henry.</i>	Enriqueta, <i>Henrietta.</i>
Félix, <i>Felix.</i>	Felisa, <i>Felicia.</i>
José, <i>Joseph.</i>	Josefa, <i>Joseph.</i>
Miguel, <i>Michael.</i>	Micaéla, <i>Michaela.</i>
Pablo, <i>Paul.</i>	Paula, <i>Paula.</i>
Pedro, <i>Peter.</i>	Petra, <i>Petra.</i>

99. A few nouns have a distinct form for the feminine :—

el hombre, <i>the man</i> .	la mujer, <i>the woman</i> .
el padre, <i>the father</i> .	la madre, <i>the mother</i> .
el marido, <i>the husband</i> .	la esposa, <i>the wife</i> .
el yerno, <i>the son-in-law</i> .	la nuera, <i>the daughter-in-law</i> .
el caballero, <i>the gentleman</i> .	la dama, <i>the lady</i> .
el toro, el buey, <i>the bull, the ox</i> .	la vaca, <i>the cow</i> .
el caballo, <i>the horse</i> .	la yégua (<i>equa</i>), <i>the mare</i> .
el varón, ¹ <i>male</i> (of persons).	la hembra, <i>the female</i> (persons).
el macho, <i>male</i> (of animals).	la hembra, <i>the female</i> (animals).

100. The names of some animals are masculine in form, and include the female; others are feminine in form, and include the male. To distinguish such, the words *macho* (masculus) and *hembra* (foemina) are used when necessary :—

el macho de la perdíz,	the male pheasant.
la hembra del ruiseñor,	the female nightingale.

REMARK. — An intolerable construction is often heard among the uneducated; for example: *la perdiz macho, el ruiseñor hembra*. In the predicate, however, we would say: *esta perdíz es macho, this pheasant is a male; este ruiseñor será hembra, this nightingale must be a female*.

NUMBER.

101. Spanish nouns have two numbers, the singular and the plural :—

el hombre, <i>the man</i> .	los hombres, <i>the men</i> .
la mujer, <i>the woman</i> .	las mujeres, <i>the women</i> .

¹ The regular derivative form, *la varona*, *the woman*, in its proper sense, is only found once (in Genesis II.), to represent the Hebrew *isha*,—"called *varona*" (*isha*, woman), "because she was taken out of *varon*" (*ish*, man).

Formation of the Plural.

102. The following assume *s* :—

a. All unaccented vowel terminals, except *y* :—

la casa, <i>the house.</i>	las casas, <i>the houses.</i>
el billete, <i>the ticket.</i>	los billetes, <i>the tickets.</i>
la metrópoli, <i>the capital.</i>	las metrópolis, <i>the capitals.</i>
el amigo, <i>the friend.</i>	los amigos, <i>the friends.</i>
el espíritu, <i>the spirit.</i>	los espíritus, <i>the spirits.</i>

b. The accented vowel terminal *é* :—

la fé, (<i>the</i>) <i>faith.</i>	las fés, <i>the certificates.</i>
el pié, <i>the foot.</i>	los piés, <i>the feet.</i>
el café, <i>the coffee-house.</i>	los cafés, <i>the coffee-houses.</i>

Except the letter of the alphabet, *la é, las és.*

103. The following assume *es* :—

a. All consonant terminals, converting *z* into *c* (28 *a*) :—

el huésped, <i>the guest.</i>	los huéspedes, <i>the boarders.</i>
la verdad, <i>the truth.</i>	las verdades, <i>the truths.</i>
el reloj, ¹ <i>the watch.</i>	los relojes, <i>the watches.</i>
la piel, <i>the skin, hide.</i>	las pieles, <i>the skins, hides.</i>
el varon, <i>the man, male.</i>	los varones, <i>the males.</i>
la nacion, <i>the nation.</i>	las naciones, <i>the nations.</i>
el dolor, <i>the pain, grief.</i>	los dolores, <i>the pains, sorrow.</i>
el mes, <i>the month.</i>	los meses, <i>the months.</i>
el juez, <i>the judge.</i>	los jueces, <i>the judges.</i>
la vez, <i>the time (vices).</i>	las veces, <i>the times (vices).</i>

REMARK. — *El lord*, an English *lord*, makes *los lores*; la Cámara de los lores, *the House of Lords.*

¹ From *horologium*, "time reckoner," is now often written *relo* in the singular, and always pronounced so in *Spain*; in the plural it is pronounced and written *relojes*.

b. Terminals in *y*:—

el rey, <i>the king</i> .	los reyes, <i>the kings</i> .
la ley, <i>the law</i> .	las leyes, <i>the laws</i> .
el buey, <i>the ox</i> .	los bueyes, <i>the oxen</i> .

c. Accented vowel terminals, except *é*:—

el bajá, <i>the pasha</i> .	los bajáes, <i>the pashas</i> .
el rubí, <i>the ruby</i> .	los rubíes, <i>the rubies</i> .
el jabalí, <i>the wild boar</i> .	los jabalíes, <i>the wild boars</i> .
el rondó, <i>the rondeau</i> .	los rondóes, <i>the rondeaux</i> .
el tisú, <i>the tissue</i> .	los tisúes, <i>the tissues</i> .

Exceptions in *á*: el papá, *papa*,—los papás; la mamá, *mama*,—las mamás; el sofá, *the sofa*,—los sofás.

Except. in *í*: *Maravedí* (an imaginary coin, in which accounts were formerly kept,—thirty-four to a *real* of five cents), has the three plurals: *los maravedíes*, *maravedíses*, and *maravedís*, of which the first is now obsolete.

Except. in *ó*: el landó, *the landau*,—los landós; and many others.

Except. in *ú*: la tribú, *the tribe*,—las tribús; but this word is now pronounced *tribu*.

REMARK.—Letters of the alphabet and most monosyllables belong to this rule:—

la í, la ó, la ú;	las íes, las óes, las úes.
los síes y los nóes,	the ayes and noes.

Better, however, los que dijeron sí, *those who said "aye,"* etc.

104. Invariable are: (a) the unaccented endings *is* and *es*, in words of more than one syllable; (b) patronymics in *s* and *z*; (c) most pure Latin technical or conventional terms:—

la crisis, <i>the crisis</i> .	las crisis, <i>the crises</i> .
el paréntesis, <i>the parenthesis</i> .	los paréntesis, <i>the parentheses</i> .
el juéves, <i>Thursday</i> .	los juéves, <i>on Thursdays</i> .

el mártes, <i>Tuesday</i> .	los mártes, <i>on Tuesdays</i> .
Flóres (<i>proper name</i>).	los Flóres, <i>men like Flores</i> .
Valdés (<i>proper name</i>).	los Valdés, <i>men like Valdés</i> .
Fernández (<i>proper name</i>).	los Fernández, <i>the Fernandez</i> .
el déficit, <i>the deficit</i> .	los déficit, <i>the deficits</i> .

105. Compound words, when not already plural in form, usually attach the plural sign to the last member only, unless the first is an adjective or apparently such : —

el padrenuestro, <i>the pater noster</i> .	los padrenuestros, <i>pater nosters</i> .
el tranvia, <i>the tramway</i> .	los tranvias, <i>tramways</i> .
el guardacanton, <i>the guard-post</i> .	los guardacantones, <i>guard-posts</i> .
el ferro-carril, <i>the railway</i> .	los ferro-carriles, <i>railways</i> .
el cortaplumas, <i>the pen-knife</i> .	los cortaplumas, <i>pen-knives</i> .
el mundadientes, <i>the tooth-pick</i> .	los mundadientes, <i>tooth-picks</i> .

but

gentilhombre, (<i>court</i>) <i>gentleman</i> .	gentileshombres, <i>gentlemen</i> .
ricohombre, ¹ <i>crown counsellor</i> .	ricosshombres, <i>counsellors</i> .

REMARK. — Hidalgo, *a nobleman of the lowest grade, a gentleman*, makes, properly, in the plural, *los hidalgos*, and, by a mistaken tradition, *hijodalgo*, *hijosdalgo*.² Feligrés, *parishioner*, from *filius ecclesiae*, makes, regularly, *feligréses*.

¹ Originally *ricôme*; that is, *ric'ome*, *man of the realm*, not *rich man*, which is *hombre rico*. The term is in part adoption and in part a translation of the Gothic *rik-man*, *realm-man*, *Reichsmann* in modern German.

² As if from *fijo de algo*, *son of somebody*, or, rather, *son of something*, contracted to *fidalgo*. *Hidalgo* is the word *Italicus* (like *galgo* from *gallicus*, *sergo* from *sericus*, etc.), one having the *jus italicum* or Roman citizenship, with an aspirate 'i, like *huevo* from *ovum*. This early aspiration of the initial seems to have suggested the popular make-shift *fio dalgo* of the middle age, to explain the forgotten *italico* or *ital'co*. This is proved by the derivatives: *hidalgo*, *a*, adjective, *noble*; as, *una accion hidalga*, *a noble act*; *hidalguia*, noun; as, *la hidalguia castellana*, *Spanish heroism*, or, rather, *all that is most noble in the Castilian character*.

106. Certain masculine plurals, indicative of rank and kindred, aside from their natural and obvious meaning, include the husband and wife, and the two sexes of other relatives :—

los reyes, <i>the kings, sovereigns</i> ;	the king and queen.
los príncipes, <i>the princes</i> ;	the prince and princess.
los infantes, <i>the princes royal</i> ;	the infante and infanta.
los duques, <i>the dukes</i> ;	the duke and duchess.
los presidentes, <i>the presidents</i> ;	the president and his lady.
los padres, <i>the fathers, parents</i> ;	the father and mother.
los esposos, <i>the married couple</i> ;	the husband and wife.
los cónyuges, <i>the married couple</i> ;	
los hermanos, <i>the brothers</i> ;	the brother and sister.
los tios, <i>the uncles</i> ;	the uncle and aunt.
los hijos, <i>the sons, children</i> ;	the son and daughter (of any age).
los niños, <i>the children</i> ;	the boy and girl.
los abuelos, <i>the grandfathers, grandparents</i> ;	the grandfather and grandmother.
los amos, <i>the masters</i> ;	the master and mistress.
los señores, <i>the gentlemen</i> ;	the gentleman and lady.

Example.

Ayer salieron los reyes á paseo, *yesterday the king and queen drove out* ; los reyes católicos, *the Catholic king and queen*, or, *the Catholic sovereigns* (Ferdinand and Isabella, reigned A. D. 1474-1504, 1516).

REMARK.—Most of these may also include several of both sexes : the princes and princesses royal, the sons and daughters, the boys and girls, the brothers and sisters ; like the German *Gebrüder*, *Geschwister*, etc. On the other hand, *el matrimonio* means the *husband and wife* (das Ehepaar), *the man and his wife* ; una cama de matrimonio, *a double bed, a bed for two*. So, *la pareja* properly signifies *two policemen* (who usually go in pairs in Spain). Vaya usted á llamar una pareja, *go and call the police (a brace of policemen)*.

INFLECTION.

107. Spanish nouns have no other inflectional ending than the plural sign.¹ They may, however, be declined by the aid of the case-prepositions *de* and *á*, either without the article or with it : —

el amigo del rey,	the king's friend.
á la puerta del palacio,	at the palace door.
las calles de Madrid,	the streets of Madrid.
Maria busca á Inés,	Mary seeks Agnes.
aficionado á los libros,	fond of books.
abismado en lectura,	absorbed in reading.
un amigo del juez,	a friend of the judge.

108. Inflection without the Article.

N.	Cárlos,	Charles.	Inés,	Agnes.
G.	de Cárlos,	of Charles, Charles'.	de Inés,	of Agnes, Agnes'.
D.	á Cárlos,	to Charles.	á Inés,	to Agnes.
A.	á Cárlos (76),	Charles.	á Ines (76),	Agnes.
N.	libro,	book.	libros,	books.
G.	de libro,	of book.	de libros,	of books.
D.	á libro,	to book.	á libros,	to books.
A.	libro,	book.	libros,	books.

el libro de Cárlos,	Charles's book, the book of Charles.
la pluma de Inés,	Agnes's pen.
Juan ve á María,	John sees Mary.
Luis quiere mucho á Pedro,	Lewis is very fond of Peter.
da un libro á Antonio,	give a book to Antonio.

¹ Save in a few meagre cases, like *Cárlos*, from *Carolus*; *Dios*, from *Deus*; *querque* in *Alburquerque*, from *arbor querci* (*quercûs*); *duende*, wizard, elf, from *Deus Endi*, the Iberian god *Endo*; *Fernández*, from *Fredinandus*, etc.

este juguete es propio de niños,	this toy is for children.
una hoja de libro,	a book-leaf, the leaf of a book.
no habla de libros,	he is not speaking of books.
no quiero libro alguno,	I do not want any book at all.
la puerta tiene goznes,	the door has hinges.
la ciudad está circuida de muros,	the town is surrounded by walls.

109. Inflection with the Definite Article.

Masculine.				Feminine.	
Singular.	N.	el hombre,	the man.	la mujer,	the woman.
	G.	del hombre,	the man's.	de la mujer,	the woman's.
	D.	al hombre,	to the man.	á la mujer,	to the woman.
	A.	al hombre (76),	the man.	á la mujer (76),	the woman.
Plural.	N.	los hombres,	the men.	las mujeres,	the women.
	G.	de los hombres,	the men's.	de las mujeres,	the women's.
	D.	á los hombres,	to the men.	á las mujeres,	to the women.
	A.	á los hombres,	the men.	á las mujeres,	the women.
Singular.	N.	el libro,	the book.	la pluma,	the pen.
	G.	del libro,	of the book.	de la pluma,	of the pen.
	D.	al libro,	to the book.	á la pluma,	to the pen.
	A.	el libro,	the book.	la pluma,	the pen.
Plural.	N.	los libros,	the books.	las plumas,	the pens.
	G.	de los libros,	of the books.	de las plumas,	of the pens.
	D.	á los libros,	to the books.	á las plumas,	to the pens.
	A.	los libros.	the books.	las plumas,	the pens.

el palacio de los reyes,	the king's and queen's palace (106).
la prudencia de la mujer,	the woman's prudence.
las habitaciones de la casa,	the rooms of (in) the house.
las calles de la ciudad,	the streets of the town.
sale de la habitacion,	he goes out of the room.
da el regalo á los niños,	he hands the present to the children.

110. Inflection with the Indefinite Article.

Masculine.			Feminine.	
N.	un hombre,	a man.	una mujer,	a woman.
G.	de un hombre,	a man's.	de una mujer,	a woman's.
D.	á un hombre,	to a man.	á una mujer,	to a woman.
A.	un hombre,	a man.	una mujer,	a woman.
N.	un libro,	a book.	una pluma,	a pen.
G.	de un libro,	of a book.	de una pluma,	of a pen.
D.	á un libro,	to a book.	á una pluma,	to a pen.
A.	un libro,	a book.	una pluma,	a pen.

111. Inflection of Neuter Lo with Adjectives.

Positive.			Superlative.	
N.	lo bueno,	the good.	lo mejor,	the best.
G.	de lo bueno,	of the good.	de lo mejor,	of the best.
D.	á lo bueno,	to the good.	á lo mejor,	to the best.
A.	lo bueno,	the good.	lo mejor,	the best.

veo un hombre y una mujer,
 busco al criado de un amigo,
 el vestido de una señora,
 un pañuelo de caballero,
 aquí tiene usted un servidor,
 lo peor es que no lo sabe,

nos saca de lo bueno, para caer
 en lo malo,

I see a man and a woman.
 I am seeking a friend's servant.
 a lady's dress.
 a gentleman's handkerchief.
 a servant at your disposal.
 the worst (of it) is he does not
 know it.
 he draws us away from good, to
 bring us into evil.

The Adjective.

112. Adjectives have two numbers and two genders, besides the absolute form with *lo*:—

un libro nuevo, <i>a new book.</i>	leche fresca, <i>fresh milk.</i>
los hombres sabios, <i>wise men.</i>	frutas ricas, <i>luscious fruit.</i>
lo malo, <i>what is evil, the evil.</i>	lo ancho, <i>what is wide, the width.</i>

113. Adjectives, whether attributive or predicate, agree in gender and number with the noun they qualify :—

un hombre robusto,	a stout, healthy man.
una linda casa,	a pretty house.
señoras caritativas,	benevolent ladies.
estas niñas son guapas,	these young girls are pretty.

a. With *lo*, the adjective varies anomalously to suit the gender and number of the noun, when the adjective is followed by **que**, *that*, with the verb *to be*, or its equivalents. The adjective must then be rendered by a substantive :—

lo sabios que son estos consejos,	the wisdom of these counsels (the wise that are these counsels).
lo bonita que es la iglesia,	the beauty of the church.

Formation of the Plural.

114. Adjectives form their plural in either gender by adding *s* to unaccented vowel-terminals, and *es* to consonant and accented vowel-endings, always changing *z* to *c* before *es* :—

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
frescó,	fresca,	frescos,	frescas,	fresh, cool.
español,	española,	españoles,	españolas,	Spanish.
feliz,		felices,		happy.
comun,		comunes,		common.
baladí,		baladíes,		of no account.

Formation of the Feminine.

115. The feminine of adjectives is, in general, formed by changing final *o* into *a*, or by adding *a* to certain consonant terminations. Many adjectives have but one ending for both genders.

The variation of adjectives (72) may be reduced to two general classes. The first class embraces common and proper adjectives of *two* terminations in each number, one for each gender; the second embraces common and proper adjectives of *one* termination for both genders.

REMARK. — Proper adjectives are those which are derived from the names of geographical divisions, countries, provinces, places, and persons.

116. First Class.—Two Terminations.

End-ings.	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
o	blanco,	blanca,	blancos,	blancas,	white.
—	gaditano,	gaditana,	gaditanos,	gaditanas,	of Cadiz.
an	holgazán,	holgazana,	holgazanes,	holgazanas,	lazy.
—	aleman,	alemana,	alemanes,	alemanas,	German.
ol	español,	española,	españoles,	españolas,	Spanish.
on	burlón,	burlona,	burlones,	burlonas,	roguish.
or	traidor,	traidora,	traidores,	traidoras,	treacherous.
uz	andalúz,	andaluza,	andaluces,	andaluzas,	Andalusian.

una rosa blanca, *a white rose.*

cerveza alemana, *German beer.*

ojos burlones, *roguish eyes.*

la sal andaluza, *Andalusian wit and humor.*

las señoras gaditanas, *ladies of Cadiz.*

una ley española, *a Spanish law.*

miradas traidoras, *treacherous glances.*

117. To this class belong also :—

a. Diminutives in *ete* and augmentatives in *ote*, which change the final *e* into *a* :—

regordete,	regordeta,	|	'regordetes,	regordetas,	|	chubby.
grandote,	grandota,	|	grandotes,	grandotas,	|	biggish.

All others in *e* belong to the second class ; that is, they are unchangeable for gender.

b. Diminutives and proper adjectives in *in* :—

chiquitin,	chiquitina,	|	chiquitines,	chiquitinas,	|	wee.
mallorquin,	mallorquina,	|	mallorquines,	mallorquinas,	|	of Majorca.

All others in *in* belong to the second class.

c. Proper adjectives in *és* :—

francés,	francesa,	|	franceses,	francesas,	|	French.
inglés,	inglesa,	|	ingleses,	inglesas,	|	English.
leonés,	leonesa,	|	leoneses,	leonesas,	|	of Leon (Spain).
montañés, ¹	montañesa,	|	montañeses,	montañesas,	|	highland, Asturian.

Common adjectives in *es* belong to the second class.

118. A few adjectives in *tor* may also change that ending into *triz-trices* for the feminine :—

fuerza motora or motriz,	|	motive power.
causas motoras or motrices,	|	impelling causes.

REMARK. — For comparatives in *or* and *ior* (*yor*), see 120, *b*.

¹ Montañés, *of or belonging to the hill country about Santander, Spain*, which district is called La Montaña (not *la montaña*), *the Mountain* ; and hence the adjective has the variation of proper adjectives in *és*.

119. Second Class.—One Termination.

End-ings.	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.	
	Masc. and Fem.	Masc. and Fem.	
a	agrícola, belga,	agricolas, belgas,	agricultural, Belgian.
e	grande, ateniense,	grandes, atenienses,	great, Athenian.
í	baladí, marroquí,	baladíes, marroquíes,	vile, Morocco.
al, el	nacional, fiel,	nacionales, fieles,	national, faithful.
il, ul	fácil, azul,	fáciles, azules,	easy, blue.
en, in	jóven, ruin, ¹	jóvenes, ruines,	young; low, mean.
un, ar	comun, familiar,	comun, familiares,	common, familiar.
az, ez	capaz, soez,	capaces, soeces,	capable, low.
iz, oz	feliz, atroz,	felices, atroces,	happy, shocking.

un pueblo agrícola, *an agricultural people*.

la cultura ateniense, *Athenian culture*.

una cinta azul, *a blue ribbon*.

la vida comun, *common life*.

el gobierno persa, *the Persian government*.

una casa grande, *a large house*.

las fiestas nacionales, *the national holidays*.

las muchachas jóvenes, *young girls*.

una muerte feliz, *a happy death*.

los pueblos belgas, *the Belgian towns*.

120. To this class belong also:—

a. All common adjectives in *és*:—

cortés, *pl. corteses, polite*.

una advertencia cortés,

palabras corteses,

puercos monteses,²

montés, *pl. monteses, mountain-*

a courteous remark.

polite language.

wild (or mountain) boars.

¹ Latin, *Latin*, is a noun; *latino, latina*, an adjective: saber el Latin, *to know Latin*; un libro latino, *a Latin book*; la literatura latina, *Latin literature*.

² *Jabalí* also means *wild boar*. It is the Arabic adjective from *djebel*, *mountain*; therefore *puerco montés* is the Castilian synonym of *jabali*. So, Arab. *alfayate*, Cast. *sastre, tailor*; Arab. *alarife*, Cast. *arquitecto, architect*; Arab. *albéitar*, Cast. *veterinario, farrier*, etc., etc.

b. All comparatives in *or*, *ior* (*yor*):—

mejor, <i>pl.</i> mejores, <i>better</i> .	interior, <i>pl.</i> interiores, <i>interior</i> .
peor, <i>pl.</i> peores, <i>worse</i> .	superior, <i>pl.</i> superiores, <i>superior</i> .

c. All adjectives in *ista*, indicating social, political, moral, and scientific affiliations:—

un principio socialista,	a socialistic principle.
una idea oscurantista,	an old-fogy notion.
el partido carlista,	the Carlist party.
los prohombres progresistas,	the advanced leaders
(leaders of the late Progresista or advance party, 1836–1871).	

d. All adjectives in *e* (except 117, *a*):—

una almendra dulce,	a sweet almond.
una herida grave,	a serious wound.
una tiple eminente,	a distinguished soprano-singer.
graves inconvenientes,	serious objections.

e. The ending *-ense* is the learned or modern journalistic and literary form of proper adjectives, against the popular ones in *o* and *és* (*ensis*); thus, matritense and madrileño, *of Madrid*; tudense and tudés, *of Tuy*; conquense and conqués, *of Cuenca*; abulense and avilés, *of Ávila*; escurialense and escorialeno, *of the Escorial*. A few, however, possess no other form than the learned or classical one: as, ateniense, *Athenian*; parisiense (popular, *parisién*), *of Paris, Parisian*.

121. All proper adjectives, then, are variable in gender, except those in *a*, *e*, and *í*:—

catalan, <i>a</i> , <i>Catalonian</i> .	valenciano, <i>a</i> , <i>Valencian</i> .
castellano, <i>a</i> , <i>Castilian</i> .	extremeño, <i>a</i> , <i>of Extremadura</i> .
vallisoletano, <i>a</i> , <i>of Valladolid</i> .	européo, <i>a</i> , <i>European</i> .
asturiano, <i>a</i> , <i>Asturian</i> .	aragonés, <i>a</i> , <i>Aragonese</i> .

inglés, a, *English*.
mahonés, a, of *Puerto Mahon*.
gallego, a, *Galician*.
manchego, a, of *La Mancha*.
griego, a, *Greek, Grecian*.
alicantino, a, of *Alicante*.
bilbaíno, a, of *Bilbao*.
índio, a, *Indian*.

judío, a, *Jewish*.
británico, a, *British*.
alcaláíno, a, } of *Alcalá de He-*
complutense, } *nares*.
celta, *Celtic*.
árabe, *Arabian*.
marroquí, of *Morocco*.
berberí, of *Barbary*.

122. Any adjective may be employed as a substantive in either gender or number, assuming in that case all the laws that govern the noun :—

el Español, *the Spaniard*.
el sabio, *the wise man*.

los Españoles, *Spaniards*.
los fieles, *the faithful*.

a. On the other hand, nouns are occasionally associated as adjectives with other nouns, thus forming compound expressions as in the Teutonic languages :—

la tierra vírgen, *virgin soil*.
la madre patria, *mother country*.
la escuela-modelo, *model school*.
el cura párroco, *the parish priest*.

una carta-prólogo, *an epistolary*
preface.
una carta-puebla, *local privilege*
(law).

Apocopation.

123. Eight adjectives lose their final *o* when they stand as attributes immediately before a noun in the masculine singular :—

bueno, *good*.
malo, *bad, poor (of things)*.
postrero, *latter, last*.
primero, *first*.

tercero,¹ *third*.
uno, *one*.
alguno, *some, any (neg. no)*.
ninguno (necunus),² *no, not any,*
none.

¹ *Tercero* remains unabridged in the formula of the Creed, "el tercero día," and, in general, in the sacred style.

² The *n* is inserted, as in *cementerio, cemetery*.

buen tiempo, <i>good weather.</i>	el tercer día, <i>the third day.</i>
mal éxito, <i>ill-success.</i>	un soldado, <i>one soldier.</i>
el postrer duelo, <i>the last pang.</i>	algún motivo, <i>some cause.</i>
el primer tomo, <i>the first volume.</i>	ningún libro, <i>no book.</i>

but

¿tiene usted un buen vecino?	have you a good neighbor?
tengo uno muy bueno,	I have a very good one.
un hombre malo y perverso,	a bad, vicious man.
el año primero y último,	the first and last year.
el libro tercero del tomo quinto,	book third of volume fifth.
uno y otro día,	both days (one and the other day).
no hay remedio alguno,	there is no help for it at all.
ninguno de los dos,	neither of the two.
el bueno de mi amigo,	my good friend (idiom).
alguno que otro día,	one day or another (idiom).

a. In the language of common life this law is frequently extended to the feminine singular, especially before *a* and *ha*:—

buen alhaja, <i>fine jewel, pretty fellow</i> (in irony ¹).	un alma, <i>one soul.</i>
algun ave, <i>some bird.</i>	en mal hora, <i>inopportunistly.</i>
	de primer agua, <i>first water (rate).</i>

b. The numeral adjective **uno**, *one*, when associated or combined with other numbers, is contracted before nouns of either number or gender which it serves to multiply:—

treinta y un días, *thirty-one days.* | veintiún casas, *twenty-one houses.*

124. The adjective **grande**, *great*, in the sense of eminence, loses its final syllable *de* before a singular noun beginning with a consonant not *h*:—

¹ Of course, in this secondary sense, *alhaja* is masculine, according to 93.

una gran casa, *a great family*.
un gran peligro, *a great peril*.

un gran día,¹ *a great occasion*.
el Gran Capitan,² *the Great Captain*.

but

un grande amigo, *a great friend*
(*intimate*).

un grande hombre, *a great man*
(*distinguished*).

una grande iglesia, *a great (famous) church*.

a. The full form is, however, used, even before consonants, when *grande* has an intensive or emphatic signification. In this sense it was formerly much more common than at present:—

tan grande sancto, *so great a saint*. | el grande daño, *the great harm*.³

b. When *grande* refers to *dimensions*, or *order*, it regularly stands after the noun it qualifies:—

una casa grande, *a large house*.

un hombre grande, *a large man*.

el premio grande, *the first prize*.

un caballo grande, *a large horse*.

REMARK.—In the sense of tallness, *grande* is now rather replaced by *alto*, *alto de cuerpo*, *alto de estatura*; or by *buen mozo* (fem. *buena moza*), applied to any age, to mean *a fine, tall person*, and *a fine-looking person*, with reference to form and size.

125. Cualquiera, pl. cualesquiera, whatever, any—
you please, usually, but not uniformly, loses the final *a* before a noun of either gender or number:—

¹ When Isla wrote "*Día grande de Navarra*," he meant, it is true, a great civic occasion, but with the humorous idea of dimensions,—*a big day, a high day*.

² Gonzalo de Cordova, so called for his conquest of Naples and Sicily.

³ From Fray Luis de Granada: *Sermon de las Caydas Publicas*, Lisbon, 1588; Madrid, 1589; and Antwerp, 1590; 8vo. The modern editions all have in these passages *gran santo*, *gran daño*; for no Spanish author has been so corrected and spoiled in text by the Inquisition as the Friar Lewis.

cualquier <i>or</i> cualquiera libro,	any book (whatever).
cualquier <i>or</i> cualquiera cosa,	any thing (whatever).
cualesquier <i>or</i> cualesquiera motivos,	any causes (whatever).
but always	

cualquiera de los libros,	any of the books.
un libro cualquiera,	any book you please.
cualesquiera que sean los motivos,	whatever be the causes or motives.

126. Ciento, one hundred (never *un* ciento), loses its final syllable *to* when it stands before the word it multiplies, whichever be the gender :—

cien soldados, cien almas,	one hundred soldiers, souls.
cien mil pesos, cien millones,	100,000 dollars, 100,000,000.

but

ciento veinte,	one hundred (and) twenty.
ciento y diez,	one hundred and ten.
ciento contra uno,	one hundred against one.
mil y ciento,	one thousand (and) one hundred.

127. The word *santo, saint*, loses its final syllable *to* only before the names of the calendar saints, arch-angels, and Old-Testament worthies :—

San Pedro (S. Pedro), <i>St. Peter.</i>	San Juan (S. Juan), <i>St. John.</i>
San Miguel (S. Miguel), <i>St. Michael.</i>	San Pablo, <i>St. Paul.</i>
	San Agustin, <i>St. Augustine.</i>
San Daniel (S. Daniel), <i>St. Daniel.</i>	San Gabriel, <i>St. Gabriel.</i>
	San Josué, <i>St. Joshua.</i>

Except : Santo Tomás *or* Tomé (S. Tomás), *St. Thomas* ; Santo Domingo (S. Domingo), *St. Dominic* ; Santo Toribio, *St. Toribius* ; and Santo Job, *St. Job*. St. Thomas, as the name of one of the West-India islands, is now accented and written San Tómas and San Thómas, in conformity with foreign usage.

a. The fem. *santa* remains always unabridged :—

Santa María, *St. Mary*.
 Santa Isabel, *St. Elizabeth*.
 Santa Bárbara, *St. Barbara*.

Santa Inés, *St. Agnes*.
 Santa Águeda, *St. Agatha*.
 Santa Rita,¹ *St. Margaret*.

b. The adjective **santo**, *a, holy*, is never contracted :—

el santo ángel, *the holy angel*. | el santo varón, *that saintly man*.
 una santa mujer, *a saintly woman*.

REMARK. — In giving a series of two or more saints' names, it is in better taste to prefix the title to each singly :—

San Juan y San José, *St. John and St. Joseph*, not los Santos Juan y José (los SS. Juan y José), *Sts. John and Joseph*.

POSITION OF THE ADJECTIVE.

128. The attributive adjective, as a rule, stands after the noun qualified, in ordinary unemphatic language ; notwithstanding, all elegant writers, poets, and orators, place it according to their own views of taste, harmony, and effect :—

un cuento divertido,
 un asunto grave,
 una noticia desgarradora,
 la lengua castellana,
 el continente europeo,
 el gobierno español,
 una acción desalmada,

an entertaining story.
 a serious matter.
 heart-rending intelligence.
 the Castilian language.
 the European continent.
 the Spanish government.
 a heartless action.

¹ This local saint is called in Spain, "la abogada de los imposibles," *the patroness of impossibilities*. St. Barbara is the advocate of Spanish gunpowder and coast defenses, while the *chulo*, the "*b'ho*y" (*puerum, plulo, chulo*), swears vengeance "por vía 'e San André" (63, 66), *by the life of St. Andrew*, as he rushes upon his adversary with the historic *navaja* (*navalia*) or "*Jack's*" knife.

129. The following, therefore, are more especially found after the substantive limited by them, unless the language is poetic or expansive : —

a. Participles and participial adjectives in *ado*, *ido*, and those in *ante*, *ente*, *iente* (*yente*), derived from Latin present participles : —

un sacerdote consagrado,	a consecrated priest.
la oveja perdida,	the lost sheep.
banderas desplegadas,	banners unfurled (flying banners).
aguas abundantes,	abundant water.
un espíritu paciente,	a patient spirit. [sembly.
las Córtes constituyentes,	the Constituent (National) As-
los caballeros andantes,	the knights-errant.

but, poetically or expansively:

por dilatadas regiones,	over extensive regions.
las engañadas naciones,	the deceived nations.
la naciente estrella,	the rising star.
la andante caballería,	knight-errantry.

b. Proper adjectives, or those derived from geographical, personal, political, and scientific names : —

las Escenas matritenses,	pictures of Madrid life.
los prados jerezanos,	the grassy plains of Sherry.
el idioma francés,	the French language.
un cabecilla carlista,	a Carlist (guerilla) chieftain.
la filosofía positivista,	positive philosophy.
el partido unionista,	the union party.

but, poetically:

los tartésios campos,	| the plains of Tartessus.
-----------------------	--------------------------

c. Common adjectives in *al, dor, tor*:—

el despacho central,	the Central office.
el puente internacional,	the International Bridge.
un principio conservador,	a conservative principle.
la sociedad protectora de animales,	the society for the protection of animals.

but, in poetry :

la vencedora gente,	the victorious people.
---------------------	------------------------

d. All augmentatives and diminutives ¹:—

el alcalde pregunton,	the impertinent busybody.
un niño chiquitin,	a wee bit of a child.
un hombre grandecito,	a tallish man.
un aldeano ricote,	a well-to-do villager.

e. In general, long adjectives, unless emphatic or intensive :—

una cosa imposible,	an impossible thing.
medidas preventivas,	preventive measures.

but

mi inolvidable amigo,	my never-to-be-forgotten friend.
con incansable afan,	with untiring zeal.

f. When a plural substantive is limited by two or more adjectives in the singular, the latter must stand after the noun :—

las lenguas griega y latina,	the Greek and Latin languages.
los tomos primero y cuarto,	the first and fourth volumes.
las filas tercera y vigésima,	the third and twentieth rows.
los siglos segundo, cuarto y quinto,	the second, fourth, and fifth centuries.

¹ Of this difficult subject we shall treat in a chapter apart, because the foreigner cannot be taught out of Spain to use them correctly. They are a part of the national type.

130 A few adjectives regularly precede the noun in ordinary language:—

mucho dinero, *much money*.
demasiado juicio, *too much prudence*.
buenos consejos, *good advice*.

poca gracia, *little attractiveness*.
tantas virtudes, *so many virtues*.
mayores fuerzas, *greater strength*.
malas plumas, *poor pens*.

131. Some adjectives have distinct significations, according to their position with respect of the noun:—

un buen hombre, *a good man*.
una buena noche, *a good night*.
mal negocio, *bad business (unfortunate)*.
mala pluma, *poor pen*.
gran vicio, *great defect*.
nuevo libro, *new book (different)*.
negra accion, *dark deed*.
varios papeles, *various papers, or documents*.
pobre muchacho,* *poor boy*.
pobre autor, *sorry author*.
cierta época, *a certain period*.
santa Biblia, *sacred Bible*.
santa tierra, *sacred soil*.
santo padre, *father (of the church)*.
santo campo, *sacred field*.

un hombre bueno,¹ *a "best" man*.
noche buena, *Christmas Eve*.
un jóven malo, *a bad youth (wicked)*.
toro malo, *vicious bull*.
pera grande, *large pear*.
libro nuevo, *new book (recent)*.
vestido negro, *black coat*.
papeles varios, *miscellaneous papers*.
el muchacho pobre, *the poor boy*.
autor pobre, *indigent author*.
noticia cierta, *reliable news*.
semana santa, *holy week (Easter)*.
tierra santa, *Holy Land*.
el padre santo, *the pope*.
campo santo, *cemetery*.

a. Some adjectives precede or follow the noun with little or no difference of signification:—

¹ An early translation of the old Gothic "goodsman," *property man*, and hence *responsible*, a *voucher*. So the *omes* or *hombres buenos* of the mediæval Córtes were *select men*, from this property qualification. They represented the third estate in assembly with the prelates and nobles.

² In commiseration; more or less depreciative, and often resented by persons of spirit, from its side-meaning of *infeliz*, *stupid*; still, the natives say: "¡Pobre España! digna de mejor suerte," *poor Spain! worthy of a better fate*.

un pequeño libro,	un libro pequeño,	a small book.
una bonita casa,	una casa bonita,	a pretty house.
un hermoso regalo.	un regalo hermoso,	a handsome present.
un breve discurso,	un discurso breve,	a short discourse.
un triste día,	un día triste,	a sad day.

COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES.

132. Adjectives in Spanish have the three usual degrees of comparison; namely, the Positive, Comparative, and Superlative, each of which is varied according to gender and number:—

Positive.	Comparative.
<i>m.</i> blanco, blancos, } <i>white.</i> <i>f.</i> blanca, blancas, }	más blanco, más blancos, } <i>whiter.</i> más blanca, más blancas, }
Superlative Relative.	Superlative Absolute.
el or lo más blanco, } la más blanca, } <i>the whitest.</i> los más blancos, } las más blancas, }	blanquísimo (13), } blanquísima, } <i>very white.</i> blanquísimos, } blanquísimas, }

So compare *fresc-o*, *fresh, cool*; *trist-e*, *sad*; *prudent-e*, *prudent*; *viej-o*, *old*; *aplicad-o*, *diligent*.

el libro es más pesado que el periódico,	the book is duller than the newspaper.
la ventana es más alta que la puerta,	the window is higher than the door.
estos sombreros son más caros que los míos,	these hats are dearer than mine.
aquellos son los más hermosos de la fábrica,	those yonder are the finest (ones) in the factory.
los de mi amigo son hermosísimos,	those of my friend are very fine.

133. Four adjectives have, besides their regular comparatives and superlatives, other preferred forms derived from the Latin, but popularly called irregular. They are:—

Positive.		Comparative.		
bueno, a, malo, a, grande, ¹	good. bad, poor. great, large.	mejor (120, b), peor, es, mayor, es,	(rarely, más bueno), (seldom, más malo), or, más grande,	better. worse, poorer. greater, larger, older.
pequeño, a,	small, little.	menor, es,	or, más pequeño,	smaller, less, younger.
Superlative Relative.				
el, la, lo { mejor; peor; mayor; menor;	los, las { mejores, peores, mayores, menores,	(rarely, el, etc., más bueno, a), (seldom, el, etc., más malo, a), or, el, la, lo más grande, los, las más grandes, or, el, lo, la más pequeño, a, los, las más pequeños, as,	the best. the worst, poorest. the greatest, largest, oldest. the smallest, least, youngest.	
Superlative Absolute.				
bonísimo, a, malísimo, a, grandísimo, a, pequeñísimo, a,	or, muy bueno, a, muy malo, a, muy grande, muy pequeño, a,	(rarely, óptimo, a), (" pésimo, a), (seldom, máximo, a), (" mínimo, a),	very good. very bad, poor. very large, great. very small, little. ²	

¹ The positive *magno*, a (Lat. *magnus*), hitherto obsolete, save as an epithet of kings (Carlomagno, *Charlemagne*; Alfonso III. el Magno, *Alphonso III. the Great*, † A.D. 910, etc.), is of late considerably used in an intensive sense: as, una concurrencia magna, a *big turn-out*; una sensacion magna, a *great sensation*; la cuestion magna, the *decisive question*, the question; una turba magna, a *big crowd*.

² *Máximo* and *mínimo* may be used as relative superlatives with a few words like *cosa*, *parte*: la máxima parte, the *greatest part*; la mínima cosa, the *slightest thing*. *Óptimo* and *pésimo* answer a question, thus: ¿Qué tal ha sido la pieza? — Pésima. *How was the play?* — *Very poor*.

digno de mejor suerte,
 sus mejores proyectos,
 los mejores libros,
 la peor pluma,
 peor está que estaba,
 la mayor parte,
 un peligro mayor,
 el premio mayor,
 buscaba mayor espacio á sus
 esperanzas,
 la menor imprudencia,
 los hermanos mayores,
 los hijos menores,

worthy of a better fate.
 his best-laid plans.
 the best books.
 the poorest pen.
 it is worse than it was.
 the greater part.
 a greater peril.
 the highest (first) prize.
 he sought a broader field for his
 expectations.
 the slightest imprudence.
 the older brothers.
 the younger children.

Comparative Formulae.

134. Most parts of speech may be placed in relations of comparison by the use of certain adverbs and adjectives constituting correlative formulae. Such are:—

<i>Equality.</i>	tan — como,	as (so) — as.
“	tanto, a — como, <i>or</i> }	as (so) much — as, as (so)
“	tanto, a — cuanto, a, }	many — as.
<i>Superiority.</i>	más — que (de),	more — than.
<i>Inferiority.</i>	ménos — que (de),	less — than, fewer — than.
	cuanto más — tanto más,	the more — the more.
	cuanto ménos — tanto ménos,	the less — the less.

tan blanco como la nieve,
 es tan buena como rica,
 tanto oro como plata,
 tanta prudencia como habilidad,
 tantos hombres como mujeres,
 tanto dinero cuanto usted diga,
 más alto que una casa,
 más rico que el que más,
 más libros que dinero,
 ménos sabio que él,

as white as snow.
 she is as good as (she is) rich.
 as much gold as silver.
 as much discretion as shrewdness.
 as many men as women.
 as much money as you say.
 higher than a house.
 richer than the richest.
 more books than money.
 less (not so) wise than (as) he.

ménos honrado que ducho,	less upright than able.
ménos lápices que plumas,	fewer pencils than pens.
cuanto más habla tanto más di- vaga,	the more he talks the more he rambles.
cuanto ménos dinero gana tanto ménos ahorra,	the less money he earns the less he lays by.

135. In the formula *tan—como*, the first member may be suppressed :—

blanco como la nieve,	white as snow.
manso como un cordero,	meek as a lamb.

a. In the poetic style, the second member of the same formula may be replaced by *cual*, but the noun following, in that case rejects the article :—

blanco cual nieve, <i>or, better,</i> }	white as snow.
cual nieve blanco,	
manso cual cordero, <i>or</i> }	meek as a lamb.
cual cordero manso,	

136. The correlative formulae may be expressed negatively by placing **no**, *not*; **sin**, *without*; **tampoco**, *nor*—*either*, etc., before the verb :—

no es ménos bella que rica,	she is not less beautiful than rich.
no somos tan buenos como ellos,	we are not so good as they.
sin tener ellos tantos libros como yo,	without their having so many books as I. [thou.
tampoco exige él más que tú,	neither does he require more than
no soy ménos cuerdo que él,	I am not less prudent than he.

137. The comparative adverb *que* is replaced, —

a. By *de lo que* (than what) when the second part of the comparison contains a verb :—

más discreto de lo que parece, parece más docta de lo que es, es ménos rico de lo que dice,	| more prudent than he seems. [is. she seems more learned than she he is not so wealthy as he says.
---	---

REMARK. — The original *que* may be resumed, however, if the comparative consists of one of the organic forms in *or*: —

peor está que estaba, or, <i>Worse and Worse</i> , the title of one of Calderon's dramas.	| it is worse than it was,
--	--------------------------

b. By *de*, before numerals, provided the sentence be affirmative; if it be negative, the resumption of *que* is quite general, but not universal: —

tiene más de diez casas, tendrá ménos de veinte años de edad, no ha ido allá más que dos veces, tampoco tengo yo más que tres, sin tener ménos que cuatro casas de campo,	| he has more than ten houses. he must be less than twenty years old. he has not been there more than twice. I haven't more than three either. without having fewer than four country-seats.
--	---

138. *Más* and *ménos* may be strengthened by the adverbs **un poco**, *a little*; **poco**, *scarcely*; **mucho**, *much*; **harto** or **bastante**, *considerably*; **aun**, *even*; **todavía**, *yet, still*; and by the superlative **muchísimo** (never *muy mucho*, in the modern language), *very much*: —

poco más ancho, mucho más blanco, harto ménos doloroso, aun más favorable, muchísimo ménos grave,	| scarcely any wider. much whiter. considerably less painful. still (even) more favorable. very much less serious.
---	--

139. From the above tables (132, 134) it appears: —

a. That the comparative degree of adjectives is formed by placing the adverbs **más**, *more*; **ménos**, *less*,

before the positive, with **que** (de), *than*, to complete the comparison.

b. That four adjectives have, in general use, organic comparative forms derived from the Latin *melior*, *pejor*, *major*, *minor*.

c. That *mayor* and *menor*, applied to persons, signify also *older* and *younger*; and to things, *greater*, *less*.

REMARK. — In some phrases *mayor* signifies *greater*, with reference to some other undefined object, and then should be rendered simply by *great*, *grand*, or *chief*: —

la iglesia mayor,	| the principal church (cathedral).
la plaza mayor,	
la calle mayor,		the grand square.
	grand street (main street).

The Superlative Degree.

140. As already seen (132), the superlative of adjectives is of two kinds, — relative and absolute.

a. The relative superlative is translated by *most* or *-est*, and expresses not only superiority and inferiority to any other quality or object, but also to all other qualities or objects, declared or implied.

b. The absolute superlative, translated by *very*, and occasionally by *most*, *-est*, expresses quality or quantity in a very high degree, but without comparison.

The Relative Superlative.

141. The relative superlative is formed by associating the definite article (*el*, *la*, *lo*; *los*, *las*) or a possessive adjective (*my*, *thy*, *his*, *our*, etc.) with the comparative: —

el más justo juicio,	the justest judgment. [matter.
lo más grave del asunto,	the most serious (thing) in the
los libros ménos estimados,	the least esteemed books.
mi más querido amigo,	my dearest friend.
nuestro menor deseo,	our least (or smallest) desire.
el mayor mónstruo los zelos,	jealousy the greatest monster.

142. When the noun is accompanied by the definite article or a possessive adjective, the superlative may follow it without an article. This is especially the case when the adjective preferably stands after the noun in the positive :—

las casas más blancas,	the whitest houses.
los nombres más conocidos,	the best known names (146).
los dias más aciagos, <i>or</i> }	the most ill-starred days.
los más aciagos dias, }	
la necesidad más apremiante, <i>or</i> }	the most urgent necessity.
la más apremiante necesidad, }	
los hombres más leídos,	the best read men.

Except when the noun with which the adjective agrees is in *apposition* with some other term, or when the article is found with the noun in an indefinite sense; in the latter case it is customary to use a partitive genitive or the absolute superlative :—

los Ingleses, gente la más despre-	the English, a most unprejudiced
ocupada,	people.
un jóven de los más despejados,	one of the brightest of young men,
<i>or</i> ,	<i>or</i> ,
un jóven despejadísimo,	a very bright young man.

a. The relative superlative assumes the article when it stands in the predicate after the verb *to be* or its equivalents, and agrees with the subject of the verb :—

la antigua provincia de Galicia es	the ancient province of Galicia is
la más remota de España,	the most retired (one) in Spain.

143. The relative superlative is, from its very structure, a definite comparative as well. Thus, in the examples :—

es el individuo más instruido de la Academia,	he is the most learned member in the Academy,
fué la señora-ménos amable de la tertulia,	she was the least amiable lady at the <i>conversazione</i> ,

the logical interpretation would be: He is more learned than any other member of the Academy; she was less amiable than any other lady at the *conversazione*. Hence,—

144. The relative superlative is often expressed in Spanish by the formal comparative :—

esta es cosa que me da mayor pena,	this is a thing that gives me the greatest concern,
(i.e., <i>greater</i> concern than any other thing.)	

lo que es más caro al hombre,	what is dearest to man.
(what is <i>dearer</i> than anything else.)	

145. When two objects, persons, or qualities are compared, the formal superlative is really a comparative, and must be so translated :—

de estos dos albañiles, Pedro es el más hábil,	of these two masons, Peter is the more skilful.
de las dos señoras, la morena es la ménos simpática,	of the two ladies, the brunette is the less congenial.

146. The comparative and the relative superlative, with *más*, are translated by *better* and *best*, instead of *more* and *most*, when participial adjectives, to which *well* may be joined in the positive, are compared in their proper sense as such :—

más conocido,	<i>better known.</i>	el más conocido,	<i>the best known.</i>
más leído,	<i>better read.</i>	el más leído,	<i>the best read.</i>
más amados,	<i>better loved.</i>	los más amados,	<i>the best loved.</i>

a. If the past participle has also the signification of a mere adjective, its comparative and superlative are rendered as usual:—

querido, *dear*. | más querido, *dearer*. | el más querido, *dearest*.

Instruido may be translated by *instructed* or by *learned*, and its degrees of comparison would be rendered accordingly:—

más instruido,	<i>better instructed,</i>	el más instruido,	<i>the best in-</i>
	<i>more learned.</i>		<i>structed, the most learned.</i>

147. The prepositions *in*, *at*, *of*, after a relative superlative, are generally expressed in Spanish by *de*:—

el hombre más ruin de la ciudad,	the vilest man in town.
el suelo más férax de la comarca,	the most fertile soil in the district.
la conferencia más concurrida de la série,	the best attended lecture of the course.

REMARK.—The use of *en* in this relation is very common,¹ but is, perhaps, to be classed with popular idioms or vulgarisms:—

es el niño más despejado (de) en la escuela,	he is the brightest lad in (the) school.
--	--

148. The neuter article *lo* may be employed with any superlative to which in English the word *thing*, or some other word, may be supplied:—

¹ This construction with *en*, when used of persons, may generally be explained as an *ellipse*: de los que hay en la e., *of those who are in the s.* Wiggers, *Grammatik*, p. 67, gives wrongly: *La casa más hermosa en la ciudad*; a sentence no *Spaniard* would write.

lo más fácil no es siempre lo mejor,	the easiest (way) is not always the best.
lo más acertado será el negárselo,	the most appropriate (thing) will be to refuse him (<i>it to him</i>).

The Absolute Superlative.

149. The absolute superlative is formed by affixing to the stem of the positive the variable ending *-ísimo* : —

es claro, clarísimo,	it is clear, very clear.
una cosa acertadísima,	a very appropriate thing.
un hombre prudentísimo,	a very prudent man.
esta señora es feísima,	this lady is very plain ("homely").
tengo muchísimos libros,	I have a great many books.
una necesidad apremiantísima,	a most urgent necessity.

a. The absolute superlative is also formed by associating with the simple adjective adverbs like **muy**, **bien**, *very*; **harto**, **bastante**, *considerably*, *quite*; **sumamente**, *exceedingly*; **excesivamente**, *extremely*, etc.

muy blanco, <i>very white</i> .	sumamente rico, <i>exceedingly rich</i> .
harto sensible, <i>very much to be regretted</i> .	excesivamente raro, <i>extremely rare</i> .

REMARK. — The superlative in *-ísimo* assumes the same position with respect of the noun that the simple adjective would have : —

poco fruto, poquísimos frutos,	little fruit, very little fruit.
un orador elocuente, un orador elocuentísimo,	an eloquent orator, a very eloquent orator.
un joven rico, un joven riquísimo,	{ a wealthy young man, a very wealthy young man.

150. The affix *-ísimo* is applied to the pure stem of the adjective agreeably to the following laws : —

a. By rejecting a final vowel, or a true diphthong (§ 21):—

doct-o, doct-ísimo, <i>very learned.</i>	hermos-o, hermos-ísimo, <i>very</i>
suav-e, suav-ísimo, <i>very mild.</i>	<i>beautiful.</i>
grand-e, grand-ísimo, <i>very large.</i>	ampl-io, ampl-ísimo, <i>very full.</i>

but (according to §§ 20, 22):

impí-o, impi-ísimo, *very wicked.* | fri-o, fri-ísimo, *very cold.*

b. By changing the final stem-consonants *c* into *qu*, *g* into *gu*, and *z* into *c* (§§ 13; 15; 28, a):—

blanc-o, blanqu-ísimo, <i>very white.</i>	feliz, felic-ísimo, <i>very happy.</i>
larg-o, largu-ísimo, <i>very long.</i>	atroz, atroc-ísimo, <i>very shocking.</i>

c. By changing the termination *-ble* into *-bil*:—

noble, nobil-ísimo, *very noble.* | amable, amabil-ísimo, *very kind.*

d. By restoring the movable diphthongs *ie* and *ue* to their primitive simple vowels *e* and *o* (§ 19):—

diestro, destrísimo, <i>very expert.</i>	tierno, ternísimo, <i>very dear.</i>
valiente, valentísimo, <i>very brave.</i>	lieto, letísimo, <i>very beaming.</i>
ardiente, ardentísimo, <i>very zealous, very glowing.</i>	bueno, bonísimo, <i>very good.</i>
cierto, certísimo, <i>very sure.</i>	nuevo, novísimo, <i>very recent.</i> ¹
	fuerte, fortísimo, <i>very strong.</i>

REMARK.—This rule is fast yielding to the corrupting influences of the uneducated classes, and *ciertísimo*, *tiernísimo*, and *fuertísimo* are frequently heard and found in literature, although the Academy recognizes only the first. Viejo, *old*, always maintains the diphthong in the superlative (*viejísimo*); while the derivative vejez, *old age*, rejects it.

¹ Generally rendered and used as a *relative* superlative: La Novísima Recopilacion, *the latest compilation*; i.e., the *Revised Statutes* (of 1806), those of Philip II. (1567) being la Nueva Recopilacion, *the New Digest*.

e. By simply attaching *-ísimo* to the unchanged adjective when it ends in any consonant except *z* :—

útil, utilísimo, *very useful*. | liberal, liberalísimo, *very liberal*.

151. A few superlatives in *-ísimo* are constructed on Latin stems:—

amigo,* ¹	amicísimo,	very friendly,	from amic-us.
antiguo,	antiquísimo,	very ancient,	antiqu-us.
benéfico,	beneficentísimo,	very beneficent,	beneficent(is).
benévolo,	benevolentísimo,	very benevolent,	benevolent(is).
cruel,	crudelísimo,	very cruel,	crudel-is.
fiel,	fidelísimo,	very faithful,	fidel-is.
frio,*	} frigidísimo,	very cold,	frigid-us.
frígido,			
magnífico,	magnificentísimo,	very magnificent,	magnificent(is).
pio,*	} pientísimo,*	very devoted,	pient(is).
piadoso,*			
sabio,	sapientísimo,	very wise,	sapient(is).
sacro,	} sacratísimo,	very sacred,	sacrat-us.
sagrado,			

152. Some few adjectives form their absolute superlatives by attaching *-ísimo* to the Latin base in *er* :—

áspero,*	aspérrimo,	very harsh,	from asper.
célebre,	celebérrimo,	very famous,	celeber.
íntegro,	integérrimo,	very disinterested,	integer.
libre,	libérrimo,	very free,	liber.
mísero,	misérrimo,	very wretched,	miser.
pobre,*	paupérrimo,	very indigent,	pauper.
salubre,	salubérrimo,	very healthful,	saluber.

¹ Those distinguished by an *asterisk* have also the regular superlative; as, *amiguitísimo, fríusimo, piadosísimo, asperísimo, pobrísimo*.

² The form *pientísimo*, although unknown to the Academy's Dictionary and Grammars, is in common use. The earliest record of it that I remember is in the *Diferencias de libros q̄ ay en el uniuerso*, by Alexo Vanegas de Busto, Toledo, 1540, f. 240, where the author says: "de la piētissima (pientísima) virgē maria." Vanegas is an "authority" recognized by the Academy (*Dict.*, ed. 1726, p. lxxxvi, and *Catálogo de Autoridades*, Madrid, 1874, p. 100).

a. The superlative **ubérrimo**, *very productive*, wants the positive and comparative (Lat. *uber, uberior*), which, however, may be supplied by *ferdáz*.

153. The adjectives **fácil**, *easy, probable*; **difícil**, *difficult, not probable*, have the superlatives *facilísimo, facilimo*; *difícilísimo* and *difícilimo*.

154. The following comparatives and superlatives in form, derived from the Latin, have mostly lost their primitive force as such, and may be treated as adjectives, occasionally with special significations:—

anterior, <i>previous, prior.</i>	(wanting.)
citerior, <i>hither.</i>	(wanting.)
exterior, <i>external, outside.</i>	extremo, <i>extreme.</i>
inferior, <i>inferior, lower.</i>	ínfimo, <i>lowest.</i>
interior, <i>internal, inside.</i>	íntimo, <i>intimate.</i>
posterior, <i>posterior.</i>	postremo, <i>hindermost.</i>
(más cercano, <i>nearer.</i>)	próximo, <i>nearest, next.</i>
superior, <i>superior, upper.</i>	supremo, <i>sumo, highest, supreme.</i>
ulterior, <i>ulterior, ultimate.</i>	último, <i>last, final.</i>
la carta anterior, <i>the previous letter.</i>	la ínfima plebe, <i>the lowest rabble.</i>
los puntos extremos, <i>the extreme points.</i>	un amigo íntimo, <i>an intimate friend.</i>
un cuarto interior, <i>an inside apartment.</i>	un esfuerzo supremo, <i>a supreme effort.</i>

a. These forms often serve as simple adjectives to build true comparatives and superlatives:—

á precio tan ínfimo,	at so low a price.
la casa más próxima,	the nearest house.
las más superiores ciencias, ¹	the highest sciences.
mi más íntimo amigo,	my most intimate friend.

¹ *Dict. of the Acad.*, ed. 1726-39, vol. i. p. xlii. 3.

b. The same may be said of the superlative *mínimo* (§ 133, note 2):—

la cosa más mínima,	|	the smallest thing.
---------------------	--	---------------------

155. The superlative absolute is often merely intensive:—

este mismísimo asunto,	|	this identical subject.
un caso singularísimo,	|	a signal case in point.

156. Of the two forms comprised under the denomination of superlative absolute, that in *-ísimo* is the stronger:—

es un hombre doctísimo,	}	|	he is a very learned man.
es un hombre muy docto,			

157. The adverbs *más*, *more*; *ménos*, *less*; *muy*, *very*; are often applied to nouns in the sense of “more of a,” “less of a,” and “very much of a,” “a thorough”:—

es más niño de lo que creía,	|	he is more of a child than I supposed.
es ménos político que esplotador,	|	he is less of a politician than a “carpet-bagger.”
es muy hombre de mundo,	|	he is a thorough man of the world.
es muy [caballero, es muy Español,	|	he is a thorough gentleman, a thorough Spaniard.
es muy señorito,	|	he is quite a young gentleman. ¹
muy señor mio,	|	my dear sir.

158. The formula *muy* — *para* signifies *too* — *to, too much of a* — *to*, with nouns, adjectives, and past participles:—

¹ He who replies to these observations, says, not *muy*, but *mucho*, *very*, literally *much*; *sí tal*, *true*; or, *justo*, *of course*.

es muy grande para jugar tanto,	he is too large to play so much.
es muy bobo para incomodarse de eso,	he is too much of a simpleton to resent that.
estaba muy asustada para arriesgar preguntas,	she was too much frightened to venture inquiries.

159. The intensive prefix **re** (Lat. *re* and [*p*] *rae*) was formerly much used to express a kind of absolute superlative, with or without *muy*, and was applied to adjectives, adverbs, and occasionally even to nouns. Its use is now popular or vulgar:—

Ancient (1537).

En las Cortes de los Príncipes son pocos, y muy pocos, y aun muy poquitos, y muy repou- quitos, los que se tienen entera amistad (<i>Guevara</i>).	In the Courts of Princes, those who cherish towards one an- other genuine friendship are few, very few, even exceeding- ly few, and scarcely any at all.
--	--

Modern.

rebueno, <i>or</i> muy rebueno (<i>usual</i>),	very good indeed.
rebien, <i>or</i> muy rebien (“),	very well indeed. [(do it) ;
no me da la re-real gana (<i>low</i>),	it does not suit my majesty to (<i>literally</i> , it does not give me the very royal mind to. ¹)

¹ In the following tragic nursery rhyme, reproducing the legend of “Peter Peter, pumpkin eater,” and which may be heard any bright morning among the nurses on the *Recoletos* of Madrid, occurs the prefix *re* with a proper name:—

Pepe, *re*-Pepe
mató á la mujer
con siete cuchillos
y un alfiler;
la metió en un cesto,
la llevó á vender,
le sacó un doblon
y lo metió en panchon.

Josy, my Joe,
killed his wife
with seven knives
and one pin;
put her in a panier,
took her to be sold,
got a doubloon for her,
and laid it out in buns!

NUMERALS.

160. The cardinal numbers are those which answer the question, *How many?*

Cardinal Numbers.			
1	uno, a, (<i>contract un</i>).	28	veinte y ocho, <i>or</i> veintiocho.
2	dos.	29	veinte y nueve, <i>etc.</i>
3	tres.	30	treinta, (<i>treinta y uno, etc.</i>)
4	cuatro.	40	cuarenta.
5	cinco.	50	cincuenta.
6	seis.	60	sesenta.
7	siete.	70	setenta.
8	ocho.	80	ochenta.
9	nueve.	90	noventa.
10	diez.	100	ciento, (<i>contract cien</i>).
11	once.	101	ciento y uno, a.
12	doce.	102	ciento y dos.
13	trece.	103	ciento y tres, <i>etc.</i>
14	catorce.	200	doscientos, as.
15	quince.	300	trescientos, as.
16	diez y seis, <i>or</i> dieciseis.	400	cuatrocientos, as.
17	diez y siete, <i>or</i> diecisiete.	500	quinientos, as.
18	diez y ocho, <i>or</i> dieciocho.	600	seiscientos, as.
19	diez y nueve, <i>or</i> diecinueve.	700	setecientos, as.
20	veinte.	800	ochocientos, as.
21	veinte y uno, a, <i>or</i> veintiuno, a, (<i>contract veintium</i>).	900	novcientos, as.
22	veinte y dos, <i>or</i> veintidos.	1,000	mil, (<i>mil y uno, etc.</i>)
23	veinte y tres, <i>or</i> veintitres.	10,000	diez mil.
24	veinte y cuatro, <i>or</i> veinticuatro.	100,000	cien mil.
25	veinte y cinco, <i>or</i> veinticinco.	200,000	doscientos, as, mil.
26	veinte y seis, <i>or</i> veintiseis.	500,000	quinientos, as, mil.
27	veinte y siete, <i>or</i> veintisiete.	1,000,000	un millon, <i>or</i> un cuento.
		2,000,000	dos millones.

Remarks on the Cardinals.

161. Archaic forms are **docientos** and **trecientos**. They are heard, however, at the present day in current language, but are not met with in approved modern literature. Incorrect conversational forms are **siete-cientos** and **nuevecientos**. See 150, *d*, Remark.

162. The cardinal numbers, although adjectives, are all invariable except *uno*, *a*, and *cientos*, *as*, when multiplied by two up to nine inclusive:—

dos libros, tres plumas,
cuatro cuartos, cinco onzas,
diez días, cuarenta almas,
un amigo, una conocida,
ciento y un soldados,
veintiun casas, cien años,

cien mil duros,
doscientos hombres, doscientas
mujeres,
quinientos bonos, quinientas car-
petas,
cuatrocientas mil personas,

two books, three pens. [ounces.
four cuartos (coppers), five
ten days, forty souls.
one friend, one acquaintance.
one hundred and one soldiers.
twenty-one houses, one hundred
years.
one hundred thousand dollars.
two hundred men, two hundred
women.
five hundred bonds, five hundred
(government) securities.
four hundred thousand persons.

For the contractions of *uno* and *ciento*, see 123, *a*, *b*; 126.

163. As numeral adjectives, **ciento** and **mil** cannot assume *un* like the substantives **millon** and **cuento**:—

cien vecinos,¹ *one hundred citi-
zens.*
mil duros, *one thousand dollars.*

un millon de gracias, *a thousand
thanks* (literally, *one million
of thanks*).

¹ *Vecino* means (1) a neighbor; (2) the head of a family; (3) a legal or officially inscribed resident, a householder; (4) a citizen. Native estimates of population are made in rural districts by *vecinos*, *heads of families*; in towns, by *almas*, *souls*; and by government, for foreign convenience, by *habitantes*, *inhabitants*. The traditional method is, however, by *vecinos*.

me dió más de mil onzas,	he gave me more than one thousand ounces.
recibió hasta cien azotes,	[dred lashes. he received as many as one hun-

a. Ciento used as a substantive assumes the form *centenar*, unless employed to express rate. *Mil*, as a substantive, may retain that form, or appear as *millar*; but to express rate, only the latter is usual:—

centenares de hombres,	hundreds of men.
á doce reales el ciento,	at twelve reals per hundred.
millares <i>or</i> miles de vidas,	thousands of lives. [sand.
á veinticinco pesetas el millar,	at twenty-five francs per thou-

REMARK. — In mercantile language, it is usual to omit the article with the number.¹

á doce reales ciento.	| á veinticinco pesetas millar.
-----------------------	-------------------------------

164. Tens of hundreds cannot be used in Spanish for counting from one thousand upwards, but *mil* must always introduce the denomination:—

mil y seis,	ten hundred and six.
mil y ciento,	eleven hundred.
mil ciento y diez,	eleven hundred and ten.
mil cuatrocientos noventa y dos,	fourteen hundred and ninety-two.
dos mil trescientas personas,	twenty-three hundred persons.

165. The conjunction *y*, *and* (archaic *é*), is now only used to connect the last of a series with the foregoing number:—

<i>Fifteenth Century:</i>	<i>Nineteenth Century:</i>
myll e quatroçientos e nouenta e nueue, 1499.	mil quatrocientos noventa y nueve, 1499.

¹ So the Madrid hawkers say, for example: á real, *or* á real uno, *one real each*.

166. The ordinal numbers, as their name indicates, show the *order* of a series; as, *first, second*, etc. :—

Ordinal Numbers.			
1st	primero, a, (<i>contract</i> primer).	28th	vigésimo octavo.
2d	segundo, a.	29th	vigésimo nono.
3d	tercero, a, (<i>contract</i> tercer).	30th	trigésimo, a.
4th	cuarto, a.	31st	trigésimo primo, <i>etc.</i>
5th	quinto, a.	40th	cuadragésimo, a.
6th	sexto, a, (<i>and</i> sexto).	50th	quincuagésimo, a.
7th	séptimo, a, (<i>and</i> sétimo).	60th	sexagésimo, a.
8th	octavo, a.	70th	septuagésimo, a.
9th	nono, a, <i>or</i> noveno, a.	80th	octogésimo, a.
10th	décimo, a.	90th	nonagésimo, a.
11th	undécimo, a.	100th	centésimo, a.
12th	duodécimo, a.	101st	centésimo primo.
13th	décimo tércio.	200th	ducentésimo, a.
14th	décimo cuarto.	300th	trecentésimo, a.
15th	décimo quinto.	400th	cuadragentésimo, a. ¹
16th	décimo sexto.	500th	quingentésimo, a.
17th	décimo séptimo.	600th	sexcentésimo, a. ¹
18th	décimo octavo.	700th	septengentésimo, a. ¹
19th	décimo nono.	800th	octogentésimo, a.
20th	vigésimo, a.	900th	nonagentésimo, a.
21st	vigésimo primo.	1,000th	milésimo, a.
22d	vigésimo segundo.	2,000th	dos milésimo, a.
23d	vigésimo tercio.	10,000th	diez milésimo, a.
24th	vigésimo cuarto.	100,000th	cien milésimo, a.
25th	vigésimo quinto.	200,000th	doscientos milésimo, a.
26th	vigésimo sexto (<i>sesto</i>).	500,000th	quinientos milésimo, a.
27th	vigésimo séptimo (<i>sétimo</i>).	1,000,000th	millonésimo, a.

¹ Some write *cuadringentésimo, sescentésimo, septingentésimo*, but as the Academy does not give these numerals in the Dictionary or Grammar, the decision of that body is not accessible.

167. Archaic forms are :—

8th	ochavo, a.	30th	treinteno, a.
9th	noveno, a.	40th	cuarenteno, a.
10th	deceno, a.	50th	cincuenteno, a.
11th	onceno, a.	60th	sesenteno, a.
12th	doceno, a.	70th	setenteno, a.
13th	treceno, a.	80th	ochenteno, a.
14th	catorceno, a.	90th	noventeno, a.
15th	quinceno, a.	100th	centeno, a.
20th	veinteno, a.	1,000th	mileno, a.

el ochavo dia, | the eighth day. — *Crónica General*, A.D. 1260.
 Alfonso onceno, | Alphonso XI. — Fourteenth century, and still used.
 el doceno trabajo, | the twelfth labor. — Villena, Labors of Hercules.

But 21st, etc., would be *vigésimo primo*, not *veinteno primo*.

168. The ordinals, both simple and compound, vary regularly like all adjectives in *o*, agreeing in gender and number with their nouns :—

la primera estacion,	the first station.
leccion décima nona,	lesson nineteenth.
la fila vigésima prima,	the twenty-first row.

REMARK.—The Academy writes the compound forms in one word: as, *trigésimotercio* (*fem.* *trigésimatercia*), *thirty-third*; but this innovation is not generally adopted by Spanish printers, nor should it be, since each member varies in ending like independent adjectives..

For the contracts of *primero* and *tercero*, see 123.

169. Fractional numbers used in mathematical calculations, though substantives, belong here. They do not generally correspond with the ordinals, as in English ;

but from ten upwards assume the ending *avo*, pl. *avos*:—

Fractional Numbers.			
$\frac{1}{2}$	la mitad (un medio).	$\frac{1}{16}$	un diez y seis avo (dieciseis avo).
$1\frac{1}{2}$	uno y medio, una y media.	$\frac{1}{17}$	un diez y siete avo.
$\frac{1}{3}$	un tercio.	$\frac{1}{18}$	un diez y ocho avo.
$\frac{2}{3}$	dos tercios.	$\frac{1}{19}$	un diez y nueve avo.
$\frac{1}{4}$	un cuarto.	$\frac{1}{20}$	un veintavo (veinte avo).
$\frac{3}{4}$	tres cuartos.	$\frac{1}{21}$	un veintun avo, <i>etc.</i>
$\frac{1}{5}$	un quinto.	$\frac{2}{20}$	tres veintavos.
$\frac{4}{5}$	cuatro quintos.	$\frac{1}{30}$	un treintavo.
$\frac{1}{6}$	un sexto.	$\frac{1}{40}$	un cuarentavo.
$\frac{5}{6}$	cinco sextos.	$\frac{1}{50}$	un cincuentavo.
$\frac{1}{7}$	un séptimo.	$\frac{1}{60}$	un sesentavo.
$\frac{1}{8}$	un octavo <i>and</i> ochavo.	$\frac{1}{70}$	un setentavo.
$\frac{1}{9}$	un noveno.	$\frac{1}{80}$	un ochentavo.
$\frac{1}{10}$	un décimo.	$\frac{1}{90}$	un noventavo.
$\frac{1}{11}$	un onzavo (<i>or</i> , once avo).	$\frac{2}{90}$	tres noventavos.
$\frac{1}{12}$	un dozavo (doce avo).	$\frac{1}{100}$	un centavo <i>and</i> centésimo.
$\frac{1}{13}$	un trezavo (trece avo).	$\frac{1}{1000}$	un milésimo.
$\frac{1}{14}$	un catorzavo (catorce avo).	$\frac{2}{97\frac{1}{2}}$	trescientos veinticinco, novecientos setenta y dos avos.
$\frac{1}{15}$	un quinzavo (quince avo).		

170. Fractional numbers, from $\frac{1}{3}$ to $\frac{1}{10}$ inclusive, may also be expressed by the ordinals with the feminine noun **parte**, *part*, especially when a genitive follows or is understood. From $\frac{1}{12}$ onward this construction is preferable, except in mathematical calculations:—

one-third,	un tercio, <i>or</i> la tercera parte.
two-thirds,	dos tercios, <i>or</i> las dos terceras partes.
one-fourth,	un cuarto, <i>or</i> la cuarta parte.
three-fourths,	tres cuartos, <i>or</i> las tres cuartas partes.
one-twentieth,	un vigésimo, <i>or</i> la vigésima parte.
one-hundredth,	un centésimo, <i>or</i> la centésima parte.

a. As substantives, **una tercia** (formerly *una tercia parte*) signifies *a third of a yard*; **una cuarta**, *a fourth or quarter of a yard*; **un cuarteron**, *a quarter of a pound*; **una arroba** (from the Arabic for one-quarter), *twenty-five pounds or a quarter of a hundred*, applied to liquid as well as dry measure in Spain. **Un diezmo**, meaning *a civil or ecclesiastic ten per cent tax*, is corrupted from *décimo*, as the English *tithe* is from *tenth*: as, **las alcavalas del diezmo**, in ancient law, *the ten per cent peculium regis on all purchases and sales*. **Un quinto**, is *a fifth*, and *a fifth man*, hence *a conscript soldier*; **la quinta**, *the military conscription*.

b. Fractionals are also employed in Spanish to specify the number of leaves in a signature or folded sheet (*cuadernillo*¹), that is, the size (*tamaño*) of a volume:—

un tomo en folio (f ^o),	a volume in folio.
un tomo en cuarto (4 ^o),	a volume in 4to.
un tomo en octavo (8 ^o),	a volume in 8vo.
un tomo en dozavo (12 ^o),	a volume in 12mo.
un tomo en diez y seis avo (16 ^o),	a volume in 16mo.
un t. en veinte y cuatro avo (24 ^o),	a volume in 24mo.

REMARK. — In this connection, “large” is expressed by *mayor*, and “small” by *menor* or *pequeño*:—

un tomo en f ^o mayor, <i>or</i> de marca mayor,	a volume in large folio.
un tomo en cuarto menor,	a volume in small 4to.
un libro de mano en octavo marquilla,	a manuscript in medium octavo.

¹ So named (from *cuatro*) because in the origins of typography most books were issued in “fours,” whether the external form was quarto or folio.

un libro de molde en octavo pequeño, <i>or</i> "español,"	| a printed book in small octavo, "Spanish size." ¹
---	--

171. The arithmetical signs +, ×, −, ÷, =, are read respectively **más, por, menos, dividido por, igual**:—

5 + 3 = 8, $\frac{1}{2} \times 8 = 5,$ 5 times 8 are 40,	| cinco más tres igual ocho; <i>or</i> , cinco y tres, ocho. cinco octavos por ocho igual cinco. cinco por ocho, cuarenta.
--	--

172. Half (a half or one-half), as a noun, is expressed by **la mitad** (in calculations only, by **un medio**); as an adjective, by **medio, a**, without *an* or *a*:—

la mitad de mis bienes, le dí la mitad, media hora, medio día, una hora y media, un día y medio,	| one-half of my goods. I gave him one-half. half an hour, half a day. an hour and a half. a day and a half.
--	--

173. **Multiplicatives** answer the question, *How many fold?* as,

Adjectives.

simple, <i>simple</i>.	| doble, <i>double</i>.	| triple, <i>triple</i> .
-------------------------	------------------------	-------------------------

Substantives.

el duplo,	<i>twofold, twice as much, many.</i>
el triplo,	<i>threefold, three times as much.</i>
el cuádruplo,	<i>fourfold, four times as much.</i>
el quíntuplo,	<i>fivefold, five times as many.</i>
el céntuplo,	<i>an hundred fold, etc.</i>

¹ Technical book terms are: una foja, *a folio* (leaf numbered on the first side only, — *recto, verso* or *vuelta*); una hoja, *a leaf* (without foliation or pagination); una página, *a numbered page*. Un "juego" de libros, means *a "set" of volumes*, whether of two, or three hundred; una biblioteca de tres mil tomos ó de mil novecientos juegos de libros, *a library consisting of three thousand volumes or of nineteen hundred sets*. Biblioteca is *a public or private library*; formerly, *librería* signified *private library*, but its use is now limited to the poets and old-fashioned people, while *librería* universally designates *a book-shop* or *the book trade*.

a. With the number of a street are used **duplicado**, "bis," repeated; **triplicado**, triple number; **cuadruplicado**, quadruple number, when it is not convenient or feasible to increase the cardinal number :—

calle del Arenal, número veinte duplicado, <i>Strand, No. 20 "bis."</i>	|	calle del Saúco, núm. 6 tripº., <i>Alder Street, No. 6 triple.</i>
--	--	---

REMARK.—The Latin *bis*, twice, appears in Spanish in the words *bizco* (*bisojo*, double eye), *cross-eyed*; *bizcocho* (*bis-coctus*), *biscuit*,¹ *cracker*, and *teacake*; *bisabuelo*, a, *great-grandfather*, *great-grandmother*; and *biznieto*, a, *great-grandson*, *great-granddaughter*. The Spaniards use also the Greek *τέταρτος*, fourth, corrupted into *tátara*, with a few words: as, *tatarabuelo*, a, *great-great-grandfather* or *mother*; *tataranieto*, a, *great-great-grandson* or *daughter*; *tataradeudo*, a, a *remote kindred*.

174. Collectives or numeral substantives are :—

un par, a couple.	|	una treintena, a score and a half.
una docena, a dozen.	|	una cuarentena, two score.
una quincena, fifteen.	|	una centena, five score.
una veintena, a score.	|	una gruesa, a gross.
un par de dias, de huevos,	|	a couple of days, — of eggs.
una quincena (de dias),	|	a fortnight.
una treintena de años,	|	a score and a half of years.

a. The term "or so" after numerals is expressed by **poco más ó ménos**, or by **cosa de**, a *matter of* :—

una veintena de libras poco más ó ménos, or cosa de una veintena de libras, *twenty pounds or so, some twenty pounds.*

¹ That is, *English* biscuit, the American "cracker," also the teacake called "lady-fingers," and the like. Sea-biscuit in Spanish is *galleta*, "hard-tack," kneaded with rancid olive-oil, and used in the marine as well as the merchant service.

175. Numeral Adverbs answer the questions, *How many times? How often?* and are formed by the association of a cardinal number or adjective with the feminine noun **vez**, *a time* (Lat. *vice-m*):—

una vez, *once.*

dos veces, *twice.*

tres veces, *three times.*

veinte veces, *twenty times.*

cien veces, *one hundred times.*

alguna que otra vez, *one time and another.*

muchas veces, *often.*

pocas veces, *few times, seldom.*

rara vez, *or raras veces, seldom.*

otras veces, *other times.*

algunas veces, *sometimes.*

a. Distributives which answer likewise the question, *How often?* are expressed by **todo** or **cada**:—

todos los días, meses, años,

todas las horas, veces,

cada día, mes y año,

cada hora, cada vez,

cada dos siglos,

cada tres meses,

every day, month, year.

every hour, each time.

every day, month, and year.

every hour, each time.

every two centuries.

every three months.

REMARK. — “Time” is expressed in Spanish in a variety of ways: by *vez*, as above, when it means an occasion, an instance; by *tiempo*, as a limited portion of duration; by *hora*, when it means “o’clock”; by *rato*, as to the quality of an occasion; by *plazo*, as a fixed period; German, *Frist*:—

esta vez te lo perdono,

el tiempo es corto,

no tengo tiempo,

¿qué hora es?

á estas horas estará en París,

ha llevado mal rato,

¿qué rato más delicioso!

el plazo convenido,

pagaré en el plazo señalado,

á plazos cortos,

I’ll forgive you this time.

time is short.

I have no time.

what time is it?

by this time he is at Paris.

he had a poor time.

what a delightful time!

the time agreed on. [the time.

I shall pay at the expiration of

in short instalments.

The Pronoun.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

176. The personal pronouns in the nominative are:—

SINGULAR.			
Person.	Masculine.	Feminine.	Neuter.
First.	yo, <i>I</i> .	yo, <i>I</i> .	ello, <i>it</i> .
Second.	tú, <i>thou</i> .	tú, <i>thou</i> .	
"	vos, <i>you</i> .	vos, <i>you</i> .	
Third.	él, <i>he (it)</i> .	ella, <i>she (it)</i> .	
"	usted, <i>you (your grace)</i> .	usted, <i>you (your grace)</i> .	
PLURAL.			
First.	nosotros, <i>we</i> .	nosotras, <i>we</i> .	
Second.	vosotros, <i>you</i> .	vosotras, <i>you</i> .	
Third.	ellos, <i>they</i> .	ellas, <i>they</i> .	
"	ustedes, <i>you (your graces)</i> .	ustedes, <i>you (your graces)</i> .	

a. To these may be added *se* as the reflexive and reciprocal substitute of pronouns of the third person, in all cases except the nominative. As direct object, *se* means *one's self, himself, herself, itself, yourself; pl., themselves, yourselves, each other, one another*.

REMARK.—Names of things and abstract qualities (except those made so by the neuter article *lo*) are masculine or feminine in Spanish, whatever be the English gender. Hence, *el libro, the book*—él, *le, lo, it*; *los libros, the books*—ellos, *los, they, them*; *la pluma, the pen*—ella, *la, it*; *las plumas, the pens*—ellas, *las, they, them*. *Ello* relates only to a thought, or a phrase to which gender cannot be attributed: *ello, lo, it*—*lo creo, I believe it, I think so*. See § 84.

177. **Nosotros** and **vosotros** are compounds of *nos* and *vos* with the plural indefinite pronoun **otros**, **-as**, *others*; and hence the variation of gender, unknown to the other European languages, in the first and second persons. The appendix *otros* served originally to expand or amplify the force of *we* and *you*, but it added nothing to the signification, as the French *autres* in *vous autres* does. The compound first appeared in the latter half of the fifteenth century.¹

178. **Nos** is still used officially in a representative sense by sovereigns, prelates, and magistrates. It is also met with in certain quaint devotional formulae:—

nos los Inquisidores,
nos el cabildo de tal,
venga á nos el tu reino,
ruega por nos, Señora,

we the Inquisitors.
we the Chapter of so and so.
let thy kingdom come to us.
intercede for us, Lady.

Pronouns of Address.

179. The pronouns regularly employed in popular address are *tú*, *vos*, *vosotros*, **-as**, and *usted*; besides titles such as *vucelência*, *señoría*, *ustá*, etc.

REMARK.—At an early period of the vernacular Castilian, as fixed by King Alfonso X., called El Sabio, or *the Wise* (A.D. 1252–84), and till far down in the fifteenth century, the only pronouns of address, aside from titles, were *tú* and *vos*, the latter being then applicable to one or more persons. *Tú* was employed in sacred

¹ The compound forms do not appear in the early Castilian *Poem of the Cid*, written prior to the thirteenth century; nor in the *Chronicle of the Cid*, first printed in 1512, but older by several centuries; nor in the *Chronicle of Spain* (A.D. 1260), published in 1541; nor in the works of the Marquis of Santillana in the early part of the fifteenth century. They abound, however, in the Royal Edicts from 1476, and in the *Chronicle of Spain*, by Diego de Valera (Seville, 1482), though generally written throughout in two words, *nos otros*, *vos otros*.

invocation, in poetry, in the family, and to Moors (ag. Arabic *ánta*, thou); while *vos* was the formal medium between man, like the English *you*. In the sixteenth century, under expansive influences of the reigns of the Catholic sovereigns. Emperor Charles V., *vuestra merced*, *your grace*, *pl. vuestras mercedes*, *your graces*, came to be the courtly address between gentlemen; and *vos*, with its new plural *vosotros*, was reserved for a lofty formula appropriate to persons of superior and inferior rank, to the Deity, and to court poetry, while *tú* maintained its position in the family and in informal rhyme. The relative situation of such words at the present day is as follows:—

180. Tú, thou (nearly always translated *you*), is employed: (a) in the sacred and hortative styles and in poetry; (b) between husband and wife, parents and children, relatives, and betrothed persons; (c) between intimate friends; (d) by the native master and mistress to their domestics; (e) by everybody in speaking to brutes, pet animals, or even to inanimate objects.

181. Vos, you, is now always limited to one person, male or female, although joined to the second person plural of verbs. It is at present employed; (a) interchangeably with *tú* for sacred invocation by Catholics, as more distant and formal than *tú*; (b) in modern literature, representing ancient manners; (c) in the family, when the younger members wish to show great respect to the elders; (d) in anger and scorn, to inferiors or to those whom we wish to address harshly; (e) in translations from the English and French, to represent the “*you*” and “*vous*” of those nations.

182. Vosotros, -as, you, is the plural of *tú* and of *vos*, and must be used when there are two or more persons or objects to whom singly *tú* or *vos* would apply.

Beyond this, it is also employed by public speakers before religious, literary, political, and other assemblies. It is, therefore, heard at public sessions of the Academies, at the Athenæum, the churches, and the theatre, by the accustomed or authorized speakers. But if, at the play, the manager come forth to make an announcement or offer an apology, he would use *ustedes*. *Vosotros* supposes the confidence and, to a certain degree, the sympathy of the audience.

183. Usted (pl., *ustedes*), *you*, is descended from the now obsolete *vuestra merced*, *your grace*; *vuestras mercedes*, *your graces* (abbreviated *Vmd.*, *Vmds.*), and represents the conventional "*you*" in all conditions of life; even in malice, anger, and satire. It is the universal address of society, and the only one the foreigner need ever employ. Being considered to be of the third person, it requires the verb, pronoun-object, and possessive adjective, to be likewise in that person, although translated into English by the second person.

At the present day in Spain it is either written out in full, or abbreviated into *V.* or *Vd.*, pl. *VV.* or *Vds.* These signs are always to be read *usted*, *ustedes*, precisely as *Mr.* in English is read *Mister*, and *M.* in French, *Monsieur*:—

<i>usted</i> (or <i>V.</i>) <i>tiene</i> ,	you have, <i>i.e.</i> your grace has.
<i>ustedes</i> (or <i>VV.</i>) <i>tienen</i> ,	you have, <i>i.e.</i> your graces have.
¿trae <i>V.</i> su hijo consigo?	do you bring your son with you?
¿no conoce <i>V.</i> á sus amigos?	do you not know your friends?

REMARK.—Official titles of address at court or in government circles are likewise joined with the third person of the verb. The principal are: *vuestra* (or *su*) *majestad* (*V.M.*), *your majesty*; *vuestra* (or *su*) *alteza* (*V.A.*), *your highness*, to a prince or prince-

regent; *vuecelencia* or *vuecencia* (V.E.), *your excellency*, to a crown minister, an ambassador, or a *grande* of Spain; *usía* (V.S.), *your honor*, to a judge or an *alcalde*.¹ In the Chambers the mutual address of the members is *su señoría* (S.S.), *his lordship*. The Regents of the kingdom in royal minorities have the corporate title of *Majestad*, like the king whom they represent; and the municipal councils that of *señoría*, or lordship.

Title of address is *el tratamiento*; as, *el tratamiento de alteza*, *the address of highness*. To "thee and thou" any one is *tutearle*, or *llamarle de tú*; the latter may be applied to any pronoun of address, — *llamar á uno de vos, de usted*, to use *vos, usted*, to any one.

Inflection.

184. The personal pronoun admits of a fuller inflection than any other part of speech, save the verb. The dative and accusative cases have two forms: the first of which is called the *conjunctive*, because governed by the verb; and the second, *disjunctive*, because governed by a preposition, and thus disjoined from the verb:—

Conjunctive.

me da, *he gives (to) me.*
te busca, *he seeks thee.*

Disjunctive.

acude á mí, *he applies to me.*
á tí busco, *I seek thee.*

185. The association of both the conjunctive and disjunctive forms to the same verb constitutes the redundant or *pleonastic* construction, very common in Spanish:—

me da á mí, *or á mí me da,*
te busca á tí, *or á tí te busca,*
le digo á V., *or á V. le digo,*
les estimo á VV., *or á VV. les*
estimo,

he gives (to) me.
he seeks thee.
I say to you (to him to you).
I esteem you (them your graces).

¹ Formerly also much used by the lower orders to any gentleman, but rather provincial now.

186. The personal pronouns are inflected as follows:—

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
First Person.					
N.	yo,	<i>I.</i>	nosotros-as,	<i>we.</i>	
G.	de mí,	<i>of me, of myself.</i>	de nosotros-as,	<i>of us, of ourselves.</i>	
D.	me — á mí,	<i>to me, to myself.</i>	nos — á nosotros-as,	<i>to us, to ourselves.</i>	
A.	me — á mí,	<i>me, myself.</i>	nos — á nosotros-as,	<i>us, ourselves.</i>	
P.	mí,	<i>me, myself.</i>	nosotros-as,	<i>us, ourselves.</i>	
Second Person.					
N.	tú,	<i>thou.</i>	N.	vosotros-as,	<i>you.</i>
G.	de tí,	<i>of thee, of thyself.</i>	G.	de vosotros-as,	<i>of you, of yourselves.</i>
D.	te — á tí,	<i>to thee, to thyself.</i>	D.	os — á vosotros-as,	<i>to you, to yourselves.</i>
A.	te — á tí,	<i>thee, thyself.</i>	A.	os — á vosotros-as,	<i>you, yourselves.</i>
P.	tí,	<i>thee, thyself.</i>	P.	vosotros-as,	<i>you, yourselves.</i>
N.	vos,	<i>you.</i>			
G.	de vos,	<i>of you, of yourself.</i>			
D.	os — á vos,	<i>to you, to yourself.</i>			
A.	os — á vos,	<i>you, yourself.</i>			
P.	vos,	<i>you, yourself.</i>			
Third Person — Masculine.					
N.	él,	<i>he, it.</i>	ellos,	<i>they.</i>	
G.	de él,	<i>of him, of it.</i>	de ellos,	<i>of them.</i>	
D.	le — á él,	<i>to him, to it.</i>	les — á ellos,	<i>to them.</i>	
A.	le, lo — á él,	<i>him, it.</i>	los, les — á ellos,	<i>them.</i>	
P.	él,	<i>him, it.</i>	ellos,	<i>them.</i>	
Third Person — Feminine.					
N.	ella,	<i>she, it.</i>	ellas,	<i>they.</i>	
G.	de ella,	<i>of her, of it.</i>	de ellas,	<i>of them.</i>	
D.	le — á ella,	<i>to her, to it.</i>	les — á ellas,	<i>to them.</i>	
A.	la — á ella,	<i>her, it.</i>	las — á ellas,	<i>them.</i>	
P.	ella,	<i>her, it.</i>	ellas,	<i>them.</i>	

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Third Person—Neuter.		
N.	ello, lo, <i>it, that, so.</i>	(Wanting.)
G.	de ello, <i>of it.</i>	
D.	á ello, <i>to it.</i>	
A.	lo, <i>it, that, so.</i>	
P.	ello, <i>it.</i>	
Reflexive Substitute of Third Person.		
G.	de sí, <i>of himself, of herself, of itself.</i>	de sí, <i>of themselves, of each other.</i>
D.	se — á sí, <i>to himself, to herself, to itself.</i>	se — á sí, <i>to themselves, to each other.</i>
A.	se — á sí, <i>himself, herself, it- self, one's self.</i>	se — á sí, <i>themselves, each other.</i>
P.	sí, <i>himself, herself, it- self.</i>	sí, <i>themselves, each other.</i>

REMARKS ON THE CASES.

Nominative.

187. The subject nominative of the personal pronoun is usually suppressed, unless required on account of emphasis, contrast, ambiguity, or distinctness :—

voy á casa,
 volverá pronto,
 ¿qué escribes? están locos,
 ¿qué he de hacer yo?
 él se va, ella se queda,
 no sabe lo que yo quisiera,

I am going home.
 he will return soon. [crazy.
 what are you writing? they are
 what am I to do?
 he goes, she stays.
 he does not know what I want.

a. Sometimes its use is merely rhetorical :—

yo soy la luz verdadera,
 yo he dicho en mis discursos,

I am the true light.
 I have said in my speeches.

188. The subject of an impersonal verb is not expressed :—

conviene ; me parece,	it is fitting ; it seems to me.
basta ; se sigue,	it is enough ; it follows.
llueve ; hay,	it rains ; there is, there are.

a. But when it points with emphasis to an idea or to a following *que*, the subject *ello* is employed :—

¿qué es ello?	what is it?
ello es que hay animales muy científicos (<i>Iriarte</i>),	the fact is that there are some very scientific animals.

REMARK. — In *es que*, the fact is that, there is an ellipse. The full form *es el caso que*, or *el caso es que*, is often met with.

189. When, in English, the pronoun-subject has a substantive in apposition with it that limits or defines it, in Spanish the substantive, accompanied by the definite article, replaces the pronoun as the subject of the verb, and the latter is put in the person and number appropriate to the suppressed pronoun :—

los Españoles estamos muy atrasados,	we Spaniards are very backward.
tenemos el gusto los liberales de ver el cambio,	we liberals have the satisfaction of seeing the change.
la mayor ofensa que los príncipes podeis hacer á Dios, es no osar nadie avisaros.	the greatest offence that ye princes can commit against God, is that none dare warn you.
(<i>Guevara</i> , 1537.)	

a. If the pronoun and apposition are both expressed, the latter must always retain the definite article :—

nosotros los Españoles,	we Spaniards.
vosotras las señoras,	you ladies.

190. The position of the pronoun-subject is subservient to the general laws of taste ; but emphasis, enthusiasm, and often elegance, are exhibited by placing it after the verb, as in the interrogative state :—

no fue él en verdad el único intolerante de su siglo,
hombre del cual pienso yo que no le hay superior en la historia,

indeed he was not the only intolerant man of his time.
a man who I think has no superior in history. (*Cánovas del Castillo*, 1877.)

Genitive.

191. The genitive has all the meanings of the preposition *de*, *of*, *from*, *by*, *with*, *at*, *to*, and often it is not translated at all :—

habla de tí, de nosotros,
se rie de mí, de ellos,
esta casa es de ella,
se olvida de sí, de ello,

he speaks of thee, of us.
he laughs at me, at them.
this house belongs to her (is of).
he forgets (of) himself (of) it.

Dative.

192. The dative is not only translated by *to*, but also by *for*, *from* (with the idea of taking away), and very often it imparts to a following definite article the meaning of a possessive adjective :—

me habla, te da,
nos procura,
le cortó el brazo,
se hirió la mano,
les quita el sueño,

he speaks to me, he gives thee.
he gets for us.
he cut his (another's) arm.
he wounded his (own) hand.
he takes away their sleep.

a. In English, the signs of the dative (*to*, *for*, *from*) are often suppressed :—

me da, le dice,
nos procura destinos,

he gives me, he tells me.
he gets us places (positions).

193. In Spanish, the dative, with another pronoun-object, is very frequently superfluous, and may be considered as an expletive:—

llévatelo (<i>of a purchase</i>),	take it (for thyself).
se lo comió,	he ate it up (for himself).
quítatemelo (<i>of removal</i>),	take it away from me.
échatemela (la pluma),	toss it to me (the pen).

194. Since the datives **le** and **les** are common to both genders, some writers improperly employ the accusatives **la** and **las** for these feminines:—

le digo, la digo,	I say to him, I tell her.
le presto el libro,	I lend them (men) the book.
las presto la pluma,	I lend them (women) the pen.

Accusative.

195. The accusative case is governed directly by the verb:—

me ve, te llama,	he sees me, he calls thee.
nos aman, os engañan,	they love us, they deceive you.
le conoce, la sigue,	he knows him, he follows her.
los odia, las recibe,	he hates them, he receives them.
el libro — le <i>or</i> lo tomo,	the book — I take it (him).
la pluma — la veo,	the pen — I see it (her).
los libros — los tomo,	the books — I take them.
las plumas — las veo,	the pens — I see them.

REMARK. — Many modern writers use *lo* of persons as well as of things, but the student should follow the dominant practice which makes *le* refer to persons and masculine words, while *lo* is limited to things to which gender cannot be assigned.

196. The use of **les** for **los** is frequently met with, but is discouraged by the Academy. In the pleonastic construction with **ustedes**, however, it is admissible:—

invocation, in poetry, in the family, and to Moors (against the Arabic *ánta*, thou); while *vos* was the formal medium between man and man, like the English *you*. In the sixteenth century, under the expansive influences of the reigns of the Catholic sovereigns and the Emperor Charles V., *vuestra merced*, *your grace*, *pl. vuestras mercedes*, *your graces*, came to be the courtly address between gentlemen; and *vos*, with its new plural *vosotros*, was reserved or a lofty formula appropriate to persons of superior and inferior rank, to the Deity, and to court poetry, while *tú* maintained its position in the family and in informal rhyme. The relative situation of such words at the present day is as follows:—

180. Tú, thou (nearly always translated *you*), is employed: (a) in the sacred and hortative styles and in poetry; (b) between husband and wife, parents and children, relatives, and betrothed persons; (c) between intimate friends; (d) by the native master and mistress to their domestics; (e) by everybody in speaking to brutes, pet animals, or even to inanimate objects.

181. Vos, you, is now always limited to one person, male or female, although joined to the second person plural of verbs. It is at present employed; (a) interchangeably with *tú* for sacred invocation by Catholics, as more distant and formal than *tú*; (b) in modern literature, representing ancient manners; (c) in the family, when the younger members wish to show great respect to the elders; (d) in anger and scorn, to inferiors or to those whom we wish to address harshly; (e) in translations from the English and French, to represent the “*you*” and “*vous*” of those nations.

182. Vosotros, -as, you, is the plural of *tú* and of *vos*, and must be used when there are two or more persons or objects to whom singly *tú* or *vos* would apply.

Beyond this, it is also employed by public speakers before religious, literary, political, and other assemblies. It is, therefore, heard at public sessions of the Academies, at the Athenæum, the churches, and the theatre, by the accustomed or authorized speakers. But if, at the play, the manager come forth to make an announcement or offer an apology, he would use *ustedes*. *Vosotros* supposes the confidence and, to a certain degree, the sympathy of the audience.

183. Usted (pl., *ustedes*), *you*, is descended from the now obsolete *vuestra merced*, *your grace*; *vuestras mercedes*, *your graces* (abbreviated *Vmd.*, *Vmds.*), and represents the conventional "*you*" in all conditions of life; even in malice, anger, and satire. It is the universal address of society, and the only one the foreigner need ever employ. Being considered to be of the third person, it requires the verb, pronoun-object, and possessive adjective, to be likewise in that person, although translated into English by the second person.

At the present day in Spain it is either written out in full, or abbreviated into *V.* or *Vd.*, pl. *VV.* or *Vds.* These signs are always to be read *usted*, *ustedes*, precisely as *Mr.* in English is read *Mister*, and *M.* in French, *Monsieur*:—

usted (or *V.*) tiene,
ustedes (or *VV.*) tienen,
 ¿trae *V.* su hijo consigo?
 ¿no conoce *V.* á sus amigos?

you have, *i.e.* your grace has.
 you have, *i.e.* your graces have.
 do you bring your son with you?
 do you not know your friends?

REMARK. — Official titles of address at court or in government circles are likewise joined with the third person of the verb. The principal are: *vuestra* (or *su*) *majestad* (*V.M.*), *your majesty*; *vuestra* (or *su*) *alteza* (*V.A.*), *your highness*, to a prince or prince-

regent; *vucelencia* or *vucencia* (V.E.), *your excellency*, to a crown minister, an ambassador, or a *grande* of Spain; *usía* (V.S.), *your honor*, to a judge or an *alcalde*.¹ In the Chambers the mutual address of the members is *su señoría* (S.S.), *his lordship*. The Regents of the kingdom in royal minorities have the corporate title of *Majestad*, like the king whom they represent; and the municipal councils that of *señoría*, or *lordship*.

Title of address is *el tratamiento*; as, *el tratamiento de alteza*, *the address of highness*. To "thee and thou" any one is *tutearle*, or *llamarle de tú*; the latter may be applied to any pronoun of address, — *llamar á uno de vos, de usted*, to use *vos, usted*, to any one.

Inflection.

184. The personal pronoun admits of a fuller inflection than any other part of speech, save the verb. The dative and accusative cases have two forms: the first of which is called the *conjunctive*, because governed by the verb; and the second, *disjunctive*, because governed by a preposition, and thus disjoined from the verb:—

Conjunctive.

me da, *he gives (to) me.*
te busca, *he seeks thee.*

Disjunctive.

acude á mí, *he applies to me.*
á tí busco, *I seek thee.*

185. The association of both the conjunctive and disjunctive forms to the same verb constitutes the redundant or *pleonastic* construction, very common in Spanish:—

me da á mí, *or á mí me da,*
te busca á tí, *or á tí te busca,*
le digo á V., *or á V. le digo,*
les estimo á VV., *or á VV. les*
estimo,

he gives (to) me.
he seeks thee.
I say to you (to him to you).
I esteem you (them your graces).

¹ Formerly also much used by the lower orders to any gentleman, but rather provincial now.

186. The personal pronouns are inflected as follows:—

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
First Person.					
N.	yo,	<i>I.</i>	nosotros-as,	<i>we.</i>	
G.	de mí,	<i>of me, of myself.</i>	de nosotros-as,	<i>of us, of ourselves.</i>	
D.	me — á mí,	<i>to me, to myself.</i>	nos — á nosotros-as,	<i>to us, to ourselves.</i>	
A.	me — á mí,	<i>me, myself.</i>	nos — á nosotros-as,	<i>us, ourselves.</i>	
P.	mí,	<i>me, myself.</i>	nosotros-as,	<i>us, ourselves.</i>	
Second Person.					
N.	tú,	<i>thou.</i>	N.	vosotros-as,	<i>you.</i>
G.	de tí,	<i>of thee, of thyself.</i>	G.	de vosotros-as,	<i>of you, of yourselves.</i>
D.	te — á tí,	<i>to thee, to thyself.</i>	D.	os — á vosotros-as,	<i>to you, to yourselves.</i>
A.	te — á tí,	<i>thee, thyself.</i>	A.	os — á vosotros-as,	<i>you, yourselves.</i>
P.	tí,	<i>thee, thyself.</i>	P.	vosotros-as,	<i>you, yourselves.</i>
N.	vos,	<i>you.</i>			
G.	de vos,	<i>of you, of yourself.</i>			
D.	os — á vos,	<i>to you, to yourself.</i>			
A.	os — á vos,	<i>you, yourself.</i>			
P.	vos,	<i>you, yourself.</i>			
Third Person — Masculine.					
N.	él,	<i>he, it.</i>	ellos,	<i>they.</i>	
G.	de él,	<i>of him, of it.</i>	de ellos,	<i>of them.</i>	
D.	le — á él,	<i>to him, to it.</i>	les — á ellos,	<i>to them.</i>	
A.	le, lo — á él,	<i>him, it.</i>	los, les — á ellos,	<i>them.</i>	
P.	él,	<i>him, it.</i>	ellos,	<i>them.</i>	
Third Person — Feminine.					
N.	ella,	<i>she, it.</i>	ellas,	<i>they.</i>	
G.	de ella,	<i>of her, of it.</i>	de ellas,	<i>of them.</i>	
D.	le — á ella,	<i>to her, to it.</i>	les — á ellas,	<i>to them.</i>	
A.	la — á ella,	<i>her, it.</i>	las — á ellas,	<i>them.</i>	
P.	ella,	<i>her, it.</i>	ellas,	<i>them.</i>	

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.	
Third Person—Neuter.				
N.	ello, lo,	<i>it, that, so.</i>	(Wanting.)	
G.	de ello,	<i>of it.</i>		
D.	á ello,	<i>to it.</i>		
A.	lo,	<i>it, that, so.</i>		
P.	ello,	<i>it.</i>		
Reflexive Substitute of Third Person.				
G.	de sí,	<i>of himself, of herself, of itself.</i>	de sí,	<i>of themselves, of each other.</i>
D.	se — á sí,	<i>to himself, to herself, to itself.</i>	se — á sí,	<i>to themselves, to each other.</i>
A.	se — á sí,	<i>himself, herself, it- self, one's self.</i>	se — á sí,	<i>themselves, each other.</i>
P.	sí,	<i>himself, herself, it- self.</i>	sí,	<i>themselves, each other.</i>

REMARKS ON THE CASES.

Nominative.

187. The subject nominative of the personal pronoun is usually suppressed, unless required on account of emphasis, contrast, ambiguity, or distinctness :—

voy á casa,
 volverá pronto,
 ¿qué escribes? están locos,
 ¿qué he de hacer yo?
 él se va, ella se queda,
 no sabe lo que yo quisiera,

I am going home.
 he will return soon. [crazy.
 what are you writing? they are
 what am I to do?
 he goes, she stays.
 he does not know what I want.

a. Sometimes its use is merely rhetorical :—

yo soy la luz verdadera,
 yo he dicho en mis discursos,

I am the true light.
 I have said in my speeches.

188. The subject of an impersonal verb is not expressed :—

conviene ; me parece,	it is fitting ; it seems to me.
basta ; se sigue,	it is enough ; it follows.
llueve ; hay,	it rains ; there is, there are.

a. But when it points with emphasis to an idea or to a following *que*, the subject *ello* is employed :—

¿qué es ello?	what is it?
ello es que hay animales muy científicos (<i>Iriarte</i>),	the fact is that there are some very scientific animals.

REMARK.—In *es que*, the fact is that, there is an ellipse. The full form *es el caso que*, or *el caso es que*, is often met with.

189. When, in English, the pronoun-subject has a substantive in apposition with it that limits or defines it, in Spanish the substantive, accompanied by the definite article, replaces the pronoun as the subject of the verb, and the latter is put in the person and number appropriate to the suppressed pronoun :—

los Españoles estamos muy atrasados,	we Spaniards are very backward.
tenemos el gusto los liberales de ver el cambio,	we liberals have the satisfaction of seeing the change.
la mayor ofensa que los príncipes podeis hacer á Dios, es no osar nadie avisaros.	the greatest offence that ye princes can commit against God, is that none dare warn you.
(<i>Guevara</i> , 1537.)	

a. If the pronoun and apposition are both expressed, the latter must always retain the definite article :—

nosotros los Españoles,	we Spaniards.
vosotras las señoras,	you ladies.

190. The position of the pronoun-subject is subversive to the general laws of taste; but emphasis, enthusiasm, and often elegance, are exhibited by placing it after the verb, as in the interrogative state:—

no fue él en verdad el único intolerante de su siglo,	indeed he was not the only intolerant man of his time.
hombre del cual pienso yo que no le hay superior en la historia,	a man who I think has no superior in history. (<i>Cánovas del Castillo</i> , 1877.)

Genitive.

191. The genitive has all the meanings of the preposition *de*, *of*, *from*, *by*, *with*, *at*, *to*, and often it is not translated at all:—

habla de tí, de nosotros,	he speaks of thee, of us.
se rie de mí, de ellos,	he laughs at me, at them.
esta casa es de ella,	this house belongs to her (is of).
se olvida de sí, de ello,	he forgets (of) himself (of) it.

Dative.

192. The dative is not only translated by *to*, but also by *for*, *from* (with the idea of taking away), and very often it imparts to a following definite article the meaning of a possessive adjective:—

me habla, te da,	he speaks to me, he gives thee.
nos procura,	he gets for us.
le cortó el brazo,	he cut his (another's) arm.
se hirió la mano,	he wounded his (own) hand.
les quita el sueño,	he takes away their sleep.

a. In English, the signs of the dative (*to*, *for*, *from*) are often suppressed:—

me da, le dice,	he gives me, he tells me.
nos procura destinos,	he gets us places (positions).

193. In Spanish, the dative, with another pronoun-object, is very frequently superfluous, and may be considered as an expletive:—

llévatelo (<i>of a purchase</i>),	take it (for thyself).
se lo comió,	he ate it up (for himself).
quítatelo (<i>of removal</i>),	take it away from me.
échatemela (la pluma),	toss it to me (the pen).

194. Since the datives **le** and **les** are common to both genders, some writers improperly employ the accusatives **la** and **las** for these feminines:—

le digo, la digo,	I say to him, I tell her.
leß presto el libro,	I lend them (men) the book.
las presto la pluma,	I lend them (women) the pen.

Accusative.

195. The accusative case is governed directly by the verb:—

me ve, te llama,	he sees me, he calls thee.
nos aman, os engañan,	they love us, they deceive you.
le conoce, la sigue,	he knows him, he follows her.
los odia, las recibe,	he hates them, he receives them.
el libro — le or lo tomo,	the book — I take it (him).
la pluma — la veo,	the pen — I see it (her).
los libros — los tomo,	the books — I take them.
las plumas — las veo,	the pens — I see them.

REMARK. — Many modern writers use *lo* of persons as well as of things, but the student should follow the dominant practice which makes *le* refer to persons and masculine words, while *lo* is limited to things to which gender cannot be assigned.

196. The use of **les** for **los** is frequently met with, but is discouraged by the Academy. In the pleonastic construction with **ustedes**, however, it is admissible:—

les busqué á ustedes,
 los conocí en seguida,
 les mandó que no saliesen,

I looked for you, I sought you.
 I knew them at once.
 he ordered them not to go out.

REMARK. — In the ancient language, from which the last example is taken, many verbs seem to have governed the dative which are now usually found with the accusative.

197. The pronouns **le** or **lo**, **la**, **los**, **las**, have an indefinite signification of *one, some, any, such*, negative *none*, when they stand in the predicate with the impersonal verb **hay**, *there is, there are*, and relate to a substantive taken in an indeterminate sense : —

cree que no hay dia de juicio, y
 le (or lo) hay,
 trae una silla si la hay por ahí,

compraré billetes si los hay,
 si hubiese alguna sociedad patri-
 ótica como las hay políticas,

he believes that there is no judg-
 ment day, and there is one.

bring a chair if there is one
 thereabouts. [any.

I shall buy tickets if there are
 if there were some patriotic so-
 ciety as there are political ones.

198. The same pronouns signify *some, one, ones*, when they are used with personal verbs relating to a substantive taken in a partitive sense : —

¿tiene V. pan? le or lo tengo,
 ¿quién quiere agua? la quiero yo,
 ¡felices pascuas tenga usted! —
 las tenga usted muy felices,
 ¿tiene V. ganas de comer? las
 tengo y urgentes,

have you bread? I have (some).
 who wants water? I want some.
 a merry Christmas to you! — may
 you have very merry ones.
 have you an appetite? I have,
 and a pressing one.

199. **Lo**, accusative of **ello**, represents a phrase, an idea, to which gender cannot be assigned : —

¿cree usted lo que dice?
 no lo creo,
 ¿conviene hacerlo ó no?

do you believe what he says?
 I do not believe it.
 is it worth while to do it or not?

200. **Lo** is equivalent to *one, such*, when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*, referring to a foregoing substantive :—

¿es ella huérfana? lo es,	is she an orphan? she is (one).
¿son ellas huérfanas? lo son,	are they orphans? they are.
¿es usted caballero? lo soy,	are you a gentleman? I am.
sea cristiano ó no lo sea,	whether he be a Christian or not.
afirmaba el autor que lo era tam-	the author affirmed that he was
bien de un Viaje,	one of some Travels too.
ví que decía “carta”; éralo en	I saw that it said “Epistle”; in
efecto,	fact it was one.

201. When **lo** stands in the predicate of the verb *to be*, and relates to an adjective, it is equivalent to *so* :—

si él está contento, yo no lo estoy,	if he is satisfied, I am not (so).
¿será ocioso emprenderlo?	will it be vain to undertake it?
si que lo será,	yes, it will be.
los ladrones son muy honrados,	robbers are very honest people,
pero tambien lo son los ver-	but so are hangmen likewise.
dugos,	

REMARK. — The idiomatic formulae, *Is it I? is it thou? it is I, it is thou, etc.*, are expressed in Spanish by the simple verb *to be* (*I am, thou art; am I? art thou? etc.*) :—

¿quién es? yo soy,	who is it? it is I.
¿son ustedes? nosotros somos,	is it you? it is we.
¿soy yo, Señor? tú eres,	Lord, is it I? it is thou.

Prepositional.

202. The prepositional case is that form of the pronoun before which all prepositions must stand. It is the same as the nominative in form, save in **mi, ti,** and **si** :—

sin mí, para tí,	without me, for thee.
con él, por usted,	with him, by you.
á nosotros, de vosotros,	to us, of or from you.

203. By exception, the preposition **con**, *with*, unites as one word to the forms **-migo, -tigo, -sigo** — the “go” being a forgotten remnant of the Latin *cum* in *mecum, tecum, secum* : —

conmigo, contigo,	| with me, with thee.
consigo,	| with himself, herself, etc.
but	
con él, con ella,	| with him (it), with her (it).
con ello, con nosotros,	| with it, with us.

204. The adverb **allí**, *there, in it*, is often used instead of a pronoun in the prepositional case : —

¿está en la cajita? allí está,	| is it in the box? it is in it. [it.
la pintura—clava allí los ojos,	| the painting—fix your eyes on

Position of the Object.

205. The conjunctive forms of the dative and accusative cases regularly stand before the finite verb; but to infinitives, gerunds, and imperatives conjugated affirmatively, they are appended as one word : —

me oye, oirme,	| he hears me, to hear me.
oyéndome, óyeme	| hearing me, hear (thou) me.
te digo, decirte,	| I tell thee, to tell thee.
diciéndote, díme,	| telling thee, tell (thou) me.
no le escuches,	| do not listen to him.
no me digas eso,	| do not tell me that.

206. Objective pronouns may, however, be appended to the finite verb when it begins a sentence, unless negative : —

réstanos decir (no nos resta),	| it remains for us to say.
nególes el cielo este gozo,	| heaven denied them this boon.
séale la tierra leve,	| light be the dust above him !
pláceme, dijo el cura,	| it pleases me, said the curate.

207. If an infinitive depend on a verb or on another infinitive, the pronoun may stand before the verb or be attached to either infinitive :—

no quiso decirme, <i>or</i> no me	he did not care to tell me.
quiso decir, [buscar,	
voy á buscarlos, <i>or</i> los voy á	I am going to look for them.
sin volver á preguntarles, <i>or</i> sin	without asking them again (re-
volverles á preguntar,	turning to ask them).

a. If the verb or infinitive do not admit an object, the pronoun attaches to the word that governs it according to the primary rule :—

los vió venir,	he saw them come.
vino á verme,	he came to see me.
al oírnos discurrir así,	on hearing us discourse thus.

208. When the gerund is in the progressive form of the verb with **estar**, *to be*; **ir**, *to go*; **venir**, *to come*; **andar**, *to go*, the object-pronoun may attach to it, or stand before the verb; but the latter disposition is preferable :—

lo estamos viendo todos los días,	we are seeing it every day.
los voy buscando,	I am looking for them.
os vamos comprendiendo,	we are getting to understand you.
nos iba siguiendo,	he went on following us.

209. The first and second persons plural of the imperative mode lose the *s* and the *d* of the respective endings when the reflexives **nos** and **os** are attached to it :—

amémonos (<i>for</i> amémosnos),	let us love one another.
vámonos (<i>for</i> vayámosnos),	let us go.
amáos (<i>for</i> amados),	love (ye) one another.
detenéos (<i>for</i> detenedos),	stop (yourselves).
rendíos (<i>for</i> rendidos),	surrender (yourselves).

REMARK. — The above constitute the natural and regular laws for the position of the conjunctive pronouns. There are many deviations in practice from them which the student is advised not to imitate, since their application would be more or less quaint and inelegant, or dependent on a wide experience of the language at all epochs.

Disjunctive Form.

210. The disjunctive or prepositional form of the dative and accusative cases is used when the verb, from its intransitive nature or signification, does not (in Spanish) admit an object without a preposition:—

acudió á mí, á tí, á vos,	he applied to me, to thee, to you.
viene á nosotros y nos dice,	he comes to us and says (to us).
nos acercamos á vosotros,	we draw near to you.
se dirigió á ellos, á ellas,	he addressed (himself to) them.

211. It is likewise used with all kinds of verbs in emphatic, intensive, and antithetic utterances, in exclamations, and in answer to a question without the verb:—

¡a tí llamo, Señor!	Lord, to Thee I call!
los lazos que á mí le unen,	the bonds that unite him to me.
¿á él buscas ahora?	are you looking for <i>him</i> now?
nadie osa avisar á vosotros y re-	no one ventures to warn <i>you</i> and
prender á vuestros cortesanos,	rebuke your <i>courtiers</i> .
la candela alumbra á los otros y	the lamp gives light to others
quema á sí misma,	and consumes itself.
el príncipe nos puede avisar y	the prince may warn us and we
nosotros á él,	him.
¿á quién busca fulano?	whom is such a one looking for?
á V., á mí, á ellos,	for you, for me, for them.
¡á él eso!	(do you say) that <i>to him</i> !

212. When there are two verbs, the one of which is intransitive and the other transitive, directly or indirectly, each may have its appropriate regimen:—

llego á ellos y les digo,	I come up to them and say (to them).
---------------------------	--------------------------------------

213. Some verbs require the disjunctive with one signification and the conjunctive with another:—

no vuelvas más á él,	do not return to him again.
me vuelve la cara,	he turns his face to me.
cedo á ella,	I give way to her.
le cedo el paso,	I allow her to pass.

Pleonastic Construction.

214. The conjunctive and disjunctive pronouns may be associated to the same verb, not merely to give emphasis, but also to amplify the phrase. Either pronoun may come first, but greater intensity is often secured when precedence is given to the disjunctive:—

á tí te conviene eso,	that is for your interest.
á él le aprecian mucho,	they regard him highly.
¿á mí qué me importa?	what do I care?
quiso engañarnos á nosotros,	he wanted to deceive us.
¿á vosotros os gusta eso?	do you like that? (does that please you?)

215. Any substantive or appositive may replace the disjunctive pronoun, preserving the redundant construction with the conjunctive:—

le aseguro al ministro, [bajar,	I assure the minister. [work.
á los Indios les obligaron á tra-	they compelled the Indians to
á los caballeros les pareció bien,	it seemed good to the gentlemen.
al hombre no le es permitido	man is not allowed to act with
obrar con libertad, [ficio,	freedom.
á todos nos reportará un bene-	it will bring us all a benefit.
á los Españoles nos gusta char-	we Spaniards like to gossip (it
lar (<i>or</i> hablar),	pleases us S. to gossip).

216. A similar redundant construction obtains with the conjunctive pronoun and a substantive in the accusative:—

eso no lo hago,
 es amigo de apuntarlo todo,
 todo me lo enviaba mi dama,
 casa no la tenían,
 cosa que no le fué posible el cum-
 plirla,
 hombres como Cárlos quinto
 nadie los volverá ya más á ver,

I'll not do that. [thing.
 he is fond of jotting down every-
 my lady sent me everything.
 house they had none.
 a thing that it was not possible
 for him to fulfil.
 no one will ever again see men
 like Charles the Fifth.

Inflection of Usted.

217. Usted is inflected like any personal substantive; as, *hombre, mujer*. To avoid its unpleasant repetition, it has for pronominal substitutes the datives and accusatives of *él* and *ella*, together with the common reflexive and reciprocal substitute of the third person :—

	Singular.	Plural.
N.	usted, <i>you.</i>	ustedes, <i>you.</i>
G.	de usted, <i>of you.</i>	de ustedes, <i>of you.</i>
D.	á usted, <i>subs. le, to you.</i>	á ustedes, les, <i>to you.</i>
A.	á usted, <i>subs. le, la, you.</i>	á ustedes, los, las (les), <i>you.</i>
P.	usted, <i>you.</i>	ustedes, <i>you.</i>
G.	de sí, <i>of yourself.</i>	de sí, <i>of yourselves.</i>
D.	se — á sí, <i>to yourself.</i>	se — á sí, <i>to yourselves.</i>
A.	se — á sí, <i>yourself.</i>	se — á sí, <i>yourselves.</i>
P.	sí, <i>yourself.</i>	sí, <i>yourselves.</i>

218. To avoid the disagreeable repetition of a formal address, *usted* as subject may be given once, and left understood afterward :—

usted no sabe lo que quiere, | you do not know what you want.

219. As object, *usted* may be represented by its pronominal substitutes :—

devuelvo á V. el libro y le pido otro,	I return you the book and ask you for another. [you.
venço á ver á VV. y á decirles,	I come to see you and to say to
oigo á V., mas no le veo,	I hear you, but I do not see you.
busqué á VV., mas no les en- contré,	I looked for you, but I did not find you.

220. In short sentences, *usted*, as subject, may be suppressed; and, as object, may be replaced by one of its substitutes, provided no ambiguity would arise:—

me hace un gran favor,	you do me a great favor.
es cuanto le tengo que decir,	that is all I have to tell you.
les digo y lo repito,	I tell you and I repeat it.

221. The oblique cases of *usted* may replace the possessive adjective:—

á los piés de V., señora,	at your feet, lady (<i>at presenta- tion or exit</i>). [salutation.
beso á V. la mano, caballero,	I kiss your hand, sir (<i>formal</i>)

222. *Usted*, as subject, may stand before or after the verb to which it is nominative. In the compound tenses it can never separate the auxiliary and participle, but takes its place before or after both:—

usted no sabe, <i>or</i> no sabe V.,	you do not know.
lo hallarán ustedes,	you will find it.
espero que nos hará V. el favor de quedar con nosotros,	I hope you will do us the favor of remaining with us.
¿ha recibido V. el libro?	have you received the book?

a. The substitutes of *usted* follow the general law of position laid down for conjunctive pronouns:—

le digo, les digo,	I tell you (<i>sing. and pl.</i>).
diciéndole, diciéndoos,	telling you.
decirle, buscarles,	to tell you, to look for you.
retírese V., no se retire V.,	retire, do not retire.

223. *Usted* and its substitutes form the pleonastic construction when joined to the same verb:—

le diré á V.,	I shall tell you.
le busco á V.,	I look for you.
¿qué le pasa á V. (<i>sing.</i>)?	what is the matter with you?
¿qué les pasa á VV. (<i>pl.</i>)?	what is the matter with you?

224. All adjectives, past participles, and variable words agree in gender and number with *usted* when they qualify or relate to it:—

es usted huérfana,	you are an orphan.
está V. engañado, señor,	you are deceived, sir.
está V. engañada, señora,	you are deceived, madam.
VV. mismos son los traidores,	you yourselves are the traitors.
VV. mismas son las traidoras,	you yourselves are the traitor- esses.

The Reflexive Pronoun.

225. The pronouns of the first and second persons have, in the oblique cases, a reflexive meaning when they refer to the same person as the subject:—

me hallo ocupado,	(I find myself,) I am busy.
te engañas,	thou deceivest thyself.
nos preguntamos,	we ask ourselves.
os arrojaís,	you cast yourselves.

226. Pronouns of the third person, including *usted*, refer, in the oblique cases, to a *different* person or thing from the subject. Hence, each gender employs the common substitute *se* to express reflexive or reciprocal action on the *subject*:—

se olvida de él,	he forgets him (another).
se olvida de sí,	he forgets himself.

le engaña,	he deceives him.
se engaña,	he deceives himself.
lo abre; se abre,	he opens it; it opens (itself).
los hieren,	they strike them.
se hieren,	they strike themselves. [yourself.
V. la engaña; V. se engaña,	you deceive her; you deceive
VV. las engañan; VV. se engañan,	you deceive them; you deceive yourselves.
se toman alimento para ellos,	they take along food for them.
se toman alimento para sí,	they take along food for themselves.

227. When *se* represents a neuter or an impersonal subject, it may be translated by *one*, *they*, *we*, *you*, *people*, taken in an indeterminate sense, or the verb with *se* may be rendered by the passive voice:—

se dice (<i>it says itself</i>),	they say, it is said.
se avisa,	they give notice, notice is given.
nada se saca con eso,	you'll gain nothing by that.
aquí se come bien,	here you dine well.
se ha mandado,	orders have been issued.
se ve, se conoce,	it is clear, it is evident.

228. A reflexive verb, as a rule, replaces the passive voice, which may often be translated by the indefinite *they*:—

aquí se habla Español,	Spanish is spoken here.
se equivocan mucho,	they are much mistaken.
se encuentra gente,	you find people.
se compran libros viejos,	old books are bought.
se entregan las armas,	they give up their arms (the arms surrender themselves or are surrendered).

229. The reflexive *se* is very generally omitted in translation as superfluous in English:—

se digna protejerme,
 se marchan en seguida,
 se va haciendo cajista,
 se queda con él,
 se vuelve loco de gozo,
 se niega á complacerme,

he deigns to aid me.
 they depart at once. [poser.
 he is getting to be a (type) com-
 he keeps it (remains with it).
 he is overcome with joy.
 he refuses to accommodate me.

230. *Se* stands in the dative to replace a possessive adjective with a determinative object :—

se pone la levita,
 se quita el abrigo,
 se ha cortado la mano,

he puts on his coat.
 he takes off his overcoat.
 he has cut his hand.

231. The dative of interest is frequently met with in Spanish, and sometimes has the force of an expletive :—

se propone,
 se lo comió,
 cójetela — la moneda,
 lléveselo V. — el libro,
 súbetelo — el baul,
 échatemelo, [fermos,
 á mí se me mueren ménos en-

he proposes (to himself).
 he ate it up (for himself).
 pick it up — the coin.
 take it — the book.
 carry it up stairs — the trunk.
 toss it to me. [die to me).
 I lose fewer cases (fewer cases

232. *Se* has very often an adverbial force, or it receives the action of a transitive verb, leaving it practically intransitive :—

se va, se vuelve,
 se cae, se lleva,
 se sale, se muere,
 se rompe, se dobla,
 se abre, se cierra,

he goes away, he turns around.
 he falls down, he carries off.
 it leaks, he is dying.
 it breaks, it folds.
 it opens, it shuts.

Two Objective Pronouns.

233. When a verb governs two conjunctive pronouns, the dative precedes the accusative, except only the reflexive *se*, which always stands first, whichever be its case :—

me lo da, me la da,
te los busca, te las busca.
nos lo presta,
os los ofrezco,
te lo llevas,
se me olvida,

he gives it to me.
he seeks them for thee.
he lends it to us.
I offer them to you.
thou takest it for thyself.
(it forgets itself to me) I forget.

234. When the conjunctive datives *le*, to him, to her, to it, to you, and *les*, to them, to you, meet a pronoun-object beginning with *l*, they assume the common form *se*. This word was anciently written *ge*, and is not to be confounded with the reflexive of the third person ¹:—

se le doy — el libro,
se lo presto — á ella,
se lo digo — á usted,
se les envia — á ellos,
se los presta — á ellas,
se lo digo — á ustedes,

I give it (the book) to him.
I lend it to her.
I say it to you (*sing.*). [them.
he sends them (persons) to
he lends them (books) to them.
I say it to you (*plur.*).

a. The mutations of *le*, *les* into *se* appear, then, as follows:—

le le	and	les le	become	se le;	ancient,	ge le.
le la		les la		se la;		ge la.
le lo		les lo		se lo;		ge lo.
le les		les les		se les;		ge les.
le los		les los		se los;		ge los.
le las		les las		se las;		ge las.

¹ *Se*, substitute for *le*, *les*, and *se*, reflexive, came to be identical in form by the early vitiated pronunciation of the primitive *ge*. The Latin *illi*, *illis*, first produced the Spanish datives *li* and *lis*, later *le*, *les*, which, before a pronoun-object in *l*, passed over into *ge*, like *muger* from *mulier*, and *ageno* from *alienus*. But *ge* and the reflexive *se* were anciently pronounced almost alike, — *shé* (Alsatian-French, *jé*), — and hence the graphic confusion of them near the close of the fifteenth century. Each should, therefore, be kept functionally distinct, although they are constantly interchanging with apparent identity:—

se lo procura (se = le),
se lo procura (se = se),
se los compran (se = les),
se los compran (se = se),

he gets it for him.
he gets it for himself.
they buy them for them.
they buy them for themselves.

235. The following table presents examples of two conjunctive pronouns, the first of which is in the dative case, and the second in the accusative. When these pronouns are *attached* to the verbal form, as represented in the second column, the verbal form must be accented; thus, **digotelo**, *I tell thee so* :—

FIRST PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.			
Before the Verb.	Attached to the Verb.		Reflexive.
me le, me la, me lo, me los (les), me las,	-mele, -mela, -melo, -melos (les), -melas,	him, her, it, it, them (<i>m.</i>), them (<i>f.</i>),	him, her, it, it, them, them,
		} to me.	} to myself.
nos le, nos la, nos lo, nos los (les), nos las,	-nosle, -nosla, -noslo, -noslos (les), -noslas,	him, her, it, it, them, them,	him, her, it, it, them, them,
		} to us.	} to ourselves.
SECOND PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.			
te le, te la, te lo, te los (les), te las,	-tele, -tela, -telo, -telos (les), -telas,	him, her, it, it, them, them,	him, her, it, it, them, them,
		} to thee.	} to thyself.
os le, os la, os lo, os los (les), os las,	-osle, -osla, -oslo, -oslos (les), -oslas,	him, her, it, it, them, them,	him, her, it, it, them, them,
		} to you.	} to yourself. } to yourselves.

THIRD PERSON WITH THIRD.—ORDER, DAT. AND ACC.			
Before the Verb.	Attached to the Verb.		Reflexive.
se le, se la, se lo, se los (les), se las,	-sele, -sela, -selo, -selos (les), -selas,	him, her, it, it, them (<i>m.</i>), them (<i>f.</i>),	to him. to her. to you.
			him, her, it, it, them, them,
			to himself. to herself. to itself. to yourself.
se le, se la, se lo, se los (les), se las,	-sele, -sela, -selo, -selos (les), -selas,	him, her, it, it, them, them,	to them. to you.
			him, her, it, it, them, them,
			to themselves. to yourselves.

236. In the following table the first pronoun is the reflexive in the accusative case, and the second a conjunctive in the dative:—

REFLEXIVE WITH ALL PERSONS.—ORDER, ACC. AND DAT.			
se me, se te, se le, se (le) á V.	-seme, -sete, -sele, -se (le) á V.	himself, herself, itself, themselves,	to me, to thee, to him, her, it. to you (your grace).
se nos, se os, se les, se (les) á VV.,	-senos, -seos, -seles, -se (les) á VV.,	himself, herself, itself, themselves,	to us. to you. to them. to you (your graces).

237. The position of two objective pronouns, with respect of the governing verb, follows the same laws as that of the simple objective:—

me lo da,	he gives it to me.
dámelo,	give it to me (<i>imperative</i>).
no me lo dés,	do not give it to me.
dárselo,	to give it to him (<i>or to them</i>).
dándoselo,	giving it to him (<i>or to them</i>).
quieren quitármelo, }	they wish to take it from me.
me lo quieren quitar, }	
entréguenseme las armas,	let the arms be delivered to me.
habiéndotelo dicho,	having told thee so.
se me figura,	I imagine.
figúratelo,	imagine <i>or</i> fancy it.
no te lo figures,	do not imagine it.

238. The pleonastic construction is the same for two objectives as for one : —

se lo doy á usted, á ustedes,	I give it to you (<i>sing. and plur.</i>).
á ese caballero se lo he dicho,	I have told it to that gentleman.
á mí me lo han asegurado,	they assured me so. [me.
nos hizo Dios merced á tí y á mí,	God was gracious to you and to

Mismo, Propio.

239. Every pronoun-subject may be intensified by adding to it, in the proper gender and number, the adjective **mismo**, *a, self*; **mismos**, *as, selves* : —

yo mismo, yo misma,	I myself (<i>man or woman</i>).
tú mismo, tú misma,	thou thyself.
él mismo, ella misma, [mas,	he himself, she herself.
nosotros mismos, nosotras mis-	we ourselves.
usted mismo, usted misma,	you yourself.
ustedes mismos <i>or</i> mismas,	you yourselves.

REMARK. — Note the effect of the graphic accent on the signification of *tu* and *el* :

él mismo, <i>he himself</i> .	el mismo, <i>the same</i> .
tú mismo, <i>thou thyself</i> .	tu mismo padre, <i>thy very father</i> .

240. In the oblique cases of the personal pronoun, *mismo* or *propio* may be used, but only with the disjunctive or prepositional forms : —

me retráigo de mí mismo,	I withdraw from myself.
te engañas á tí propio,	thou deceivest thyself.
se condena á sí misma,	she condemns herself.
os quereis á vosotros mismos,	you are fond of yourselves.
VV. se vuelven contra sí propios,	you turn against your own selves.

a. Mismo may be added to nouns with the reflexive meanings of the third person : —

el hombre mismo,	the man himself.
la mujer misma,	the woman herself.
el libro mismo,	the book itself.
los derechos mismos,	the rights themselves.
las casas mismas,	the houses themselves.

REMARK. — The English word *self*, joined to nouns or adjectives without a pronoun, may be generally rendered by *propio*, *a*, by a circumlocution, or by a single word : —

el amor propio, <i>self-love</i> .	el gobierno popular, <i>self-govern-</i>
la abnegacion propia, <i>self-denial</i> .	<i>ment</i> .
el orgullo, <i>self-consciousness</i> .	orgulloso, <i>self-conscious</i> .
el egoísmo, <i>selfishness</i> .	egoista, <i>selfish</i> . [<i>press</i> .
automático, <i>a</i> , <i>self-acting</i> .	prensa automática, <i>self-acting</i>
una máquina que se alimenta á sí misma, <i>a self-feeding machine</i> .	

241. After adverbs of time and place, *mismo* is invariable and signifies *this* or *that very*, or its force may be rendered by the tone of voice : —

mañana mismo, hoy mismo,	to-morrow, this very day.
ahora mismo, ayer mismo,	this very moment, only yesterday.
aquí (allí) mismo,	in this (that) very place.

242. *Mismo*, with the definite article, has the significations of *self*, *very*, *even*:—

el mismo cielo, *the sky itself, the very sky, even the sky.*

las mismas mujeres, *the women themselves, the very women, even the women.*

a. Even, in this sense, may also be expressed by **hasta**, with or without *mismo*:—

hasta las mujeres, *or hasta las mismas mujeres, even the women, or even the very women.*

b. Mismo, **a**, as a common adjective, with an article, signifies *the same*:—

el mismo día,

la misma noche,

los mismos libros,

the same day.

the same night.

the same books.

Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns.

243. Possessive adjectives and pronouns are varied and inflected like any adjective in **o**. Unlike the English usage, they agree in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the person or thing possessing.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

244. Possessive adjectives are conveniently classed as *conjunctive* and *absolute*, according as they stand *before* the noun or *after* it. The conjunctives lose their final syllable, and consequently their gender distinction, except in the first and second persons plural, in which both forms are identical. They are varied as follows:—

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.			
Conjunctive.	Absolute.		Conjunctive.	Absolute.		
Common.	Masc.	Fem.	Common.	Masc.	Fem.	
mi, tu, su,	mio, tuyo, suyo,	mia, tuya, suya,	mis, tus, sus,	mios, tuyos, suyos,	mias, tuyas, suyas,	
nuestro-a, vuestro-a, su,	nuestro, vuestro, suyo,	nuestra, vuestra, suya,	nuestros-as, vuestros-as, sus,	nuestros, vuestros, suyos,	nuestras, vuestras, suyas,	my. thy. his, her, its, your. our. your. their, your.

245. The conjunctive forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand *before* the nouns they qualify when no particular emphasis is intended :—

mi padre, mis padres,
mi casa, mis casas,
tu dinero, tus dias,
su tio, sus tios (§ 106),
su trabajo, sus trabajos,
nuestro libro, nuestra pluma,
nuestros libros, nuestras plumas,

my father, my parents.
my house, my houses.
thy money, thy days.¹
his uncle, his uncle and aunt.
their labor, their trials.
our book, our pen.
our books, our pens.

246. Since **su**, **sus**, signify *one's*, *his*, *her*, *its*, *their*, *your*, and are therefore often equivocal, the genitive case of the appropriate personal pronoun which they

¹ *Tus dias* also means "thy saint's day," the anniversary of one's christening or baptism; birthday is not celebrated in Spain. So they say, hoy es su santo, or el dia de su santo, or simply hoy son sus dias, *to-day is his saint or saint's day* or *to-day are "his days"* = his birthday, in English.

represent may be added to the noun, or the definite article may replace *su, sus*, when the context would be indecisive, or when emphasis requires :—

su libro de él, de ella,	his, her book (his book of him, of her).
su libro de ellos, de ellas,	their book (their book of them, m. and f.). [him, of them).
los libros de él, de ellos,	his, their books (the books of

247. *Your* is also expressed by *su, sus*, when the address is carried on by *usted*; otherwise *vuestro, a*, which corresponds to *vos, vosotros, as*. Instead of *su, de usted (de V.)* alone may be used, or both *su* and *de V.*, constituting the favorite pleonastic construction :—

su libro, el libro de V.,	or }	your book (to one person).
su libro de V.,	}	
su libro, el libro de VV.,	or }	your book (to several persons).
su libro de VV.,	}	
sus libros, los libros de V.,	or }	your books (to one person).
sus libros de V.,	}	
sus libros, los libros de VV.,	or }	your books (to several persons).
sus libros de VV.,	}	
¿tenéis vuestros libros?		have you your books?

REMARK. — The conjunctive possessive adjective may be strengthened by adding to it the word **propio, a, own** :—

mi propio padre,	my own father.
mi propia casa,	my own home (house).
sus propios asuntos,	his own affairs.
tu propia fé te ha salvado,	thine own faith hath saved thee.

248. The absolute or uncontracted forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand after an impersonal noun, accompanied by the definite article, and are preferred when greater intensity is required, as in

spirited language, in contrast, and for rhetorical effect:—

la fé tuya, el deseo mio,	thy faith, my desire.
los achaques suyos,	his (physical) infirmities. ¹
la edad nuestra,	our age, <i>or</i> our times.

REMARK. — Except in the vocative case, the absolute forms are not used of persons in common prose with the *definite* article. See § 250.

249. The absolute possessive adjectives of the first person are regularly employed in direct address (the vocative case), but without the definite article:—

amigo mio, amigos mios,	my friend, my friends.
padre nuestro, Dios mio,	Our Father, Heavens! (My God!)
hijo mio, muy señor mio,	my son, my dear sir (<i>in letters</i>).
muy señores nuestros,	gentlemen (our dear sirs). ²

a. But if an ordinary adjective, or past participle used as an adjective, accompany the direct address, either the conjunctive or the absolute forms may be used:—

mi querido hijo, <i>or</i> }	my dear son. ³
querido hijo mio, }	
mi inolvidable amigo,	my never-to-be-forgotten friend.
mis buenos señores,	my good sirs.
mi pobre muchacho, <i>or</i>	my unfortunate boy, <i>or</i>
pobre muchacho mio,	my poor fellow.

250. The definite article, with all absolute forms, is suppressed in certain phrases:—

¹ *Moral* infirmities would be *debilidades*.

² Used by one *firm* writing to another *firm* or *razon social*. We would say simply "gentlemen."

³ The *father* would usually write to his son: *mi querido hijo*; the *mother*, *querido hijo mio*, which will serve as an example of the intensity of postposition.

de parte tuya,	on thy part, from thee.
á casa nuestra,	to our house.
á fé mia, suya,	on my <i>or</i> his word.
á instancias vuestras,	at your instance.
á costa suya,	at his <i>or</i> their expense.

251. The absolute forms of the possessive adjective regularly stand after a personal or impersonal noun taken in an *indeterminate* sense (with *a*, *an*, *some*, expressed or implied). The adjective then assumes the idiomatic pronominal signification of *mine*, of *thine*, of *his*, etc. :—

un amigo mio, nuestro,	a friend of mine, of ours.
un pariente tuyo, vuestro,	a relative of thine, of yours.
unos conocidos de V., de VV.,	some acquaintances of yours.
unos criados suyos,	some servants of his (of theirs).
le daré á V. uno viejo mio,	I shall give you an old one of mine.
hablé con él de un asunto tuyo,	I spoke to him of a matter of yours.

REMARK. — We may also say, uno de mis amigos, *one of my friends*, etc. ; but there is more definiteness in this style of phrase than in the other.

a. The same rule obtains when the noun is in the predicate after the verb *to be*, or its equivalent :—

es discípulo mio, suyo,	he is a pupil of mine, of his.
son paisanos nuestros,	they are from our province.

b. A substantive grouped with one or more possessive adjectives, and denoting possession, is put in the genitive :—

“es íntimo amigo mio, tuyo, y de toda nuestra casa,”	he is an intimate friend of mine, of yours, and of all our family.
---	---

252. The conjunctive possessive adjectives have the same pronominal signification as the absolute ones do

with indeterminate expressions, when the former stand between a demonstrative and a noun : —

este mi amigo,	this friend of mine. ¹
esa tu casa,	that house of thine.
aquel su jardín,	yon garden of his, of theirs.
estos nuestros amigos,	these friends of ours.

253. Instead of the possessive adjective, the dative of the personal pronoun, or of *usted*, must be used with the verb, and the definite article with the noun, when reference is made to parts of the body or articles of dress : —

le tomó la mano (á ella),	he took her hand (the h. to her).
beso á usted la mano, ²	I kiss your hand (the h. to you).
me conmueve el alma,	it stirs my heart (to me the h.).
se hería el pecho,	he smote his (own) breast.
me duele la cabeza,	my head aches (the h. a. to me).
te pisa el vestido,	he steps on thy dress.
se quita los zapatos,	he takes off his (own) shoes.
les pone la ropa,	he puts on their clothes (to them).
me he cortado el dedo,	I have cut my finger.

a. If there can be no possible doubt as to the person referred to, the article will suffice without the dative : —

recibió un golpe en el brazo,	he received a blow in his arm.
ella levantó los ojos,	she raised her eyes. [lent.
bajó la cabeza y callóse,	he bowed his head and was si-

254. Possessive pronouns are regularly accompanied by the definite article, both agreeing in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the person or thing possessing : —

¹ In Biblical language, *este tu hermano*, *this thy brother*; *aquellos tus acusadores*, *those thine accusers*; but not in modern common English.

² The lady says this to the gentleman (adding *caballero*, *sir*), on a formal presentation, or when she or he leaves the room; his term is: *á los piés de V., señora*, *at your feet, lady*, on presentation or leave-taking.

su padre de V. y el mio,
 su casa y la tuya,
 mis amigos y los vuestros,
 nuestros hermanos y los de V.,
 enjugáron nuestras lágrimas, las
 de mi hija y mías,

your father and mine.
 his house and thine.
 my friends and yours.
 our brothers and yours.
 they wiped away my daughter's
 tears and mine.

255. The possessive pronouns are varied as follows :—

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc.	Fem.	
el mio, el tuyo,	la mia, la tuya,	lo mio, lo tuyo,	los mios, los tuyos,	las mias, las tuyas,	mine. thine.
el suyo,	la suya,	lo suyo,	los suyos,	las suyas,	{ his. hers. its.
el de V. or el suyo,	la de V. or la suya,	lo de V. or lo suyo,	los de V. or los suyos,	las de V. or las suyas,	} yours.
el nuestro, el vuestro, el suyo, el de VV. or el suyo,	la nuestra, la vuestra, la suya, la de VV. or la suya,	lo nuestro, lo vuestro, lo suyo, lo de VV. or lo suyo,	los nuestros, los vuestros, los suyos, los de VV. or los suyos,	las nuestras, las vuestras, las suyas, las de VV. or las suyas,	ours. yours. theirs. } yours.

256. Each one of these forms is inflected like any adjective with the definite article :—

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	Masc.	Fem.	
N. A. P.	el mio,	la mia,	lo mio,	los mios,	las mias,	mine.
G.	del mio,	de la mia,	de lo mio,	de los mios,	de las mias,	of mine.
D.	al mio,	á la mia,	á lo mio,	á los mios,	á las mias,	to mine.

su libro es semejante al mio,	his book is similar to mine.
tus costumbres son distintas de las nuestras,	thy habits are different from ours.
mi heredad linda con la de usted,	my property joins yours.

257. The possessive pronoun loses the article when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*, and is used in a general sense:—

el triunfo es nuestro,	the triumph is ours.
esta casa es mia,	this house is mine.
este libro es suyo, <i>or</i> de él,	this book is his.
los premios son vuestros,	the prizes are yours.
tuya es la culpa,	thine is the fault.

REMARK. — But if the possessive in the predicate has a specific meaning, the article is regularly employed:—

este sombrero es el mio,	{ <i>this</i> hat is mine (<i>i.e.</i> , the one that belongs to me).
esta casa es la mia,	<i>this</i> house is mine.

a. In the predicate *suyo* may be replaced by the genitive of the personal pronoun when ambiguity requires it:—

este libro es de él, de ella,	this book is his, hers.
esta pluma es de usted,	this pen is yours.
los árboles son de ellos,	the trees are theirs.
estos papeles son mios y no de ustedes,	these papers are mine and not yours (<i>pl.</i>).

258. The possessive may be employed substantively; *lo* is always so used:—

los mios,	my people, my party (mine).
los nuestros,	our friends, our adherents (ours).
lo mio y lo suyo,	what is mine and his.
á lo suyo vino, y los suyos no le recibieron,	{ he came to his own (estate), and his own (people) re- ceived him not.

DEMONSTRATIVES.

259. The demonstratives are determinative adjectives with substantive and pronominal functions. They agree in gender and number with the noun they limit, except the neuter forms which are substantives by nature. They are inflected by the aid of the case prepositions, and varied as follows:—

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.		
Masc.	Fem.	Neut.		Masc.	Fem.	
este,	esta,	esto,	this (by me).	estos,	estas,	these (by me).
ese,	esa,	eso,	that (by you).	esos,	esas,	those (by you).
aquel,	aquella,	aquello,	that (yonder).	aquellos,	aquellas,	those (yonder).
el,	la,	lo,	that (of).	los,	las,	those (of).

260. To these may be added: *estotro, a,—estotros, as, this other, these other*; *esotro, a,—esotros, as, that other, those other*; *aquel otro, aquella otra, etc., that other, those other*. Likewise the archaic forms *aqueste, aquese, for este, ese, this, that*.

261. The demonstratives *este, ese, and aquel* naturally stand before the noun which they limit:—

este niño, esta casa,	this child, this house.	[day.]
ese precio, aquel día,	that price (you mention), that	
estos libros, esas calles,	these books, those streets.	

262. In lively or intensive language, the demonstratives *este, ese, aquel*, may follow a noun accompanied by the definite article:—

el hombre este, la casa esta,	this man (here), this house.
las mujeres esas, los días aque-	those women, those days.
llos,	

263. In general, *este* signifies that which is near the speaker, where he is, or of which he is speaking; *ese*, that which is near the person addressed, where he is, or of which he is speaking; *aquel*, that which is remote from both:—

este libro, esta pluma,	this book, this pen (near me).
ese libro, esa pluma,	that book, that pen (near you).
aquel libro, aquella pluma,	that book, that pen (yonder).
este pais, esta ciudad,	this country, city (where I am).
ese pais, esa ciudad,	that country, city (where you are). [both].
aquel pais, aquella ciudad,	that country, city (distant from

REMARK. — Observe that *ese* means *that, where our correspondent is*, no matter how many thousand miles away; if we are in New York, and he in Valparaiso, we write to him of his town, and he to us of ours, as *esa ciudad*; while Montevideo and Quebec would be *aquella ciudad* to both. To each, respectively, the United States and Chili would be *ese pais, that country (where you are)*; while Canada or Buenos Ayres would be *aquel pais* to both.

a. In correspondence, the words **ciudad**, *city*, and **plaza**, *market*, are usually suppressed with *esta* and *esa* after the preposition **en**, *in*; **en esta** is therefore rendered *here*, and **en esa**, *there* or *with you*:—

en esta no hay novedad,	there is nothing new here.
¿cómo van los negocios en esa?	how is business with you?

b. When speaking of the same place, city, etc., relative distances therein are expressed by *este*, *ese*, and *aquel*:—

esta calle, este barrio,	this street, this district (where we are). [which you speak].
esa calle, ese barrio,	that street (where you live, or of
aquellas calles, aquellos barrios,	those (remote) streets.

264. With reference to time historically considered, *este* denotes the present day, or the time of which we are speaking represented as present; *ese*, a period or circumstance occurring within our personal memory; *aquel*, any period or circumstance occurring previous to our day:—

esta época,	these days (this epoch).
ese suceso,	that event (which I remember).
aquellos sucesos,	those events (before my time).

This law is seldom violated by correct writers.

a. Within the limit of personal experience, relative distances or events are expressed the same way:—

esta semana, este año,	this week, this year.
ese suceso, ese año,	that event, that year (spoken of).
aquel día, aquel año,	that day, that year (long ago).

265. *Ese* has often the contemptuous sense of the Latin *iste*:—

los pillos esos,	those rascals.
esos explotadores,	those (political) harpies.
esas tías, <i>or</i> las tías esas,	those women (in contempt). ¹

REMARK.—*Ese* is also found with many popular idioms associated with *de Dios*, *of God*, in the sense of “blessed”; as, *por esos trigos, campos, barrios “de Dios,” in those blessed fields, districts, etc.*, to indicate vaguely, wittily, or satirically indefinite location:—

“vengase un par de horas por esas calles de Dios, y verá cómo todos piensan de ese modo” (<i>Escenas Matritenses</i>),	come along for an hour or two and take a stroll about the streets, and you’ll see if everybody is of your way of thinking.
--	--

¹ Literally, “aunts”; popularly used of the supposed grasping *nobility*, as well as of lewd women.

El Carnaval es una licencia para que toda persona decente pueda correr como un loco *por esas calles de Dios*, con un rabo más largo que el de Luzbel, y un pedazo de carton en la cara, haciendo el oso delante de todo el mundo.

Carnival is a general privilege permitted to any respectable person to run madly about *the blessed streets* with a tail longer than Lucifer's, and a piece of pasteboard attached to his face, playing his pranks before everybody.

266. The neuter forms *esto*, *eso*, *aquello*, mean *this thing*, *that thing*; thus: **esto**, *what I say*; **eso**, *what you say*; **aquello**, *that* (remote thing), in narration:—

esto es cuanto tengo que decir,
eso no es nada,
eso es ya otra cosa,
eso es; eso sí,
aquello fué una lástima,

this is all I have to say.
that is nothing.
that makes a difference.
that's a fact; that indeed.
that was a pity (to see).

267. The definite article is used as a demonstrative pronoun, assuming the gender and number of the noun it replaces:—

mi libro y el de mi hermano,
estos libros y los de mi hermano,
su casa y la de su padre,
sus casas y las de su padre,
los relojes de oro y los de plata,

my book and that of my brother.
these books and my brother's.
his house and that of his father.
his houses and those of his father.
the gold and silver watches.

REMARK.—The genitive after the demonstrative pronoun may often be embraced in the English possessive case: My book and my brother's, his house and his father's, etc.

a. *Lo*, *aquello*, and *la*, *las*, are used elliptically in certain phrases:—

lo de Castro,
lo de ayer,
aquello del filósofo griego,

the (affair) of Castro.
the affair of yesterday. [osopher.
that (thought) of the Greek phi-

á la de Dios es Cristo,¹
tomar las de Villadiego,

like a good fellow.
to take French leave.

268. As substantives, *éste* refers to the last mentioned of two persons or things, and *aquél* to the first:—

éste, this,
ésta, this,
éstos, these,
éstas, these, } the latter.

aquél, that,
aquélla, that,
aquéllos, those,
aquéllas, those, } the former.

divididos estaban caballeros y
escuderos, **éstos** contándose
sus vidas, y **aquéllos** sus
amores,

parted sat knights and esquires;
the latter reviewing their lives,
and the former their gallan-
tries.

Observe that the order in Spanish is regularly the reverse of the English, although Mesonero Romanos writes:—

Sacrificando aquéllas, y ponien-
do éstas sobre las niñas de
mis ojos,

reluctantly parting with the for-
mer, and warmly cherishing
the latter.

¹ *A la or d lo de Dios es Cristo*, seems to derive from, *after the* (fashion) of [him whose] *God is Christ*, and to suggest a reference by the Moors and Jews to the dominant Christian Spaniard, by whom it was handed down in the lower signification of a "gay fellow,"—in Spanish, a *valenton*. In the *Lazarillo de Tormes* (1552) we find: *puesto á lo de Dios es Cristo, dressed up like a dandy*; and in the *Gusman de Alfarache*, *gente de lo de Dios es Cristo, boon companions*. Phrases like these and such as *tomar las de Villadiego*, *averigüelo Vargas*, etc., come from local circumstances soon forgotten, while the term remained. *Tomar las calças de Villadiego*, *to catch up Villadiego's small clothes*, redolent of some whilom scandal from which Villadiego escaped without stopping to arrange his toilet, is first given in the *Celestina* (1499-1500), then in Blasco de Garay (1545), in Perez del Castillo (1560), in Cipriano de Valera (1588), in Percivale's *Spanish-English Dictionary* (London, 1592), in that of Minsheu (1599), in Cervantes (1605), Covarrubias (1611), Quevedo (1627), and the Spanish Academy's *Dictionary* (1729), with the ellipse *calças* supplied. After that date, the "breeches" disappear, and few Spaniards to-day understand the original reference. *Averigüelo Vargas* means, literally, *let Vargas ferret it out*, or, more generally, *find it out if you can*,—a variation of Horace's *credat Iudæus Apella*.

269. *Este, ese, and aquel* are also used as substantives, in the signification of *this, this one, he; that, that one, he*, preserving their gender variation as adjectives, and the accent when relating to persons :—

este no es mi libro.	this is not my book.
¿es este el tuyo?	is this one thine?
aquel que está sobre el armario	that one which is on the ward-
es mío,	robe is mine.
entonces dijo éste,	then said he.
¿qué es lo que hace aquél?	what is that (fellow) doing?

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

270. The relative pronouns are :—

quien, quienes, who; que (invariable), *who, which, that.*
el cual, la cual; los cuales, las cuales, } *who, which.*
el que, la que; los que, las que, }
lo cual, which (thing); **lo que, that** *which, what.*
cuyo, cuya; cuyos, cuyas, whose, of which, which.

aquel que, or el que, he who, } *the one who, the one which*
aquella que, or la que, she who, } *or that.*
aquellos que, or los que, } *those who, or those which, the ones*
aquellas que, or las que, } *who or which.*
quien, he who, the one who; quienes, those who, the ones who.
aquello que, that (thing, saying or matter) *which.*

Quien.

271. **Quien** is now properly used of *persons* only. Its nominative is *que*, when the antecedent is a *word* of either gender or number, and *quien, el cual, or que* when it connects a compound sentence of which each member makes complete sense by itself :—

el hombre **que**, la mujer **que**,
ayer topé con un amigo, **quien**
(**el cual** *or* **que**) me contó
todo lo sucedido,
el duelo nos vino de los pueblos
del Norte, **quienes** (**los cua-**
les) decidían sus pleitos por
las armas,

the man who, the woman who.
yesterday I fell in with a friend,
who gave me an account of all
that has happened.
duelling came to us from the
Northern peoples, who were
accustomed to decide their
differences by arms.

REMARK. — Although we cannot use *quien* when the antecedent is a mere term without independence, yet we may say, for example, hombre es **quien** viene, *it is a man who comes*; mujeres son **quienes** salen, *they are women who are going out*; when the antecedent is used indefinitely and stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*.

272. In the oblique cases, *quien* was formerly employed for both numbers, and applied to things as well as persons, echoing its Latin origin (*quem*); but at present such use must be regarded as archaic:—

¡siglos dichosos aquellos **á quien**
los antiguos pusieron nombre
de dorados!
los Siete Sabios **á quien** tanto
veneraba la Grecia.

happy ages those to which the
ancients applied the epithet
golden!
the Seven Wise Men whom
Greece so much venerated.

REMARK. — *Quien* may, however, be used with proper names of cities, and applied to corporations and other collective terms denoting persons; such as, *pueblos*, *naciones*, *Academia*, *consejo*, etc.

273. The accusative of *quien* is either **á quien** or **que** (not **á que**), *whom*.¹

¹ Hence the sentence, *este es el hombre á que V. debe la vida*, is incorrect. See Monsanto and Languellier's *Spanish Grammar*, p. 133. We could say: *esta es la circunstancia á que V. debe la vida*; not *el hombre á que*.

274. The inflection of *quien* is as follows :—

	Singular.	Plural.	
N.	que (quien),	que (quienes),	who.
G.	de quien,	de quienes,	of whom.
D.	á quien,	á quienes,	to whom.
A.	á quien, <i>or</i> que,	á quienes, <i>or</i> que,	whom.
P.	con quien, ¹	con quienes, ¹	with whom.

el hombre **que** escribe,
 las muchachas **que** cosen,
 el amigo **de quien** hablamos,
 las personas **á quienes** acudo,
 el vecino **que** (*or á quien*) busco,
 las señoras **que** (**á quienes**)
 visito,
 los oficiales **con quienes** comí,

the man who writes.
 the girls who sew.
 the friend of whom we speak.
 the persons to whom I apply.
 the neighbor whom I seek.
 the ladies whom I visit.
 the officers with whom I dined.

Que.

275. **Que** relates to persons or things in the nominative or accusative cases only; in the other cases its use is limited to things. Being invariable in number and gender, its inflection is indicated by prepositions, as follows :—

	Singular.	Plural.	
N.	que,	que,	who, which, that.
G.	de que,	de que,	of which.
D.	á que,	á que,	to which.
A.	que,	que,	whom, which, that.
P.	con que,	con que,	with which.

¹ Any preposition may, of course, supplant *con* in the prepositional case; as, **por** quien, *by whom*; **para** quien, *for whom*, etc.

el libro que está encima de la mesa,	the book which (that) is on the table. [mark.
las plumas que no hacen señal,	the pens which do not make a
la huelga de que se habla,	the strike of which they speak.
el gobierno á que estamos sujetos,	the government to which we are subject. [myself.
los estudios á que me aplico,	the branches to which I apply
las manzanas que V. me dió,	the apples which you gave me.
la facilidad con que se hace,	the ease with which it is done.
la casa en que vivo,	the house in which I live.

REMARK. — In Spanish, the preposition must always stand before the word it governs. Hence the vulgar English constructions, *the strike they speak of, the government we are subject to, the house I live in*, must first be restored to the literary form before rendering into Spanish.

276. The accusative case of the relatives *quien* and *que* must never be omitted in Spanish:—

la persona que ví,	the person (whom) I saw.
las casas que compré,	the houses (which) I bought.

REMARK. — The conjunction **que**, *that*, must not be confounded with the relative pronoun. The former is frequently left out in Spanish after certain verbs, although the Academy very properly censures the omission:—

te ruego encarecidamente (que) no te marches hasta que yo vuelva,	I earnestly request you not to go away until I come back.
supliquemos al eterno Padre (que) quiera reconocer las palabras que le decimos (<i>Granada</i>),	let us implore the Eternal Father to be pleased to acknowledge the words that we address to him.

Literally: I request *that* you may not go, etc.; let us implore *that* the Father may be pleased, etc.

El cual, el que.

277. **El cual** and **el que** are the substitutes of *quien* and *que*, and therefore relate to persons or things. They are, in general, preferred when an inflected relative is desirable to avoid *ambiguity*, or the unpleasant recurrence of the word *que*, as *connectives* between compound sentences, and especially after short prepositions when the antecedent substantive is accompanied by the *indefinite* article, or is used *partitively*: —

los Moros se dejaron maniar de
los Cristianos, **los cuales** con
mucha presteza lo hicieron,
llamó á un mozo de cordel,¹ **al**
que le entregó una carta,
seguimos al ama del canónigo,
el cual vivía en un cuarto
bajo,
se dedicó al cuidado de su hija,
en **la cual** veía el retrato de su
mujer,
una real orden en **la cual** se
decía que,
un incidente con **el que** no se
había contado,
hay injurias de **las que** no se
debe hacer caso,

the Moors suffered their hands
to be tied by the Christians,
who were not slow to do it.
he summoned a messenger, to
whom he delivered a letter.
we followed the housekeeper of
the canon, who lived on the
ground floor.
he devoted himself to the care
of his daughter, in whom he
beheld the image of his wife.
a royal order in which it was said
that, *etc.*
an incident on which he had not
counted.
there are wrongs of which no
notice should be taken.

278. The inflection of *el cual* is as follows (that of *el que* varies the article in the same manner, but *que* does not change): —

¹ A *mozo de cordel* is a public "porter," who carries a coil of rope (*cordel*) on his shoulder, and serves to transport heavy burdens, or to run of errands. Lately "errand-boys" have been introduced into Madrid, called *mandaderos*.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
N.	el cual,	la cual,	los cuales,	las cuales,	who, which.
G.	del cual,	de la cual,	de los cuales,	de las cuales,	of whom, of which.
D.	al cual,	á la cual,	á los cuales,	á las cuales,	to whom, to which.
P.A.	al cual,	á la cual,	á los cuales,	á las cuales,	whom (persons).
I.A.	el cual,	la cual,	los cuales,	las cuales,	which (things).
P.	con el cual,	con la cual,	con los cuales,	con las cuales,	with whom, with which.

279. The substitutes are preferred when the relative is governed by compound prepositions, or such as are not monosyllables :—

un médico **ante el que** huyen
las dolencias,
un velador **encima del cual** hay
un juego de café,
las noticias **según las cuales**
quiso obrar,
la torre **desde la cual** se domina
la vega entera,

a physician before whom aches
and pains disappear.
a stand on which there is a coffee
set.
the information according to
which he saw fit to act.
the tower from which you can
take in the whole plain.

280. The adverb **donde**, *where*, is frequently used as a relative :—

la calle por **donde** ha ido,

| the street by which he went.

281. **Lo cual**, *which*, refers always to an idea, a thought, or a preceding sentence :—

le aconsejé que tomase un cria-
do, **lo cual** no quiso hacer,
dicho **lo cual**, salió,

I advised him to engage a ser-
vant, which he would not do.
saying which, he went out.

282. Lo que, that which, what, todo lo que, all that, likewise relate to an idea, and not to a word :—

me dijo lo que había sucedido,	he told me what had passed.
V. me dará lo que le parece,	you may give me what you like.
á lo que veo, no consta,	by what I see, it is not proven.
todo lo que dice es verdad,	all that he says is the truth.

a. Lo que occasionally signifies *how, how much*, especially in exclamations :—

; si él supiera lo que yo los deseaba! (<i>Cervantes.</i>)	if he only knew how much I longed for them!
; lo que debe V. saber!	how much you must know!

REMARK. — In popular language one often hears **lo que** employed in the sense of *as for*, probably an ellipse for *por lo que toca á* :—

lo que es este señor, no alcanzo comprenderle,	as for this gentleman, I do not succeed in understanding him.
---	---

283. Cuanto and todo cuanto, as much, as many, quite as much—many, often replace the relative expression **todos los que, todo lo que, all who, all which, all that**, the *que* being absorbed :—

A la más dulce De cuantas niñas Del feliz Túrta La márgen pisan.	To the sweetest Of <i>all</i> the maidens <i>That</i> tread the borders Of the pleasant Turia. ¹
es el más divertido de cuantos libros he leído, le ofreció todo cuanto poseía,	it is the most amusing of <i>all</i> the books <i>that</i> I ever read. he offered him <i>all that</i> he possessed.
recibieron con gozo cuanto los Españoles les daban,	they joyfully received all that the Spaniards gave them.

¹ The *Turia* is the ancient Roman, and modern poetical, name of the river *Guadalaviar*, that flows through the city of Valencia.

284. Cuyo, a, whose, of which, which, relates to persons and things, and agrees in gender and number with the object possessed :—

el joven **cuyo** padre conozco,
la hija **cuya** madre está enferma,
un oficial **cuyos** méritos son
imponderables,
por **cuya** causa,
la muerte, debajo de **cuyo** yugo
hemos de pasar todos,
en un lugar de La Mancha, de
cuyo nombre no quiero acordarme,
una música misteriosa, **cuyas**
notas se perdían en el silencio,

the youth whose father I know.
the daughter whose mother is ill.
an officer whose merits cannot
be exaggerated.
for which cause.
death, under whose yoke we
must all pass.
in a village of La Mancha, the
name of which I do not care to
call to mind.
mysterious music, whose strains
died away in silence.

a. A quien is often employed in the signification of *cuyo*, on the same principle that requires the dative of the personal pronoun with a definite substantive to render the possessive adjective (§ 253), usually combined with the redundant construction :—

como individuo, **á quien** em-
piezan **á** faltarle las fuerzas,
or,
cuyas fuerzas empiezan **á** fal-
tarle,
un hombre, **á quien** su empleo
(or, **cuyo** empleo) apenas le
daba para comer,

like an individual whose powers
begin to fail him.

a man whose occupation scarcely
yielded him a subsistence.

285. El que, with its variations **la que, los que, las que**, is used in the sense of *he who, she who, the one or one who; they who, those who, the ones who* (gen. **el de quien**, etc.), when it relates to *persons*. Relating to *things*, it signifies *the one which* or *that, those which* or *that, the ones which* or *that* (gen. **el de que**, etc.) :—

el que habla,	he who speaks.
V. es el que me ofende,	you are the one who offends me.
el aturdimiento del que no se da	the stupefaction of one who can-
cuenta de su movilidad,	not account for his movements.
los que salen son amigos míos,	those who are going out are
	friends of mine. [for.
no es la que buscaba,	she is not the one I was looking
estos libros son los que más	these books are the ones I prize
aprecio,	most.
aquel de quien hablo,	he of whom I speak.
	{ him who goes away they forget,
	or,
al que se va, se le olvida.	{ out of sight, out of mind.

286. Each member of the relative may be inflected, — the antecedent like the definite article, and the relative proper like *quien* or *que*, according to whether persons or things are referred to. In the oblique cases, however, the antecedent *aquel* is more common than *el*, when reference is made to persons; otherwise, either is employed according to the demonstrative meaning:—

aquel de quien lo oí,	he from whom I heard it.
aquella á quien visito,	she whom I visit.
aquellos con quienes anda,	those with whom he goes.
echa de ménos aquella ruidosa	he misses that boisterous glee
alegría que llenaba la casa,	that used to pervade the house.

REMARK. — *El*, as the antecedent of *que*, is the definite article with a demonstrative application, and hence it can never assume the accent (*él*), which is the characteristic of the personal pronoun.

287. Instead of *el que* and *aquel que*, **quien** is employed in the same senses, including in itself both the antecedent and the relative:—

quien calla, otorga,	he who is silent, consents.
quien se hace de miel, se le comen las moscas,	he who makes himself honey, will be devoured by the flies.
él es quien lo dijo,	he is the one who said so.
á quien Dios quiere guardar ¿quien lo destruirá?	who can destroy him whom God wishes to preserve?
obró como quien es (es decir, conforme á su condicion ó carácter),	he acted like the one that he is (i.e., like one of his station or character).
como quien se dirige á . . .	as you go towards . . .
como quien dice (como si se dijera),	as one who says (as if one should say).
lo que es al aire, no hay quien lo detenga,	as for the wind, there is none that can detain it.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

288. The interrogative pronouns are chiefly distinguishable from the relatives by the use of the graphic *accent*, applied alike in direct and indirect questions. They are :—

quién, pl. quiénes, <i>who?</i>	} <i>whose?</i>	qué (invariable), <i>what?</i>
cuyo, a, pl. cuyos, as,		cuál, pl. cuáles, <i>which? what?</i>
de quién, pl. de quiénes,		

289. **Quién** is declined like any substantive :—

¿quién es? ¿quiénes son?	who is it? who are they?
¿de quién habla V.?	of whom do you speak?
¿á quién visitamos?	whom do we visit?
¿para quién lo hizo?	for whom did he do it?
¿con quiénes comen hoy?	with whom do they dine to-day?
díme con quién andas, y te diré quién eres,	tell me with whom you go, and I will tell you who you are.

290. *Whose*, used interrogatively, is expressed by **cuyo, a**, or by **de quién** :—

¿cuyo es este libro? cuyo libro es este? <i>or</i> ,	}	whose book is this?
¿de quién es este libro?		
¿cúyas (<i>or</i> , de quién, de quién- es) son las casas aquellas?	}	whose houses are those (262)?
¿de cuyos proyectos habláis?		
¿en beneficio de quién lo hace V.?		of whose plans do you speak? for whose benefit do you do it?

291. Qué, *what*? is used as a substantive and as an adjective in both numbers and genders:—

¿qué dice? ¿qué hora es?	}	what does he say? what time is it? of what are you speaking? what noise is that?
¿de qué habla V.?		
¿qué ruido es ese?		

a. Qué is also employed in exclamations to signify *what! what a!* and before an adjective alone, *how!*—

¿qué día! ¿qué desgracia!	}	what a day! what a misfortune! how good and beautiful she is! to what heights has he risen! with what coolness he says it!
¿qué buena y hermosa es!		
¿á qué alturas ha subido!		
¿con qué aplomo lo dice!		

REMARK. — To add still greater emphasis, an adjective may be placed after the noun with *tan* or *más*:—

¿qué día tan hermoso!	}	what a beautiful day! what dull books!
¿qué libros más pesados!		

292. Cuál, *which*? is used when one or more objects of a certain number are specifically or vaguely referred to, and it also replaces **qué, *what*?** when it stands in the predicate with the verb *to be*:—

¿cuál de los libros quiere V.?	}	which of the books do you want? which of my friends have you seen to-day? what is the date of the letter? what are the grounds? I do not know what they are.
¿á cuál de mis amigos has visto hoy?		
¿cuál es la fecha de la carta?		
¿cuáles son los motivos?		
ignoro cuáles sean,		

INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

293. Ajeno, a (Lat. *alienus*), *of others, another's, others', other people's*, is an adjective in Spanish; the neuter, **lo ajeno**, signifies *what belongs to another, or to others*: —

el dinero ajeno , la casa ajena ,	another's money, house.
los bienes ajenos ,	property of others.
no te metas en negocios ajenos	do not meddle with other people's affairs or lives. [other's.
ni en vidas ajenas ,	
busca lo tuyo y no lo ajeno ,	seek thine own, and not an-

a. Ajeno is also an adjective with the regimen *de*, and signifies *foreign to, disconnected with*: —

esto es ajeno de mi carácter,	this is foreign to my character.
ajeno de los negocios públicos,	disconnected with public affairs.
ajeno de la conversacion,	a stranger to the conversation.

294. Ál (Lat. *alius, aliud*), *another person, another thing*, is now obsolete, or is occasionally used to give an antique flavor to modern discourse; it is replaced by *otro, de otro modo*, etc.: —

so el sayal ay ál (<i>Proverbs</i> , 1556),	under the sackcloth there is another.
é los unos ni los otros non fagades nin fagan ende ál (<i>Law of</i> 1492),	and let none of you do or suffer aught else to be done (<i>inde aliud</i>).
en ál estuvo que en encantamientos (<i>Cervántes, Don Quijote</i>),	he was for something else than enchantments.

295. Alguien (Lat. *aliquem*), *somebody, some one, anybody, any one*, is an invariable substantive, used of persons only, and cannot be followed by a partitive genitive (*de*): —

álguien ha estado aquí,
 ¿ha venido **álguien**?
 si pregunta por mí **álguien**, díle
 que no estoy,

some one has been here.
 has any one come?
 if anybody asks for me, tell him
 that I am not in.

296. Alguno, a (Lat. *alīc-unus*), is employed both as a substantive and an adjective, and relates to persons or things. As related to persons, it means *somebody, some one, anybody, any one; some, any, a few*. Unlike *álguien*, it may be followed by the partitive genitive, expressed or implied, in both genders and numbers:—

alguno de VV. me tocó,
 esto lo hizo **alguno** de mis
 enemigos,
algunos no lo creen, otros sí,
 hay **algunos** que no lo sienten,
algun hombre (§ 123), **alguna**
 mujer, [ras,
algunos amigos, **algunas** seño-

some one of you touched me.
 some one of my enemies did
 this.
 some do not credit it, others do.
 there are some who do not regret
 it.
 some man, some woman.
 a few friends, a few ladies.

REMARK. — If it be said absolutely, “some one has touched me,” *álguien* would be preferred; but if we mean some one of a specific number or group, *alguno* (fem. *alguna*) must be used. So, *álguien* toca á la puerta, *some one knocks at the door*; vaya á ver si es *alguno* de los que esperamos, *go and see if it is some one of those we are expecting*; ¿Ha llegado *álguien*? *has anybody come?* ¿Ha llegado *alguno*? *has any one come (that we looked for)?*

297. Alguno, as related to things, signifies *some, any, — a few*:—

algun día, **alguna** época,
algunos siglos, **algunas** veces,
 ¿tiene V. **algun** remedio?
 posee **algunas** fincas,
 de estos libros, **algunos** no
 valen un ardite,
algunas de estas pizarras no
 sirven ya,

some day, some period.
 some centuries, sometimes.
 have you any help (for it)?
 he owns some real estate.
 of these books, some are not
 worth a farthing.
 some of these slates will not
 answer any longer.

REMARK. — “Some,” in a vague sense, as *some or other, one or another*, is translated by the idiomatic adjective expression, **alguno que otro** (*fem. alguna que otra*):—

él estaba al puesto hojeando	|	he stood at the stall turning over
alguno que otro libro,	|	the pages of some book.

— 298. “Some” or “any,” in partitive questions, are not generally expressed in Spanish, but their answers are given by an objective personal pronoun (*le, lo, los, las*), or by *alguno* with an adjective. **Algunos** and **unos cuantos** very exactly render the English *some* in the emphatic sense of *a few*:—

¿tiene V. vino de Valdepeñas?	|	have you any Valdepeñas wine?
le tengo y de primera clase,	|	I have some, and first-class.
¿quién vende libros viejos?	|	who sells old books?
los hay en aquella tienda,	|	there are some in yonder shop.
yo poseo unos cuantos raros	|	I have a few rare ones at home.
en casa,		

— 299. **Algo** (Lat. *alicum* for *aliquod*) and **alguna cosa**, *something, anything*, are used interchangeably; the former, however, is invariable and absolute:—

halló { algo alguna cosa }	|	he found something in the road.
¿tiene V. { algo bueno? alguna cosa buena? }	|	have you anything good? [him.
hay algo malicioso en él,	|	there is something malicious in

a. **Algo** is often employed as an adverb in the signification of *somewhat, rather*:—

estoy algo malucho,	|	I am somewhat ailing.
ella está algo interesada,	|	she is rather selfish.
esta carne es algo cara,	|	this meat is somewhat dear.

REMARK. — This “somewhat” is very often expressed by a diminutive termination, as *illo*, applied to the adjective; and when the remark is delicate, by *ico*, with or without *algo*:—

la carne es carilla,	the meat is rather dear.
ella es algo bonitica,	she is somewhat pretty.

300. **Ambos, as, both**, is used either as a substantive or an adjective, and of persons or things. It may be replaced by *los dos* (fem. *las dos*):—

venían ambos á caballo,	both came on horseback.
tengo ambas manos heladas,	both of my hands are frozen.

We could say with equal propriety: *venían los dos á caballo*, *tengo las dos manos heladas*.

a. Instead of *ambos, as*, **entrambos, as**, is met with in the same sense, although originally signifying *between two* (entre ambos). An idiomatic variation is also **ambos á dos, entrambos á dos**, *between the two*; as, le mataron **ambos á dos**, *they both slew him*, i.e., *between them both*.

b. “Both,” in the sense of *each*, is rendered by **uno y otro**, plur. **unos y otros**:—

personas de uno y otro sexo,	persons of both sexes.
estudió hombres y cosas, escribiendo despues sobre unos y otras ,	he studied men and things, subsequently writing on each (or both).

301. **Cada** (Gr. *κατά*), *each, every*, is an invariable adjective employed only in the singular, and always stands before the substantive:—

cada hombre; cada mujer,	each man; each woman.
cada año; cada semana,	every year; every week.
cada día tiene su afán,	each day has its cares.
á cada paso; por cada tomo,	at every step; for each volume.

a. Cada may stand with a plural substantive only when the latter is preceded by a numeral :—

cada dos dias,	every two days.
cada tres años,	every three years.
cada mil soldados,	every thousand soldiers.

302. When *cada* is employed substantively or distributively, it associates itself with *uno* (fem. *una*) or *cual*, forming **cada uno**, **cada cual** :—

cada uno tiene sus quehacéres,	each has his occupations. [him.
cada cual lleva lo suyo,	every one takes what belongs to
cada uno de los jueces,	each (one) of the judges.
cada una de las damas,	each (one) of the ladies.
cada uno segun sus obras,	every one according to his deeds.

303. *Every* may also be expressed by **todos los** (fem. **todas las**), agreeing with a plural noun including a period of time :—

todos los años, dias,	every year, every day.
todas las semanas, veces,	every week, every time.

304. **Cierto**, *a, a certain* —, is an adjective which is always followed by a noun without the indefinite article :—

cierto hombre ; cierta señora,	<i>a</i> certain man ; <i>a</i> certain lady.
ciertos libros ; ciertas cosas,	certain books ; certain things.
bajo ciertas condiciones,	on certain conditions.

REMARK. — If by *certain*, we wish to indicate authenticity, the above adjective ceases to be indefinite and always stands *after* the noun, or in the predicate alone :—

noticias ciertas ,	sure, authentic news.
la noticia es cierta ,	the intelligence is true.
no es cierto lo que V. dice,	what you say is not so.

305. Cosa, a thing (fem.), is often used in the signification of *something, anything*; and with a negative, *nothing*:—

es **cosa** muy de ver,
¿hay **cosa** más chocante?

camináron sin que les aconte-
ciese **cosa** que de contar
fuese,

no vale **cosa**,
no es **cosa** (que valga),

no quiero otra **cosa**,

it is something well worth seeing.
is there anything more extra-
ordinary?

they journeyed on without any-
thing occurring to them worthy
of note.

that is not worth anything.
that is nothing (important).

{ I do not want anything else, or
{ I care for nothing else.

306. Fulano (fem. **fulana**) (Span.-Arab. *fulán*), means *so and so, such a one*, or it expresses an evasion not easily rendered. It is used only of persons in the singular, to indicate any one whose name we do not know, or recall, or care to give. When used *alone*, it commonly assumes the form of **fulano de tal**¹; if *two* different persons are referred to in the same vague manner, **fulano** and **mengano** are associated; and, if *three*, **fulano, mengano y zutano** represent the "Tom, Dick, and Harry," of vulgar English²:—

¿quién será **fulano**?
¿quién lo dijo? ¿qué sé yo?

Fulano de tal.

ayer me escribió **fulano de tal**,

who can so and so be?
who said so? I don't know;
such a one.

yesterday so and so wrote me.

¹ "So and so of such a name," *fulano* representing the Christian name (*nombre*), and *tal* the surname (*apellido*); as, for example, *Juan de Valdés*.

² *Mengano* and *zutano* are undoubtedly alliterative merely, made up of invented stems with the common ending *ano*. *Zutano* is explained unsatisfactorily by Dietz and Mahn, each in his own way. Neither mentions *mengano*, which, in turn, may be connected with the obsolete *Mengo* or *Mingo*, familiar for Domingo, *Dominic*, or plain "Dick," although I incline to think them alliterations, corresponding in principle to *riff-raff*, *pell-mell*, etc.

no les va en ello **más** que el gusto
de que los mande **fulano** ó
mengano,

they have no other interest in
it than the pleasure of being
ordered about by this one and
that.

no conozco ni **fulano**, ni **men-**
gano, ni **zutano**,

I know neither this one, that
one, nor the other.

307. **Mismo**, *a* (archaic, *mesmo*, *a*, still used in rural districts; low Lat. *metipsimus*; Ital. *medesimo*; old Fr. *même*), is an adjective with occasional substantive functions. The neuter is **lo mismo**, *the same (thing)*.

308. When **mismo** stands before a noun, it has the meaning of *the same*, if coupled with the definite article; of *same* and *very*, with the demonstrative adjective; of *very*, with a possessive adjective; and *the same (one and the same)*, with the indefinite article or its plural *unos*, *unas*: —

el mismo día; **la misma** noche,
los mismos pensamientos,
este mismo caso,
esas mismas casas,
mis mismos amigos, enemigos,
una misma suerte, patria,
unos mismos padres (§ 106),
viene á ser **lo mismo**,

the same day; the same night.
the same thoughts. [stance.
this same (*or* this very) circum-
those same houses.
my very friends, enemies.
the same fate, country.
the same father and mother.
it amounts to the same (thing).

a. Before or after the noun, **mismo** with the definite article means also *very* or *self*: —

el mismo día; **el día mismo**,
las mismas mujeres,

the very day; the day itself.
the very women; the women
themselves.

See also §§ 239-242.

309. **Nada** (Lat. *res nata*, with a negative, *not a living thing*), *nothing* or *not anything*, stands before

the verb without a negative, or after the verb with **no**, *not*. Hence, in the latter case, and generally in Spanish, two negatives strengthen the negation :—

nada tengo, <i>or</i> no tengo nada ,	I have nothing — not anything.
nada veo, <i>or</i> no veo nada ,	I see nothing — I do not see a.
nada vale, <i>or</i> no vale nada ,	it is worth nothing — not worth a.
nada me dijo, <i>or</i> no me dijo nada ,	he told me nothing — did not tell me anything.

310. Although etymologically feminine, *nada* is always associated with the absolute form of an adjective, and in that case regularly follows the negative verb :—

no hizo nada bueno ni malo ,	he did nothing good or bad.
no exijo nada gravoso ,	I require nothing onerous.

311. Instead of *nada*, the forms *ninguna cosa* or *cosa alguna* are constantly met with in the same signification. The former may stand before the verb, or after it with the additional negation, while the latter can only follow a negative verb ; with an adjective only the first form, *ninguna cosa*, can be used, the adjective agreeing with the feminine *cosa* :—

ninguna cosa tengo,	} I have nothing, <i>or</i> I have not anything.
no tengo ninguna cosa , <i>or</i>	
no tengo cosa alguna ,	
no tengo ninguna cosa buena , <i>or</i>	} I have nothing good.
no tengo nada bueno ; <i>but not</i>	
no tengo cosa alguna buena,	

312. **Nada**, **ninguna cosa**, or **cosa alguna**, may stand after a verb without *no*, in the signification of *anything* or *ought* :—

a. In exclamatory or interrogative sentences that involve a negative answer:—

¿cómo negarle á él nada !	how can one refuse <i>him</i> anything!
¿quién habrá visto ni oído nada que iguale á ello?	who can have seen or heard any- thing to equal that?

b. After verbs that contain in themselves a negative idea:—

guárdese V. de decirle nada ,	beware how you tell him any- i.e., see that you do not tell him anything. [thing;
---	--

c. After the prepositions **sin**, *without*; **antes de**, *before*; the conjunctions **sin que**, *without* (that); **antes que**, *before* (that):—

sin preguntarle nada ,	without asking him anything.
antes de decirles nada ,	before telling them anything.
sin que me dijese nada ,	without his telling me anything.
antes que contestase nada , ¹	before I answered anything.

d. After comparatives and superlatives:—

mejor que nada de todo cuanto le he oído,	better than anything that I ever heard him say.
---	--

313. **Nada** is often used elliptically as an exclamation designed to cut off farther remark or discussion, and may be variously rendered by *say no more*, *never mind*, *well*, *there*:—

nada, nada , voy á verle en se- guida (<i>for no digas más</i>),	say no more; I'll go and see him at once.
pues nada , or } hasta la vista, con que,	well; until we meet again.

¹ If *nunca* stands after the verb with *nada*, the verb is negative: no vale nunca nada, *he never amounts to anything*; nunca vale nada, *he is never worth anything*.

314. Nada may be followed by **de**, with substantives, to signify *nothing of, no* : —

que nada de esto transluzca,	let nothing of this leak out.
él no tiene nada de juego ni	he has no (propensity to) gaming
licores (no tiene vicios),	or strong drink (no bad habits).

315. No — nada, also means *not — at all* : —

no importa nada ,	that does not matter at all.
no me gusta nada ,	I don't like that at all (<i>literally</i> , it does not please me at all).

a. Nada is likewise employed without other negatives, in the same sense of *not at all, in no respect* : —

yo nada temo la muerte,	I do not at all fear death.
él es nada perezoso,	he is not at all indolent.

316. Nadie,¹ *no one, nobody*, is the negative of *alguien*, and is subject to the same limitations (§ 295); that is, it is an invariable substantive, used of persons only, and cannot be followed by a partitive genitive. Like *nada*, it requires another negative only when it comes after the verb : —

nadie pase, <i>or</i> no pase nadie ,	let no one pass (<i>or</i> go in).
nadie ha venido todavía, <i>or</i>	nobody has come yet.
no ha venido nadie todavía, }	
á nadie veo, <i>or</i> no veo á nadie ,	I do not see any one. [time.
nadie vió jamás á Dios,	no man hath seen God at any
¿quién ha llamado? — nadie ,	who called (<i>or</i> knocked)? — No
	one.
no he visto á nadie ,	I have not seen anybody.

¹ *Nadie* (ancient, *nadi*) is from the Latin *natus* — with a negative, *not a living soul*; the form *nadie* seems to be an assimilation of *nadi* to the ending *e* in *este, ese*. In the sixteenth century, it is often replaced by the formula *no — hombre* = *no — nadie*: El **no** maravillarse **hombre** de nada, *for a man to wonder at nothing*. See my edition of the *Works of Mendoza*, Madrid, 1877, p. 106.

317. Nadie may stand after a verb without *no*, in the signification of *anybody*, under the same conditions that apply to *nada* (§ 312, *a-d*):—

¿quién habrá visto **nadie** que
sea más comedido?

¿cómo negaré **nada** á nadie?

guárdese V. de descubrir el
secreto á **nadie**,

sin ser oído de **nadie**,

salió **sin** que **nadie** le viese,

nunca quiso escuchar á **nadie**,

or, [**nadie**,

no quiso escuchar **nunca** á]

una de **las más nuevas** historias
que **nadie** pudo pensar,

who can have seen anybody more
civil. [thing?

how can I refuse any one any-
beware how you disclose the
secret to anybody.

without being heard by any one.

he went out without anybody's
seeing him.

he never would listen to any one.

one of the strangest pieces of
fiction that any one could
conceive.

318. Ninguno,¹ *a*, *nobody*, *no one*, *none*, *no*, the negative of *alguno* (§ 296), is employed both as a substantive and an adjective, and relates to persons or things. Unlike *nadie*, it may be followed by the partitive genitive, expressed or implied, in both genders and numbers:—

¿cuál de ellos salió? — **Nin-**
guno,

ninguno de los enemigos,

ninguna de las casas,

ningun enemigo (§ 123),

ninguna casa,

ninguno consintió en ello,

no se fíe V. en **nadie**,

which one of them went out? —

No one.

none (not one) of the enemies.

none (not one) of the houses.

no enemy.

no house.

nobody agreed to it. [body.

do not put confidence in any-

¹ *Ninguno* is from the Latin *nec-unus* for *nullus*, with the intercalation of an *n* (*necunus*) after the analogy of *renglon* for *reglon* (augmentative of *regla* [*regüla*]) and of *cementerio* for *cemetery*.

no se fie V. en ninguno (de ellos),	[ninguno ,	do not put confidence in any (of them).	[none.
¿tiene V. libros?—no tengo		have you any books?—I have	

319. Like *nada* and *nadie*, **ninguno** requires an additional negative when it stands after the verb:—

no quiere á ninguno de los dos,	he likes neither of the two.
no consta en ninguna ley,	it does not appear by any law.
no tengo ningun libro; nin-	I have no book; no house.
guna casa, [regalo,	[present.
nunca quiso aceptar ningun	he never would accept any

320. **Ninguno** is translated by *any one*, *any*, when it stands after a verb without *no*, under the same conditions that apply to *nada* and *nadie* (§§ 312, 317):—

sin que ninguno de ellos me lo diga,	without any of them telling me so.
admiráronse todos, y más los duques que ninguno (§ 106),	all were astonished, and the duke and duchess more than any one.

321. After a negative verb, *alguno*, *a*, is more elegantly employed than *ninguno*, especially after *sin*; but it must be associated with a substantive expressed, and always stand after it:—

no siente remordimiento alguno ,	he feels no compunction.
sin trabajo ni fatiga alguna ,	without any toil or fatigue.
sin duda alguna ,	without any doubt.

a. If the noun be understood, *ninguno* alone can be used:—

estaba colgado de sus palabras sin hablar ninguna ,	he hung on his words without uttering (himself) any.
---	--

322. The English *no*, *not any*, as an adjective, when it is unemphatic, may be simply expressed by a verb made negative by **no**, followed by a noun without article :—

no tengo tiempo,	I have no time.
no tiene casa,	he has no house.
no tenemos libros,	we have no books.
no tienen amigos,	they have no friends.
no hay necesidad de ello,	there is no necessity for it.
no hay contestacion,	"no answer" (to a message).

a. To make this construction emphatic, we have only to put *ninguno*, *a*, before the noun, or better, *alguno*, *a*, after it :—

no tengo tiempo alguno ,	I have no time at all.
no hay ninguna contestacion, <i>or</i> }	there is no answer whatever.
no hay contestacion alguna ,	

323. Otro, a (Lat. *altër, alt'ro*), *another, other* (pl. *others*), is used both as an adjective and a substantive, embracing persons or things. It does not admit the indefinite article as in English (*an-other*), but requires the definite article when a distinct person or thing is to be specified :—

otro individuo; el otro i.,	another individual; the other i.
otra persona; la otra persona,	another person; the other p.
otro día; el otro día,	another day; the other day.
otra noche; la otra noche,	another night; the other night.
otros dicen; los otros creen,	others say; the others believe.
otras piensan de distinto modo,	others (<i>fem.</i>) think differently.
venga otro ; trae el otro ,	bring on another; bring the o.
dáme otra ; dáme la otra ,	give me another; give me the o.
tengo otros ; tengo los otros ,	I have others; I have the others.
busco otras ,	I look for others.
no quiero las otras ,	I don't want the others.

324. *The other part, the others*, when they mean *the rest*, are expressed respectively by **lo demás** and **los** or **las demás** :—

lo demás me importa poco,	I care little for the other part.
no he visto á los demás,	I have not seen the others.
en cuanto á las demás me callo,	as for the rest, I say nothing.

REMARK. — **Al otro día** means *on the next day*. The genitive of possession is expressed by *ajeno* (§ 293) ; as, los bienes **ajenos**, *not* los bienes **de otros**, *other people's property* or *goods*.

325. Propio, a (formerly *proprio*), *self, own*, may stand after the personal pronouns like *mismo*, and after the possessive adjectives and pronouns to strengthen their meaning :—

tú propio or propia ,	thou thyself.
tu propio amigo,	thy own friend.
por sí propios ,	of themselves.
este dinero es suyo propio ,	this money is his own.

REMARK. — **Propio de** signifies *adapted to, suitable for* :—
un juego **propio de** niños, | a game suitable for children.

326. Quiera, *you wish, you please*, subjunctive of the verb *querer*, is joined to or associated with pronouns, to form various indefinite expressions.

327. Quienquiera, *whoever, any one whatever*, relates only to persons, and in an absolute sense :—

quienquiera que sea,	whoever (that) it be.
eso lo diría á quienquiera,	I would affirm that to any one.
sería antipático, no tan solo en	that would be repulsive, not only
él, sino en quienquiera que	in him, but in anybody what-
sea,	ever.

a. Quien alone, followed by a verb in the indicative or subjunctive, often admits the signification of *any one who*, especially in the oblique cases :—

lo digo á quien quiera aceptar la apuesta,	I say it to any one who may care to accept the wager.
---	--

328. Cualquiera, pl. **cualesquiera**, *any (whatever), any (you please)*, is both an adjective and a substantive, relating to persons or things :—

a. As an adjective, it may precede or follow the noun ; but in the latter case, only in the singular :—

cualquier día (§ 123)—noche, cualesquier motivos—personas, un libro—una pluma cualquiera ,	any day ; any night. any reasons ; any persons. any book ; any pen.
---	---

b. Followed by *de*, **cualquiera** signifies likewise *any*, and of two, *either* :—

cualquiera de los bultos, cualquiera de los dos,	any of the packages. either of the two.
---	--

REMARK.—**Un cualquiera** means “a nobody,” a person of no account, or of no pedigree.

329. Cualquiera, followed by **que** and a verb in the subjunctive, means *whichever, whatever* :—

cualquier cosa que V. diga, cualquier motivo que se pre- sente, [pren, cualesquiera cosas que com- cualquiera que V. guste,	whatever you say. whatever motive be alleged, <i>or</i> assigned. whatever things they buy. whichever you like.
---	---

330. Whatever may also be expressed by **sea el que**, **la que**, pl. **sean los que**, **las que**, with a noun and a verb in the subjunctive :—

sea el que quiera el motivo que se presente,	whatever reason be assigned.
sea el que quiera el trabajo que nos cueste vivir,	whatever be the trouble that living costs us.

331. Whatever, as a neuter substantive, is rendered by **todo lo que** and **por más que**, with the subjunctive; *what*, in this relation, by **lo que**:—

todo lo que V. me mandáre eso haré,	whatever you order me, I will do. [him.
por más que diga, no lo creo, diga lo que quiera,	whatever he say, I do not credit say what he may.

332. Sendos, as (corrupted from the Latin *singulos* -as), *one for each, each one*, is used distributively and only in the plural:—

tenían las cuatro ninfas sendos vasos hechos á la romana, salieron de la nave seis enanos, tañendo sendas harpas,	the four nymphs had each a vase made in the Roman fashion. six dwarfs came forth from the vessel, each playing a harp.
--	---

333. Tal (pl. **tales**), *such, such a* (pl. *such*), is used as a substantive and an adjective of persons and things.

a. Without an indefinite article, as an adjective:—

tal hombre; tal mujer,	such <i>a</i> man; such <i>a</i> woman.
tal día; tal casa,	such <i>a</i> day; such <i>a</i> house.
tales hombres; tales días,	such men; such days.
tales vidas; tales personas,	such lives; such persons.

REMARK. — The same use extends to all the cases:—

no diga V. tal cosa,	do not say such <i>a</i> thing.
la historia de tal época,	the history of such <i>a</i> period.
no me fío en tales hombres,	I do not trust such men.

b. Without an indefinite article, as a neuter substantive :—

no hay **tal** en este país,
no creo **tal**,

| there is no such (thing) here.
| I don't believe such a (thing).

334. Tal is preceded by the indefinite article *only* when used with names of persons, and in the sense of *one, a certain*. With common nouns, **cierto**, without the article, has the same meaning, *a certain*. Hence **un tal**, **una tal**, and **cierto**, **cierta**, are adjectives replacing **fulano** or **fulan ode tal**, which can only be employed as a substantive (§§ 304, 306) :—

me lo dijo **fulano de tal**,
se lo dió **un tal** Perez,
cierto sargento, **un tal** García,
se puso al frente de la suble-
vacion,

| such a one told me so.
| one Perez gave it to him.
| a certain sergeant, one Garcia,
| put himself at the head of the
| insurrection.

REMARK. — *Tal* often serves to strengthen an affirmation, denial, or interrogation :—

sí **tal**; no **tal**; ¿qué **tal**?

| yes; no; how are you?

335. Idioms with *tal* are : **tal cual**, *such as*, and *so so, pretty well*; **tal y tal**, *such and such* (*pl. tales y tales, etc.*).

336. Todo, *a* (Lat. *totus*), *all, whole, every, anything*. is employed as an adjective, a substantive, and an indefinite pronoun.

337. As an adjective, it is followed by the definite article, or other determinative word if the noun requires one :—

todo el día ; toda la noche,	all day ; the whole night.
todos los hombres,	all men.
todas las clases,	all classes.
esto fué toda su locura,	his whole folly consisted in this.
por todo aquel día,	throughout that whole day.
hizo un viaje por toda España,	he made a journey over all Spain.
todo Madrid concurrió á la fiesta,	all Madrid turned out at the festival.

REMARK. — In poetical or intensive prose language, the adjective may follow the noun : —

armóse de sus armas todas (<i>Cervantes</i>),	he armed himself with all his arms.
--	-------------------------------------

338. Instead of *todo*, **entero**, *a*, *entire*, *whole*, *all*, may be used, placed always after the noun : —

el pueblo entero ,	the whole village.
la noche entera ,	the whole night.
días enteros ; la España entera ,	whole days ; all Spain.

339. An idiomatic use of *todo* is found especially with expressions of time, in which is meant some indefinite point within the general period mentioned : —

en todo el mes de setiembre,	some time in September. [year.
en todo el año que viene,	some time during the coming

340. **Todo**, as an adjective, may be followed by the noun directly, in the sense of *every* in the singular, or *all* in the plural : —

todo Español que se respeta á sí mismo,	every Spaniard who respects himself.
todo corazón sensible,	every heart that feels.
todo remedio es ya vano,	every appliance is now vain.
en todo caso ; á toda hora,	in every case ; at all hours.
por todos modos,	in every way (in all ways).
en todas partes,	everywhere (in all directions).

REMARK. — After *por, todo* frequently means the same as *único, a, sole, only*, with which it is freely exchanged:—

me dió por toda respuesta	|	he gave me as his only answer
que . . .	|	that . . .

341. As a substantive, *todo* refers to persons and things, in all genders and in both numbers:—

a. In the singular, mostly as a neuter — *all, everything*:—

todo se concluyó,	|	all is over (is finished).
todo era gritos y alboroto,	|	all was shrieks and confusion.
hombre pobre todo es trazas,	|	a poor man is all projects.
todo manifiesta su remordimiento,	|	everything proves his compunction.
en esta mesa hay de todo,	|	on this table there is everything.

REMARK. — The neuter use of *todo* is frequently associated with a pleonastic *lo*:—

lo ha confesado todo,	|	he has confessed everything.
todo lo gastas en vanidades,	|	you spend your all on frivolities.

b. In the plural in both genders:—

todos están ya presos,	|	all are now in prison.
aprobáron la medida todos,	|	all favored the measure.
no todos piensan del mismo modo,	|	not all think the same way (have the same way of thinking).
las he visto á todas (<i>women</i>),	|	I have seen them all.
todos están de venta (<i>books</i>),	|	all are for sale.

342. *Todo* is often synonymous with *cualquier cosa, anything (whatever)* in a good or bad sense:—

ese hombre es capaz de todo,	|	that man is capable of anything.
á todo me hallarás dispuesto,	|	you will find me ready for a.

343. Finally, **todo** qualifies relative pronouns, neuter adjectives (substantives) and adverbs, in the sense of *every one, all, quite, thoroughly*; as, *todo el que, todo aquel que, every one who*; *todos los que, all those who*; *todos cuantos, todo cuanto, all who or that*; *todo lo cual, all of which*; *todo lo que, all that*; *todo cansado, quite tired*; *todo lo demás, all the rest (omne cæterum)*, etc.

344. **Uno, a**, is an adjective, a substantive, and a pronoun, signifying in the singular *an* or *a, one, each other*; and in the plural, *some, each other, one another*:—

a. Singular:—

un hombre (§ 123); una ventana,	a man; a window.
un día; una semana,	one day; one week.
¿tiene V. un libro? — tengo uno ,	have you a book? — I have one.
¿puede uno ver qué es?	can one see what it is?
los dos hermanos se quieren uno	the brother and sister are fond
á otra (§ 106), [en otro ,	of each other.
estos hombres se apoyan uno	these men sustain one another.

b. Plural:—

unos bollos; unas almendras,	(some) cakes; almonds.
son unos desconocidos,	they are unknown persons.
unos van y otros vienen, [otros ,	some go and others come.
los obreros se ayudan unos á	the laborers help one another.
estas planchas de metal se dan	these plates of metal strike
una contra otra , or unas	against each other, or one
contra otras ,	another.

345. *Uno*, as an indefinite numeral, may stand in contrasted clauses, but usually at the present day without the article:—

de un momento á otro ,	from one minute to another.
de una manera ú otra ,	in one way or another.
uno fué justiciado y el otro soltado,	the one was executed and the other set free.
uno y otro ; uno ú otro ,	both; either.
ni uno ni otro ,	neither.

346. As an indefinite pronoun, *uno* may be followed by the partitive genitive :—

abrió una de las ventanas,	he opened one of the windows.
me regaló uno de sus libros,	he gave me one of his books.

a. The plural of *uno* in this construction is **algunos**, *as, some*, not *unos* :—

algunos de sus amigos,	some of his friends.
-------------------------------	----------------------

REMARK.—We may say **unos** amigos **suyos**, *some friends of his*, but not **unos de sus amigos**. The singular of **alguno** may be used thus distributively, but it is vaguer than **uno**—*some one or other of his friends*.

347. *Uno, a*, replaces a substantive with or without an adjective, to avoid the repetition of the former :—

tengo un reloj de oro y uno de plata, ambos preciosos,	I have a gold watch and a silver one, both very fine ones.
unas veces gastaba levita negra, y otras una de colores,	sometimes he wore a black frock coat, and others a colored one.
hablando de carabinas, él tiene una á cañon liso muy buena,	speaking of rifles, he has a very good smooth-bore (one).
careciendo yo de abrigo, él me prestó uno viejo suyo,	I being without an overcoat, he lent me an old one of his.

348. **Uno**, *one*; **se**, *they, you*; **gente**, *people*; are used in the vague signification of *some one, any one*; or the verb may be put in the third person plural :—

no sabe **uno** qué hacer, }
 no **se** sabe qué hacer, }
 llama **gente**, or llama águien,
llaman á la puerta,
 ¿quién es?—**gente** de paz.¹

one does not know what to do.
 somebody knocks.
 there is a rap at the door.
 who is it?—a friend (peace-folk).

349. Varios, as, several, a good many, is used as an adjective and a substantive:—

varios amigos vinieron,
 de estos brillantes tengo **varios**,
 he visto **varios** ejemplares de
 esta obra,

several friends came. [ral.
 of these diamonds, I have seve-
 I have seen several copies of this
 work.

REMARK.—Instead of *varios*, and parallel with it, the term **una porcion de**, a considerable number of, considerable, several, is popularly used followed by a noun in the singular or plural, or by a collective word:—

aboné **una porcion de** dinero,
una porcion de gente,
 he gastado **una porcion de**
 duros en ello,
una porcion de veces,
 recibí **una porcion de** encargos,

I paid considerable money.
 a considerable number of people.
 I have expended several dollars
 on that.
 several times, a number of times.
 I was entrusted with several
 messages.

The Verb.

350. Before proceeding to the conjugation of verbs, it is indispensable to give the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb **haber** . . , *to have* . . , by the aid of which the compound tenses of all other verbs are formed.

¹ In every Spanish apartment-door there is fixed a *ventanilla* or small opening, with a metal slide, which the servant slips back on answering a knock or ring, and inquires, ¿Quién? refusing to open till the caller exclaims, ¡Gente de paz! or simply, ¡Paz! peace; and among the old-fashioned, ¡Ave Maria!

de un momento á otro ,	from one minute to another.
de una manera ú otra ,	in one way or another.
uno fué justiciado y el otro	the one was executed and the
soltado,	other set free.
uno y otro ; uno ú otro ,	both; either.
ni uno ni otro ,	neither.

346. As an indefinite pronoun, *uno* may be followed by the partitive genitive:—

abrió una de las ventanas,	he opened one of the windows.
me regaló uno de sus libros,	he gave me one of his books.

a. The plural of *uno* in this construction is **algunos**, *as, some*, not *unos*:—

algunos de sus amigos,	| some of his friends.
-------------------------------	----------------------

REMARK. — We may say **unos** amigos **suyos**, *some friends of his*, but not **unos de sus amigos**. The singular of **alguno** may be used thus distributively, but it is vaguer than **uno** — *some one or other of his friends*.

347. *Uno, a*, replaces a substantive with or without an adjective, to avoid the repetition of the former:—

tengo un reloj de oro y uno de	I have a gold watch and a silver
plata, ambos preciosos,	one, both very fine ones.
unas veces gastaba levita negra,	sometimes he wore a black frock
y otras una de colores,	coat, and others a colored one.
hablando de carabinas, él tiene	speaking of rifles, he has a very
una á cañon liso muy buena,	good smooth-bore (one).
careciendo yo de abrigo, él me	I being without an overcoat, he
prestó uno viejo suyo,	lent me an old one of his.

348. **Uno**, *one*; **se**, *they, you*; **gente**, *people*; are used in the vague signification of *some one, any one*; or the verb may be put in the third person plural:—

no sabe **uno** qué hacer, }
 no **se** sabe qué hacer, }
 llama **gente**, or llama álguien,
 llaman á la puerta,
 ¿quién es? — **gente** de paz.¹

one does not know what to do.
 somebody knocks.
 there is a rap at the door.
 who is it? — a friend (peace-folk).

349. Varios, as, several, a good many, is used as an adjective and a substantive: —

varios amigos vinieron,
 de estos brillantes tengo **varios**,
 he visto **varios** ejemplares de
 esta obra,

several friends came. [ral.
 of these diamonds, I have seve-
 I have seen several copies of this
 work.

REMARK. — Instead of *varios*, and parallel with it, the term **una porcion de**, *a considerable number of, considerable, several*, is popularly used followed by a noun in the singular or plural, or by a collective word: —

aboné **una porcion de** dinero,
una porcion de gente,
 he gastado **una porcion de**
 duros en ello,
una porcion de veces,
 recibí **una porcion de** encargos,

I paid considerable money.
 a considerable number of people.
 I have expended several dollars
 on that.
 several times, a number of times.
 I was entrusted with several
 messages.

The Verb.

350. Before proceeding to the conjugation of verbs, it is indispensable to give the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb **haber** . . , *to have* . . , by the aid of which the compound tenses of all other verbs are formed.

¹ In every Spanish apartment-door there is fixed a *ventanilla* or small opening, with a metal slide, which the servant slips back on answering a knock or ring, and inquires, ¿Quién? refusing to open till the caller exclaims, ¡Gente de paz! or simply, ¡Paz! *peace*; and among the old-fashioned, ¡Ave Maria!

REMARK. — *To have*, as an auxiliary, then, is expressed in Spanish by **haber**; but, as an independent verb, meaning *to possess*, by **tener** : —

tengo un libro, <i>not</i> he un libro,	I have a book.
he tenido un libro, <i>not</i> }	I have had a book.
tengo tenido un libro, }	
tenerlo , <i>but</i> haberlo tenido,	to have it, to have had it.

Still *tener* may be occasionally employed as an auxiliary, as well as other verbs : —

la carta que **tengo** (*or* llevo) | the letter that I have written.
escrita,

Conjugation of the Active Auxiliary Verb.

351. **Haber**, *to have* ; stems : **hab**, **hub**, **habr**.

INFINITIVE.	GERUND.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
hab-er, <i>to have</i> .	hab-iendo, <i>having</i> .	hab-ido, <i>had</i> .
INDICATIVE MODE.		SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.
Present.		Present.
he, <i>I have.</i>		hay-a, <i>I may have.</i>
has, <i>thou hast.</i>		hay-as, <i>thou mayst have.</i>
ha, <i>he has.</i>		hay-a, <i>he may have.</i>
hemos, <i>we have.</i>		hay-amos, <i>we may have.</i>
hab-éis, <i>ye have.</i>		hay-áis, <i>ye may have.</i>
han, <i>they have.</i>		hay-an, <i>they may have.</i>
Imperfect.		Imperfect (first form).
hab-ía, <i>I had.</i>		hub-iera, <i>I might have.</i>
hab-ías, <i>thou hadst.</i>		hub-ieras, <i>thou mightst have.</i>
hab-ía, <i>he had.</i>		hub-iera, <i>he might have.</i>
hab-íamos, <i>we had.</i>		hub-iéramos, <i>we might have.</i>
hab-íais, <i>ye had.</i>		hub-iérais, <i>ye might have.</i>
hab-ían, <i>they had.</i>		hub-ieran, <i>they might have.</i>

INDICATIVE MODE.	SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.
<p>PREDERITE Past Definite.</p> <p>hub-e, <i>I had.</i> hub-iste, <i>thou hadst.</i> hub-o, <i>he had.</i> hub-imos, <i>we had.</i> hub-istels, <i>ye had.</i> hub-ieron, <i>they had.</i></p>	<p>Imperfect (second form).</p> <p>hub-iese, <i>I might have.</i> hub-ieses, <i>thou mightst have.</i> hub-iese, <i>he might have.</i> hub-iésemos, <i>we might have.</i> hub-iéseis, <i>ye might have.</i> hub-iesen, <i>they might have.</i></p>
<p>Future.</p> <p>habr-é, <i>I shall have.</i> habr-ás, <i>thou wilt have.</i> habr-á, <i>he will have.</i> habr-émos, <i>we shall have.</i> habr-éis, <i>ye will have.</i> habr-án, <i>they will have.</i></p>	<p>Future.</p> <p>hub-iere, <i>I should have.</i> hub-ieres, <i>thou shouldst have.</i> hub-iere, <i>he should have.</i> hub-iéremos, <i>we should have.</i> hub-iéreis, <i>ye should have.</i> hub-ieren, <i>they should have.</i></p>
<p>Conditional (apodasis).</p> <p>habr-fa, <i>I should have.</i> habr-fas, <i>thou wouldst have.</i> habr-fa, <i>he would have.</i> habr-famos, <i>we should have.</i> habr-fais, <i>ye would have.</i> habr-fan, <i>they would have.</i></p>	<p>Conditional (protasis).</p> <p>hubiera or hubiese, hubieras or hubieses, hubiera or hubiese, hubiéramos or hubiésemos, hubiérais or hubiéseis, hubieran or hubiesen,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">(if) I had, etc.</p>

Remarks on Haber.

352. In nearly all the persons of the indicative present, the original Latin stem and endings have shrunk, while the vowels *a* and *e* of the first person singular have been attracted and reduced to *ē* (*ai* = *e*), after the analogy of *sē* from *sapio* (*sai-po*), and *quepo* from *cipio* (*caipo*). Hence:—

Latin habeo, by	hai-bo, becomes modern Spanish	he.
habes,	haʼs	has.
habet,	ha-bt,	ha.
habēmus,	habēmos (archaic),	hemos.
habētis,	habēdes (obsolete),	habēis.
habent,	habn-t,	han.

a. The subjunctive present is from the Latin *habeam* = *hab-ya*[*m*], **haya**, so that the *y* here properly belongs to the ending.

b. The past definite **hube** is formed from *habui*, by the above law of vowel-attraction, yielding *haubi* (old Span. *hobe*). From this preterit-stem *hub*, are derived the imperfects and future subjunctive, by regular processes : Lat. *habueram* = *haubēra*, *hobiera* (§ 19), **hubiera**; *habuissem* = *haubēsse*, *hobiese*, **hubiese**; *habuerim* = *haubēri*, *hobiere*, **hubiere**.

c. The future and conditional indicative are properly compound tenses made up of the endings of the present and imperfect joined to the infinitive. In the case of *haber*, the *e* falls away, leaving the stem *habr* to receive the endings *e*, *as*, *a*; *ta*, *tas*, *ta*, etc.

353. Apart from its character as an auxiliary, *haber* is not at present employed as an independent verb, save in the following cases (§ 350, remark) :—

a. In certain special significations :—

el caco no pudo ser **habido**,
habido consejo,
se las **habrá** conmigo,
cuya ánima Dios **haya**,

the thief could not be taken.
a council having been held.
he will have to do with me.
may God have his soul.

b. In the simple tenses, when *haber* is followed by the preposition *de* and the infinitive of some other verb; it then has the meaning of *duty*, or refers to *future* action — *to be to*, *to have to*, *must* :—

¿que **había de** hacer yo? [casa,
hoy **hemos de** comer fuera de
mañana **has de** trabajar,
han de tenerlo en casa á la una,

what was I to do?
to-day we are to dine out.
to-morrow you are to work.
they must have it home by one.

c. In the simple and compound tenses, when followed by *que* and the infinitive of some other verb. **Haber** is

then used impersonally, and denotes *obligation* or *necessity*, and is translated by *to be necessary*:—

hubo que emplear dos días en ello,

¿qué **hay que** hacer?

ha habido que salir á escape,

hay que tener paciencia,

hay, ántes, **que** condenar esta política en los reyes Católicos,

no **hay que** dudarlo,

no **hay que** censurarlo en él,

it was necessary to lay out a couple of days on it.

what is to be done? [haste.

it was necessary to get out in we must have patience.

this policy is rather to be condemned in the Catholic sovereigns.

there is no doubting it.

it is not right to blame him for it.

REMARK. — In the personal verb, the imperative singular **he** for *habe*, and popularly the plural **hed** for *habed*, still survive with the adverbs **aquí**, *here*; **ahí** and **allí**, *there*; and regularly attach to themselves the pronoun objects *me*, *te*, *le*, *la*, *lo*, *nos*, *os*, *los*, *las*. The radical meaning of **he** in those positions is not *have*, but *behold*:—

he aquí (*behold here*),¹

he ahí (*behold there*),

hème aquí; **hélo ahí**,

hélos; **hélas**,

hédnos aquí, Señor, ante vuestra presencia,

this is (*pointing to what follows*). [*cedes*].

that is (*pointing to what prehere I am*; there it is.

behold them, *or* there they are.

behold us here, Lord, in thy presence.

354. As an impersonal verb, **haber** regularly builds its own compound tenses:—

SIMPLE TENSES.		
Infinitive.	Gerund.	Absolute Past Participle.
haber , <i>there . . . to be.</i>	habiendo , <i>there being.</i>	habido , <i>there having been.</i>

¹ In Biblical language, simply *lo* or *behold*:—

¡**he aquí**, os lo he dicho ántes! | behold, I have told you before!

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PRESENT. hay, there is, there are.</p> <p>IMPERFECT. había, there was, there were.</p> <p>PAST DEFINITE. hubo, there was, there were.</p> <p>FUTURE. habrá, there will be.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>). habría, there would be.</p>	<p>PRESENT. haya, there may be.</p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>first form</i>). hubiera, there might be.</p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>second form</i>). hubiese, there might be.</p> <p>FUTURE. hubiere, there should be.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>). [<i>were</i>.] hubiera or hubiese, (if) there</p>
<p>Imperative Mode :—haya or que haya, let there be.</p>	
<p>COMPOUND TENSES.</p>	
Infinitive Past.	Gerund Past.
<p>haber habido, there . . to have been.</p>	<p>habiendo habido, there having been.</p>
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PAST INDEFINITE. ha habido, there has,—have, been.</p> <p>PLUPERFECT. había habido, there had been.</p> <p>PAST ANTERIOR. hubo habido, there had been.</p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT. habrá habido, there will have been.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>). habría habido, there would have been.</p>	<p>PAST INDEFINITE. haya habido, there may have been.</p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>). [<i>been</i>.] hubiera habido, there might have</p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>). [<i>been</i>.] hubiese habido, there might have</p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT. [<i>been</i>.] hubiere habido, there should have</p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>). hubiera or hubiese habido, (if) there had been.</p>

Remarks on Haber Impersonal.

355. The infinitives are dependent on other verbs in some finite form:—

puede haber — haber habido, | there may be — have been.

356. *Hay* is a contraction of *ha* with the now obsolete *y* (Lat. *ibi* = *i'i*, *y*), *there*; **ha-y**, *it has there, there is, there are* (Fr. *il y a*). The old Spanish original *ha*, negative *non ha* (still preserved in Portuguese), has been handed down in the legal phrase for denying a petition: **no ha lugar**, *there is no occasion*; or for dismissing a case — equivalent to *nolle prosequi*.

357. A vulgar, but very common, form of the imperative and desiderative *haya* among the illiterate classes, is **haiga**, as if from *faciat* (*faica, faiga, haiga*):—

que haiga salud,	|	let there be health.
que no haiga novedad,	|	let nothing befall you.

Both these phrases are heard among the lowly in taking leave of one another. Likewise in the *personal* verb, in the respectful formula employed in an undertone when a deceased person is referred to. Thus, Ramon de la Cruz, in the "Sainete" entitled *Las Castañeras Picadas*, says humorously:—

Felices, señora Paca
 Javiera, con muchos gustos,
 Y los aumentos de gracia
 Que yo la deseo en vida
 Del difunto (que Dios **haiga**).

Active Conjugation of the Regular Verb.

358. The inflection of all regular verbs in the Active Voice proceeds after three models which are characterized by the ending of the infinitive, thus:—

Infinitives in **-ar** characterize the First Conj.: **hablar**, *to speak*.

Infinitives in **-er** characterize the Second Conj.: **comer**, *to eat*.

Infinitives in **-ir** characterize the Third Conj.: **vivir**, *to live*.

a. All verbs, whether regular, irregular, impersonal, or defective, belong to the conjugation indicated by their infinitive-ending, however much their inflection may differ in other respects from the models of regular verbs.

359. In the regular verb the terminations are applied directly to the unchanged stem, found by suppressing the infinitive-endings:—

habl- ar ;	habl- amos ,		to speak;	we speak.
com- er ;	com- emos ,		to eat;	we eat.
viv- ir ;	viv- imos ,		to live;	we live.

a. The indicative future and conditional are originally compound forms, consisting of the infinitive joined to the endings of the indicative present and imperfect of the auxiliary verb **haber**:—

hablar- é ;	hablar- é ,		I shall — I should speak.
vivir- án ;	vivir- án ,		they will — they would live.

REMARK.—Hence the literal meaning of the Spanish future is “I have to speak,” expressed likewise by *he de hablar*; and the literal meaning of the conditional is “I had to speak,” or *había de hablar*. Anciently, the object-pronoun could stand between the infinitive and the auxiliary; as, *hablaroshé*, *hablarleshta*, and *hablarlestá*; modern: *os hablaré*, *les hablaré*. Thus the proverb in its original form:—

díme con quien andas, decirtehé		tell me with whom you associate,
quién eres (<i>for te diré</i>),		I will tell you what you are.

360. In the irregular verb throughout, the gerund, past participle, present and imperfect indicative, present subjunctive, and imperative, are derived from the stem of the infinitive (*present stem*); the imperfect (both forms) and future subjunctive are derived from the stem of the past definite (*preterit stem*); the future and conditional of the indicative always follow the *infinitive* by adding to it the endings of *haber* (§ 352, c):—

I. Present Stem:—

Infinitive,
Gerund (*usually*),
Past participle,
Present indicative,
Present subjunctive,
Imperative,
Imperfect indicative.

II. Preterit Stem:—

Past definite indicative,
Imperfects subjunctive,
Future subjunctive,
Gerund (*occasionally*).

III. From the Infinitive:—

Future indicative,
Conditional of the indicative.

361. Table of verb-endings:—

	INFINITIVE.	GERUND.	PAST PARTICIPLE.
1.	-ar,	-ando,	-ado.
2.	-er,	-iendo,	-ido.
3.	-ir,	-iendo,	-ido.

INDICATIVE MODE.			SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.		
Present.			Present.		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-o,	-o,	-o.	-e,	-a,	-a.
-as,	-es,	-es.	-es,	-as,	-as.
-a,	-e,	-e.	-e,	-a,	-a.
-amos,	-emos,	-imos.	-emos,	-amos,	-amos.
-ais,	-eis,	-ís.	-eis,	-ais,	-ais.
-an,	-en,	-en.	-en,	-an,	-an.

INDICATIVE MODE.			SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.		
Imperfect.			Imperfect (<i>first form</i>).		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-aba,	-ía,	-ía.	-ara,	-iera,	-iera.
-abas,	-ías,	-ías.	-aras,	-ieras,	-ieras.
-aba,	-ía,	-ía.	-ara,	-iera,	-iera.
-ábamós,	-íamos,	-íamos.	-áramos,	-iéramos,	-iéramos.
-ábais,	-íais,	-íais.	-árais,	-lérais,	-lérais.
-aban,	-ían,	-ían.	-aran,	-leran,	-leran.
Past Definite.			Imperfect (<i>second form</i>).		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-é,	-í,	-í.	-ase,	-iese,	-iese.
-aste,	-iste,	-iste.	-ases,	-ieses,	-ieses.
-ó,	-ió,	-ió.	-ase,	-iese,	-iese.
-amos,	-imos,	-imos.	-ásemos,	-iésemos,	-iésemos.
-ásteis,	-ísteis,	-ísteis.	-áséis,	-iéséis,	-léséis.
-aron,	-ieron,	-ieron.	-asen,	-iesen,	-iesen.
Future.			Future.		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-é,	-é,	-é.	-are,	-iere,	-iere.
-ás,	-ás,	-ás.	-ares,	-ieres,	-ieres.
-á,	-á,	-á.	-are,	-iere,	-iere.
-émos,	-émos,	-émos.	-áremos,	-iéremos,	-iéremos.
-éis,	-éis,	-éis.	-áreis,	-léreis,	-léreis.
-án,	-án,	-án.	-aren,	-ieren,	-ieren.
Conditional.			IMPERATIVE MODE.		
1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.
-ía,	-ía,	-ía.	—	—	—
-ías,	-ías,	-ías.	-a,	-e,	-e.
-ía,	-ía,	-ía.	-e (V.),	-a (V.),	-a (V.).
-íamos,	-íamos,	-íamos.	-emos,	-amos,	-amos.
-íais,	-íais,	-íais.	-ad,	-ed,	-id.
-ían,	-ían,	-ían.	-en (VV.),	-an (VV.),	-an (VV.).

INDICATIVE MODE.	SUBJUNCTIVE MODE.
<p style="text-align: center;">Future.</p> <p>estará, <i>I shall be.</i> estarás, <i>thou shalt be.</i> estará, <i>he will be.</i> V. estará, <i>you will be.</i> estaremos, <i>we shall be.</i> estaréis, <i>ye will be.</i> estarán, <i>they will be.</i> VV. estarán, <i>you will be.</i></p>	<p style="text-align: center;">Future.</p> <p>estuviere, <i>I should be.</i> estuvieres, <i>thou shouldst be.</i> estuviere, <i>he should be.</i> V. estuviera, <i>you should be.</i> estuviéremos, <i>we should be.</i> estuviéreis, <i>ye should be.</i> estuvieren, <i>they should be.</i> VV. estuvieren, <i>you should be.</i></p>
<p style="text-align: center;">Conditional (apodasis).</p> <p>estaría, <i>I should be.</i> estarías, <i>thou wouldst be.</i> estaría, <i>he would be.</i> V. estaría, <i>you would be.</i> estaríamos, <i>we should be.</i> estaríais, <i>ye would be.</i> estarían, <i>they would be.</i> VV. estarían, <i>you would be.</i></p>	<p style="text-align: center;">Conditional (protasis).</p> <p>estuviera or estuviese, estuvieras or estuvieses, estuviera or estuviese, V. estuviera or estuviese, estuviéramos or estuviésemos, estuviérais or estuviéseis, estuvieran or estuviesen, VV. estuvieran or estuviesen,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">(ii) <i>I had been.</i></p>
IMPERATIVE MODE.	
<p style="text-align: center;">— —</p> <p>está, <i>be (thou).</i> esté, <i>let him be.</i> esté V., <i>be.</i></p> <p style="text-align: center;">— —</p> <p>no estés, <i>be (thou) not.</i> no esté, <i>let him not be.</i> no esté V., <i>do not be.</i></p>	<p>estemos, <i>let us be.</i> estad, <i>be (ye).</i> estén, <i>let them be.</i> estén VV., <i>be.</i></p> <p>no estemos, <i>let us not be.</i> no esteis, <i>be (ye) not.</i> no estén, <i>let them not be.</i> no estén VV., <i>do not be.</i></p>

383. The compound tenses of *estar* are regularly formed by means of the verb *haber* and the past participle *estado* (*status*), so that a synopsis will suffice to suggest the full inflection : —

Infinitive Past.	Gerund Past.
haber estado, <i>to have been.</i>	habiendo estado, <i>having been.</i>
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
PAST INDEFINITE. he estado, <i>I have been.</i>	PAST INDEFINITE. haya estado, <i>I may have been.</i>
PLUPERFECT. había estado, <i>I had been.</i>	PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>). hubiera estado, <i>I might have been.</i>
PAST ANTERIOR. hube estado, (when) <i>I had been.</i>	PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>). hubiese estado, <i>I might have been.</i>
FUTURE PERFECT. habré estado, <i>I shall have been.</i>	FUTURE PERFECT. hubiere estado, <i>I should have been.</i>
CONDITIONAL PAST. habría estado, <i>I should have been.</i>	CONDITIONAL PAST. [<i>been.</i>] hub-iera, hub-iese estado, (if) <i>I had</i>

Passive Voice.

384. The proper passive voice in Spanish is formed by the auxiliary **ser**, *to be*, joined to the past participle of the verb to be conjugated.

REMARK. — *Ser* is a contraction of the old Spanish *seer*, from the Latin verb *sedēre*, *to sit*. This stem forms the gerund *siendo* (old Span. *seyendo*), the past participle *sido* (old Span. *seydo*, from *seditus* for *sessus*), and the present subjunctive *sea* (old Span. *seya*, from *sedeam*, like *haya* from *habeam*, and *vaya* from a form *vadeam*). The future and conditional of the indicative regularly follow the infinitive *ser-é*, *ser-la*. The present indicative follows *sum*, *est*, *sumus*, *sunt*; but in the second person singular, it adopts the future *eris* (*eres*), and in the plural, a regularized *sutis* (old Span. *sodes*, modern *sois*). The imperfect indicative derives from *eram*, *eras*, etc. The preterit stem *fu* builds the past definite indicative, the imperfects and future subjunctive. Therefore, the Latin *esse* does not reappear in Spanish, except in the present and imperfect indicative.

CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE AUXILIARY VERB.

385. Ser, to be.

SIMPLE TENSES.		
Infinitive.	Gerund.	Past Participle.
ser, to be.	siendo, being.	sido, been.
Indicative Mode.		Subjunctive Mode.
PRESENT.		PRESENT.
soy (sum),	<i>I am.</i>	sea (sedeam), <i>I may be.</i>
eres (eris for es),	<i>thou art.</i>	seas, <i>thou mayst be.</i>
es (est),	<i>he is.</i>	sea, <i>he may be.</i>
V. es,	<i>you are.</i>	V. sea, <i>you may be.</i>
somos (sumus),	<i>we are.</i>	seamos, <i>we may be.</i>
sois (utis for estis),	<i>ye are.</i>	seals, <i>ye may be.</i>
son (sunt),	<i>they are.</i>	sean, <i>they may be.</i>
VV. son,	<i>you are.</i>	VV. sean, <i>you may be.</i>
IMPERFECT.		IMPERFECT (first form).
era,	<i>I was.</i>	fuera, <i>I might be.</i>
eras,	<i>thou wast.</i>	fueras, <i>thou mightest be.</i>
era,	<i>he was.</i>	fuera, <i>he might be.</i>
V. era,	<i>you were.</i>	V. fuera, <i>you might be.</i>
éramos,	<i>we were.</i>	fuéramos, <i>we might be.</i>
érais,	<i>ye were.</i>	fuérais, <i>ye might be.</i>
eran,	<i>they were.</i>	fuera, <i>they might be.</i>
VV. eran,	<i>you were.</i>	VV. fueran, <i>you might be.</i>
PAST DEFINITE.		IMPERFECT (second form).
fuí,	<i>I was.</i>	fuese, <i>I might be.</i>
fuiste,	<i>thou wast.</i>	fueses, <i>thou mightest be.</i>
fué,	<i>he was.</i>	fuese, <i>he might be.</i>
V. fué,	<i>you were.</i>	V. fuese, <i>you might be.</i>
fuimos,	<i>we were.</i>	fuésemos, <i>we might be.</i>
fuísteis,	<i>ye were.</i>	fuéseis, <i>ye might be.</i>
fueron,	<i>they were.</i>	fuesen, <i>they might be.</i>
VV. fueron,	<i>you were.</i>	VV. fuesen, <i>you might be.</i>

Indicative Mode.		Subjunctive Mode.	
FUTURE.		FUTURE.	
seré,	<i>I shall be.</i>	fuere,	<i>I should be.</i>
serás,	<i>thou wilt be.</i>	fueres,	<i>thou shouldst be.</i>
será,	<i>he will be.</i>	fuere,	<i>he should be.</i>
V. será,	<i>you will be.</i>	V. fuere,	<i>you should be.</i>
serémos,	<i>we shall be.</i>	fuéremos,	<i>we should be.</i>
seréis,	<i>ye will be.</i>	fuéreis,	<i>ye should be.</i>
serán,	<i>they will be.</i>	fueren,	<i>they should be.</i>
VV. serán,	<i>you will be.</i>	VV. fueren,	<i>you should be.</i>
CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>).		CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>).	
sería,	<i>I should be.</i>	fuera	or fuese,
serías,	<i>thou wouldst be.</i>	fueras	or fueses,
sería,	<i>he would be.</i>	fuera	or fuese,
V. sería,	<i>you would be.</i>	V. fuera	or fuese,
seríamos,	<i>we should be.</i>	fuéramos	or fuésemos,
seríais,	<i>ye would be.</i>	fuérais	or fuéséis,
serían,	<i>they would be.</i>	fueran	or fuesen,
VV. serían,	<i>you would be.</i>	VV. fueran	or fuesen,
Imperative Mode.			
SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
—	—	seamos,	<i>let us be.</i>
sé,	<i>be (thou).</i>	sed,	<i>be (ye).</i>
sea,	<i>let him be.</i>	sean,	<i>let them be.</i>
sea V.,	<i>be.</i>	sean VV.,	<i>be.</i>
—	—	no seamos,	<i>let us not be.</i>
no seas,	<i>be (thou) not.</i>	no sedís,	<i>be (ye) not.</i>
no sea,	<i>let him not be.</i>	no sean,	<i>let them not be.</i>
no sea V.,	<i>do not be.</i>	no sean VV.,	<i>do not be.</i>
COMPOUND TENSES.			
Infinitive Past.		Gerund Past.	
haber sido, <i>to have been.</i>		habiendo sido, <i>having been.</i>	

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <p>he sido, <i>I have been.</i> has sido, <i>thou hast been.</i> ha sido, <i>he has been.</i> V. ha sido, <i>you have been.</i> hemos sido, <i>we have been.</i> habels sido, <i>ye have been.</i> han sido, <i>they have been.</i> VV. han sido, <i>you have been.</i></p>	<p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <p>haya sido, <i>I</i> hayas sido, <i>thou</i> haya sido, <i>he</i> V: haya sido, <i>you</i> hayámos sido, <i>we</i> hayáis sido, <i>ye</i> hayan sido, <i>they</i> VV. hayan sido, <i>you</i></p> <p><i>} may have been, etc.</i></p>
<p>PLUPERFECT.</p> <p>había sido, <i>I had been.</i> habías sido, <i>thou hadst been.</i> había sido, <i>he had been.</i> V. había sido, <i>you had been.</i> habíamos sido, <i>we had been.</i> habíais sido, <i>ye had been.</i> habían sido, <i>they had been.</i> VV habían sido, <i>you had been.</i></p>	<p>PLUPERFECT (first form).</p> <p>hubiera sido, <i>I</i> hubieras sido, <i>thou</i> hubiera sido, <i>he</i> V. hubiera sido, <i>you</i> hubiéramos sido, <i>we</i> hubiérais sido, <i>ye</i> hubieran sido, <i>they</i> VV. hubieran sido, <i>you</i></p> <p><i>} might have been, etc.</i></p>
<p>PAST ANTERIOR.</p> <p>hube sido, (when) <i>I had been.</i> hubiste sido, <i>thou hadst been.</i> hubo sido, <i>he had been.</i> V. hubo sido, <i>you had been.</i> hubimos sido, <i>we had been.</i> hubistels sido, <i>ye had been.</i> hubieron sido, <i>they had been.</i> VV. hubieron sido, <i>you had been.</i></p>	<p>PLUPERFECT (second form).</p> <p>hubiese sido, <i>I</i> hubieses sido, <i>thou</i> hubiese sido, <i>he</i> V. hubiese sido, <i>you</i> hubiésemos sido, <i>we</i> hubiéseis sido, <i>ye</i> hubiesen sido, <i>they</i> VV. hubiesen sido, <i>you</i></p> <p><i>} might have been, etc.</i></p>
<p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p>habré sido, <i>I shall</i> habrás sido, <i>thou wilt</i> habrá sido, <i>he will</i> V. habrá sido, <i>you will</i> habrémos sido, <i>we shall</i> habréis sido, <i>ye will</i> habrán sido, <i>they will</i> VV. habrán sido, <i>you will</i></p> <p><i>} have been.</i></p>	<p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p>hubiere sido, <i>I</i> hubieres sido, <i>thou</i> hubiere sido, <i>he</i> V. hubiere sido, <i>you</i> hubiéremos sido, <i>we</i> hubiéreis sido, <i>ye</i> hubieren sido, <i>they</i> VV. hubieren sido, <i>you</i></p> <p><i>} should have been, etc.</i></p>

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <div> <div> habría sido, <i>I should</i> habrías sido, <i>thou wouldst</i> habría sido, <i>he would</i> V. habría sido, <i>you would</i> habríamos sido, <i>we should</i> habríais sido, <i>ye would</i> habrían sido, <i>they would</i> VV. habrían sido, <i>you would</i> </div> <div> <i>have been.</i> </div> </div>	<p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <div> <div> hubiera or hubiese hubieras or hubieses hubiera or hubiese V. hubiera or hubiese hubiéramos or hubiésemos hubiérais or hubiéseis hubieran or hubiesen VV. hubieran or hubiesen </div> <div> <i>(if) I had been, etc.</i> </div> </div>

CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VERB.

386. Ser llamado, to be called.

SIMPLE TENSES.	
Infinitive Mode.	Gerund.
ser { llamado, a, } { llamados, as, } <i>to be called.</i>	siendo { llamado, a, } { llamados, as, } <i>being called.</i>
Absolute Past Participle.	
llamado, a; llamados, as, <i>having been called.</i>	
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PRESENT.</p> <p><i>"I am called," etc.,</i> soy llamado, a. eres llamado, a. es llamado, a. somos llamados, as. sois llamados, as. son llamados, as.</p>	<p>PRESENT.</p> <p><i>"I may be called," etc.,</i> sea llamado, a. seas llamado, a. sea llamado, a. seámos llamados, as. seáis llamados, as. sean llamados, as.</p>

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>IMPERFECT. <i>"I was called,"</i> etc., era llamado, a. éramos llamados, as.</p> <p>PAST DEFINITE. <i>"I was called,"</i> etc., fui llamado, a. fuimos llamados, as.</p> <p>FUTURE. <i>"I shall be called,"</i> seré llamado, a. serémos llamados, as.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>). <i>"I should be called,"</i> sería llamado, a. seríamos llamados, as.</p>	<p>IMPERFECT (<i>first form</i>). <i>"I might be called,"</i> etc., fuera llamado, a. fuéramos llamados, as.</p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>second form</i>). <i>"I might be called,"</i> etc., fuese llamado, a. fuésemos llamados, as.</p> <p>FUTURE. <i>"I should be called,"</i> etc., fuere llamado, a. fuéremos llamados, as.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>). (If) <i>"I were called,"</i> fuera or fuese llamado, a. fuéramos or fuésemos llamados, as.</p>
Imperative Mode.	
<p>— — — — — sé llamado, a, <i>be called.</i> sea llamado, a, <i>let him be called.</i></p>	<p>seamos llamados, as, <i>let us be</i> sed llamados, as, <i>be</i> sean llamados, as, <i>let them be</i> } <i>called.</i></p>
COMPOUND TENSES.	
<p>Infinitive Past: — haber sido { llamado, a, } <i>to have been called.</i> { llamados, as, }</p> <p>Gerund Past: — habiendo sido { llamado, a, } <i>having been called.</i> { llamados, as, }</p>	
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PAST INDEFINITE. <i>"I have been called,"</i> he sido llamado, a. hemos sido llamados, as.</p>	<p>PAST INDEFINITE. <i>"I may have been called,"</i> haya sido llamado, a. hayámos sido llamados, as.</p>

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PLUPERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I had been called,"</i> había sido llamado, a. habíamos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>PAST ANTERIOR.</p> <p>(When) <i>"I had been called,"</i> hube sido llamado, a. hubimos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I shall have been called,"</i> habré sido llamado, a. habrémos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <p><i>"I should have been called,"</i> habría sido llamado, a. habríamos sido llamados, as.</p>	<p>PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).</p> <p><i>"I might have been called,"</i> hubiera sido llamado, a. hubiéramos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).</p> <p><i>"I might have been called,"</i> hubiese sido llamado, a. hubiésemos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I should have been called,"</i> hubiere sido llamado, a. hubiéremos sido llamados, as.</p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <p>(If) <i>"I had been called,"</i> hubiera or hubiese sido llama- do, a. [llamados, as. hubiéramos or hubiésemos sido.</p>

Remarks on the Passive.

387. The passive participle is varied like any adjective in *o*, and agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb:—

el niño es amado de todos,
la niña es mimada del ama,
estos hombres han sido siempre
muy estimados,
las señoras habrían sido más
consideradas, si no hubiesen
tenido tanto orgullo y vanidad,

the boy is loved by all.
the babe is petted by the nurse.
these men have always been very
much esteemed.
the ladies would have been more
highly respected, if they had
not had such pride and vanity.

REMARK. — The past participle with *haber* is not variable; hence *sido* and *estado*— which are never conjugated with *ser*— are incapable of any change for gender and number. The same is the case with

hab do as an auxiliary ; but when it has the meaning of an independent verb and may be inflected in the passive with *ser*, or when it is used absolutely, it assumes the regular variations of gender and number : —

no pudieron ser habidos, habidas,	they (men or women) could not be apprehended.
habido consejo,	counsel having been taken.
habida consulta,	a consultation having been held.
habidas las mujeres,	the women having been taken.

388. *By*, after passive verbs and participles, is rendered by **por** when agency is denoted, and by **de** when the verb expresses feeling or emotion : —

este árbol ha sido plantado por mi padre,	this tree was set out by my father.
fulano como escritor es estimado de muchos,	so and so, as a writer, is esteemed by many.
comencé á pasearme como un conde, honrado de mis amigos, temido de mis enemigos, y acariciado de todos,	I began to parade about like an earl, honored by my friends, dreaded by my foes, and fawned upon by all.

389. When the verb *to be*, with a past participle, expresses accidental state or situation, it must be translated by **estar** or one of its substitutes. The past participle is then considered to be employed as an adjective : —

divididos estaban caballeros y escuderos,	knight and esquires were grouped apart.
la obra está ya concluida,	the work is already finished.

a. Substitutes of *estar* are, **ir** and **andar**, *to go*; **quedar** and **quedarse**, *to remain*; **encontrarse** and **hallarse**, *to find one's self*; **verse**, *to see one's self*; etc., all of which, thus employed, have the signification of *to be*, taken in a transitory or accidental sense : —

las calles **andaban** revueltas,
quedó satisfecho de mi conducta,
me ví aislado de todos,

the streets were in an uproar.
 he was satisfied with my behavior.
 I was isolated from everybody.

390. In general, *ser* is the only verb that serves to form the true passive voice in Spanish, and *estar* the only one of the two that unites with the gerund to make up the progressive form of the active voice. Aside from these constructions, the use of *ser* and *estar* is to be carefully distinguished :—

esta obra **ha sido** traducida del
 Ingles,
 dicha obra **está** mal traducida,
 este libro **ha sido** impreso en
 el siglo pasado,
 me parece que **anda** impresa
 una traduccion de dicho libro,

this work has been translated
 from the English.
 the said work is poorly translated.
 this book was printed in the last
 century.
 it appears to me that a version of
 said book is in print.

REMARK. — *Estar* is, however, frequently found employed in the absolute sense of “to be,” reflecting the force of its Latin origin *stare, to stand* :—

está visto, *it is (stands) evident.* | **está** claro, *it is clear.*

391. With other words than participles, the radical distinction in the use of *ser* and *estar* may be summed up as follows :—

a. *Ser* expresses what is essential and inherent, hence permanent and absolute :—

él **es** Ingles, Español,
 la casa **es** de piedra,
somos amigos suyos,
 yo **soy** cojo, tú **eres** ciego,
 V. **es** rico, yo **soy** pobre,
 no **son** felices, si bien **están**
 contentos por ahora,

he is an Englishman, a Spaniard.
 the house is of stone.
 we are friends of his.
 I am lame, thou art blind.
 you are rich, I am poor.
 they are not happy, although
 pleased for the moment.

b. Estar, on the contrary, denotes an accidental, a transitory, situation or state :—

el Inglés **está** en España,
la puerta **estaba** cerrada,
el río **estaba** helado,
la copa **está** llena,
estarán aquí mañana,
estuvo de buen humor,

the Englishman is in Spain.
the door was shut.
the river was frozen.
the goblet is full.
they will be here to-morrow.
he was in good spirits.

son buenos; **están** buenos,
es malo; **está** malo,
es alto; **está** alto,
es triste; **está** triste,
es cansado; **está** cansado,
es callado; **está** callado,
el cuarto **es** cómodo — **está**
limpio,
la mujer **es** loca — **está** loca,
el mar **es** inmenso; la mar **está**
picada (94), [caliente,
el yelo **es** frío; el agua **está**

they are good; they are well.
he is bad; he is ill.
he is tall; he is high.
he is dull; he is sad.
he is wearisome; he is tired.
he is close-mouthed — silent.
the room is convenient — is
clean.
the woman is crazy — is frantic.
the sea is immense; the sea is
rough.
ice is cold; the water is hot.

REMARK. — *Estar* in its accidental sense may often be translated by its original meaning of *to stand*. “To stand” or “stand up,” referring to posture, is expressed by *ponerse de* or *en pié* (action), and *estar de* or *en pié* (state) :—

estuvo á la puerta,
al entrar la dama, se puso de
pié,
estuvo en pié largo rato pensando,

he stood at the door.
as the lady came in, he stood up
(arose).
he stood up a long time thinking.

The Reflexive Conjugation.

392. A reflexive verb is one that is conjugated with a pronoun-object relating to the same person or thing as the subject :—

yo **me** lisonjéo; él **se** engaña, | I flatter myself; he deceives him-
[self.]

393. Any transitive verb may assume the reflexive form:—

a. With the pronominal object in the *accusative*, provided the verb naturally takes an accusative of the person:—

le alabo; se alaba,	| I praise him; he praises himself.
me engaña ; me engaño,	| he deceives me; I deceive myself.

b. With the pronominal object in the *dative*, provided the verb naturally takes the dative of the person and accusative of the thing:—

te atribuyes el poder,	| [power. thou assumest (to thyself) the
--------------------------------	---

REMARK. — Under this rule belongs also a kind of *ethical* dative, which adds energy to the phrase, and may be omitted:—

me tomo la libertad de . . . ,	| I take (for myself) the liberty to . . .
se compra una prenda,	| he buys (for himself) a garment.

394. Many transitive verbs are made intransitive by assuming the reflexive form:—

abrió la puerta; la puerta se abrió,	| he opened the door; the door opened.
rompió el vaso; el vaso se rompió,	| [broke.
vende los libros; los buenos libros se venden caros,	| he broke the glass; the glass he sells the books; good books sell dear.
ahogó su dolor; me ahogo,	| he drowned his grief; I suffocate.
hace alguna cosa; no sabe lo que se hace,	| he makes something; he does not know what he does.

395. Intransitive verbs often become reflexive with modified significations, the pronominal object frequently assuming an adverbial force:—

dormir; dormirse,	| to sleep; to go to sleep.
sale; el cubo se sale,	| he goes out; the pail leaks.
muere; se muere,	| he dies; he is dying.
voy, <i>or</i> marchó,	| I go, I march.

me voy or me marcho,
ven; vénte,
cae; se cae,

I go off *or* away.
come; come along.
he falls; it falls down.

396. Many verbs have in Spanish the reflexive form only:—

alegrarse; arrepentirse.
burlarse; dignarse,
figurarse; quejarse,

to rejoice; to repent.
to laugh at; to deign.
to imagine; to complain.

397. Many verbs that are reflexive in Spanish are expressed in English by the formal passive, and some by both the reflexive and the passive:—

disgustarse; equivocarse,
llamarse,
engañarse,

to be displeased; to be mistaken.
to call one's self *or* to be called.
to deceive one's self, to be deceived.

398. Model verb — **alabarse**, *to praise one's self*.

SIMPLE TENSES.	
Infinitive.	Gerund.
alabarse, <i>to praise one's self</i> .	alabándose, <i>praising one's self</i> .
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PRESENT.</p> <p><i>"I praise myself," etc.,</i></p> <p>me alabo.</p> <p>te alabas.</p> <p>se alaba.</p> <p>V. se alaba.</p> <p>nos alabamos.</p> <p>os alabais.</p> <p>se alaban.</p> <p>VV. se alaban.</p>	<p>PRESENT.</p> <p><i>"I may praise myself," etc.,</i></p> <p>me alabe.</p> <p>te alabes.</p> <p>se alabe.</p> <p>V. se alabe.</p> <p>nos alabemos.</p> <p>os alabeis.</p> <p>se alaben.</p> <p>VV. se alaben.</p>

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>IMPERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I was praising myself," etc.,</i> me alababa. te alababas. se alababa. V. se alababa, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>PAST DEFINITE.</p> <p><i>"I praised myself," etc.,</i> me alabé. te alabaste. se alabó. V. se alabó, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>FUTURE.</p> <p><i>"I shall praise myself," etc.,</i> me alabaré. te alabarás. se alabará. V. se alabará, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <p><i>"I should praise myself," etc.,</i> me alabaría. te alabarías. se alabaría. V. se alabaría, <i>etc.</i></p>	<p>IMPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).</p> <p><i>"I might praise myself," etc.,</i> me alabara. te alabaras. se alabara. V. se alabara, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).</p> <p><i>"I might praise myself," etc.,</i> me alabase. te alabases. se alabase. V. se alabase, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>FUTURE.</p> <p><i>"I should praise myself," etc.,</i> me alabare. te alabares. se alabare. V. se alabare, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <p>(If) <i>"I praised myself," etc.,</i> me alab-ara, -ase. te alab-aras, -ases. se alab-ara, -ase. V. se alab-ara, -ase, <i>etc.</i></p>
Imperative Mode.	
<p>SINGULAR.</p> <p>— — — — —</p> <p>alábate, <i>praise thyself.</i> alábese, <i>let him praise himself.</i> alábese V., <i>praise yourself.</i></p> <p>— — — — —</p> <p>no te alabes, <i>do not praise thyself.</i> no se alabe, <i>let him not p. himself.</i> no se alabe V., <i>do not p. yourself.</i></p>	<p>PLURAL.</p> <p>alabémonos, <i>let us praise ourselves.</i> alabáos, <i>praise yourselves.</i> alábense, <i>let them praise themselves.</i> alábense VV., <i>praise yourselves.</i></p> <p>no nos alabemos, <i>let us not p. o. s.</i> no os alabeis, <i>do not praise y. s.</i> no se alaben, <i>let them not p. th. s.</i> no se alaben VV., <i>do not p. y. s.</i></p>

COMPOUND TENSES.	
Infinitive Past.	Gerund Past.
haberse alabado, <i>to have praised one's self.</i>	habiéndose alabado, <i>having praised one's self.</i>
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <p><i>"I have praised myself," etc.,</i> me he alabado. te has alabado. se ha alabado. V. se ha alabado. nos hemos alabado. os habeis alabado. se han alabado. VV. se han alabado.</p> <p>PLUPERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I had praised myself," etc.,</i> me había alabado. te habías alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>PAST ANTERIOR.</p> <p>(When) <i>"I had praised myself," etc.,</i> me hube alabado. te hubiste alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I shall have praised myself," etc.,</i> me habré alabado. te habrás alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <p><i>"I should have praised myself," etc.,</i> me habría alabado. te habrías alabado, <i>etc.</i></p>	<p>PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <p><i>"I may have praised myself," etc.,</i> me haya alabado. te hayas alabado. se haya alabado. V. se haya alabado. nos hayámos alabado. os hayáis alabado. se hayan alabado. VV. se hayan alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).</p> <p><i>"I might have praised myself," etc.,</i> me hubiera alabado. te hubieras alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).</p> <p><i>"I might have praised myself," etc.,</i> me hubiese alabado. te hubieses alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>FUTURE PERFECT.</p> <p><i>"I should have praised myself," etc.,</i> me hubiere alabado. te hubieres alabado, <i>etc.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <p>(If) <i>"I had praised myself," etc.,</i> me hubiera <i>or</i> hubieses alabado. te hubieras <i>or</i> hubieses alabado, <i>etc.</i></p>

399. Model verb — **figurarse**, to fancy (to one's self), to imagine.

SIMPLE TENSES.	
Infinitive Mode.	Gerund.
figurarse, to imagine.	figurándose, imagining.
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<p>PRESENT.</p> <p>me figuro, <i>I imagine.</i> te figuras, <i>thou imaginest.</i> se figura, <i>he imagines.</i> V. se figura, <i>you imagine.</i> nos figuramos, <i>we imagine.</i> os figurais, <i>ye imagine.</i> se figuran, <i>they imagine.</i> VV. se figuran, <i>you imagine.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT.</p> <p>me figuraba, <i>I was imagining.</i></p> <p>PAST DEFINITE.</p> <p>me figuré, <i>I imagined.</i></p> <p>FUTURE.</p> <p>me figuraré, <i>I shall imagine.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>apodasis</i>).</p> <p>me figuraría, <i>I should imagine.</i></p>	<p>PRESENT.</p> <p>me figure, <i>I may imagine.</i> te figures, <i>thou mayst imagine.</i> se figure, <i>he may imagine.</i> V. se figure, <i>you may imagine.</i> nos figuremos, <i>we may imagine.</i> os figureis, <i>ye may imagine.</i> se figuren, <i>they may imagine.</i> VV. se figuren, <i>you may imagine.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>first form</i>).</p> <p>me figurara, <i>I might imagine.</i></p> <p>IMPERFECT (<i>second form</i>).</p> <p>me figurase, <i>I might imagine.</i></p> <p>FUTURE.</p> <p>me figurare, <i>I should imagine.</i></p> <p>CONDITIONAL (<i>protasis</i>).</p> <p>me figur-ara, -ase, (if) <i>I imagined.</i></p>
Imperative Mode.	
<p>SINGULAR.</p> <p>— — —</p> <p>figúrate, imagine (<i>thou</i>). figúrese, let him imagine. figúrese V., imagine.</p>	<p>PLURAL.</p> <p>figurémonos, let us imagine. figuráos, imagine (<i>ye</i>). figúrense, let them imagine. figúrense VV., imagine.</p>

Imperative Mode.	
SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
no te figures, <i>imagine (thou) not.</i> no se figure, <i>let him not imagine.</i> no se figure V., <i>do not imagine.</i>	no nos figuremos, <i>let us not imagine.</i> no os figureis, <i>imagine (ye) not.</i> no se figuren, <i>let them not imagine.</i> no se figuren VV., <i>do not imagine.</i>
COMPOUND TENSES.	
Infinitive Past.	Gerund Past.
haberse figurado, <i>to have imagined.</i>	habiéndose figurado, <i>having imagined.</i>
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
PAST INDEFINITE. me he figurado, <i>I</i> te has figurado, <i>thou</i> se ha figurado, <i>he</i> V. se ha figurado, <i>you</i> nos hemos figurado, <i>we</i> os habeis figurado, <i>ye</i> se han figurado, <i>they</i> VV. se han figurado, <i>you</i> } <i>have imagined.</i> PLUPERFECT. me había figurado, <i>I had imagined.</i> PAST ANTERIOR. me hube figurado, (when) <i>I had imagined.</i> FUTURE PERFECT. me habré figurado, <i>I shall have imagined.</i> CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>apodasis</i>). me habría figurado, <i>I should have imagined.</i>	PAST INDEFINITE. me haya figurado, <i>I</i> te hayas figurado, <i>thou</i> se haya figurado, <i>he</i> V. se haya figurado, <i>you</i> nos hayámos figurado, <i>we</i> os hayáis figurado, <i>ye</i> se hayan figurado, <i>they</i> VV. se hayan figurado, <i>you</i> } <i>may have imagined.</i> PLUPERFECT (<i>first form</i>). me hubiera figurado, <i>I might have imagined.</i> PLUPERFECT (<i>second form</i>). me hubiese figurado, <i>I might have imagined.</i> FUTURE PERFECT. me hubiere figurado, <i>I should have imagined.</i> CONDITIONAL PAST (<i>protasis</i>). me hub-iera, -iese figurado, (if) <i>I had imagined.</i>

Remarks on the Reflexive Verb.

400. The pronoun-subject of the reflexive verb should be expressed when emphasis or contrast require it ; but in the interrogative conjugation it must never intervene between the *compound* forms of the verb. Its ordinary position may be best gathered from a few examples :—

WITHOUT A NEGATION.	
Affirmative.	Interrogative.
PRESENT.	
<p><i>"I imagine,"</i> etc.,</p> <p>yo me figuro.</p> <p>tú te figuras.</p> <p>vos os figurais (§ 181).</p> <p>él se figura.</p> <p>ella se figura.</p> <p>uno se figura, <i>or</i> se figura uno.</p> <p>V. se figura, <i>or</i> se figura V.</p> <p>nosotros } nos figuramos.</p> <p>nosotras }</p> <p>vosotros } os figurais.</p> <p>vosotras }</p> <p>ellos } se figuran.</p> <p>ellas }</p> <p>VV. se figuran, <i>or</i> se figuran VV.</p>	<p><i>"Do I imagine?"</i> etc.,</p> <p>¿me figuro yo ?</p> <p>¿te figuras tú ?</p> <p>¿os figurais vos ?</p> <p>¿se figura él ?</p> <p>¿se figura ella ?</p> <p>¿se figura uno ?</p> <p>¿se figura V.? <i>or</i> ¿V. se figura?</p> <p>¿nos figuramos { nosotros ?</p> <p> nosotras ?</p> <p>¿os figurais { vosotros ?</p> <p> vosotras ?</p> <p>¿se figuran { ellos ?</p> <p> ellas ? [figuran?</p> <p>¿se figuran VV.? <i>or</i> ¿VV. se</p>
PAST INDEFINITE.	
<p><i>"I have imagined,"</i> etc.,</p> <p>yo me he figurado.</p> <p>tú te has figurado.</p> <p>vos os habeis figurado.</p> <p>él se ha figurado.</p> <p>ella se ha figurado.</p> <p>uno se ha figurado. [rado V.</p> <p>V. se ha figurado, <i>or</i> se ha figu-</p>	<p><i>"Have I imagined?"</i> etc.,</p> <p>¿me he figurado yo ?</p> <p>¿te has figurado tú ?</p> <p>¿os habeis figurado vos ?</p> <p>¿se ha figurado él ?</p> <p>¿se ha figurado ella ?</p> <p>¿se ha figurado uno ?</p> <p>¿se ha figurado V.? <i>etc.</i></p>

Affirmative.	Interrogative.
<p style="text-align: center;">PAST INDEFINITE (continued).</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between;"> <div style="width: 48%;"> <p><i>"We have imagined," etc.,</i></p> <p>nosotros } nos hemos figurado.</p> <p>nosotras }</p> <p>vosotros } os habeis figurado.</p> <p>vosotras }</p> <p>ellos } se han figurado.</p> <p>ellas }</p> <p>VV. se han figurado, <i>or</i> se han figurado VV.</p> </div> <div style="width: 48%;"> <p><i>"Have we imagined?" etc.,</i></p> <p>¿nos hemos figurado { nosotros ?</p> <p> { nosotras ?</p> <p>¿os habeis figurado { vosotros ?</p> <p> { vosotras ?</p> <p>¿se han figurado { ellos ?</p> <p> { ellas ?</p> <p>¿se han figurado VV. ? <i>etc.</i></p> </div> </div>	
<p style="text-align: center;">Imperative Mode.</p>	
<p style="text-align: center;">SINGULAR.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">—</p> <p>figúrate tú.</p> <p>figuráos vos.</p> <p>figúrese él, ella, uno.</p> <p>figúrese V.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">PLURAL.</p> <p>figurémonos nosotros, -as.</p> <p>figuráos vosotros.</p> <p>figuráos vosotras.</p> <p>figúrense ellos, -as.</p> <p>figúrense VV.</p>
<p style="text-align: center;">WITH A NEGATIVE.</p>	
Affirmative.	Interrogative.
<p style="text-align: center;">PRESENT.</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between;"> <div style="width: 48%;"> <p><i>"I do not imagine," etc.,</i></p> <p>yo no me figuro.</p> <p>tú no te figuras.</p> <p>él no se figura. .</p> <p>V. no se figura, <i>or</i> no se figura V.</p> <p>nosotros no nos figuramos.</p> <p>vosotros no os figurais.</p> <p>ellos no se figuran. [ran VV.</p> <p>VV. no se figuran, <i>or</i> no se figu-</p> </div> <div style="width: 48%;"> <p><i>"Do I not imagine?" etc.,</i></p> <p>¿no me figuro yo ?</p> <p>¿no te figuras tú ?</p> <p>¿no se figura él ?</p> <p>¿no se figura V. ?</p> <p>¿no nos figuramos nosotros ?</p> <p>¿no os figurais vosotros ?</p> <p>¿no se figuran ellos ?</p> <p>¿no se figuran VV. ?</p> </div> </div>	

Affirmative.	Interrogative.
<p style="text-align: center;">PAST INDEFINITE.</p> <div style="display: flex; justify-content: space-between;"> <div style="width: 45%;"> <p><i>"I have not imagined," etc.,</i> yo no me he figurado. tú no te has figurado. él no se ha figurado. V. no se ha figurado. [rado. nosotros no nos hemos figu- vosotros no os habeis figurado. ellos no se han figurado. VV. no se han figurado.</p> </div> <div style="width: 45%;"> <p><i>"Have I not imagined?" etc.,</i> ¿no me he figurado yo? ¿no te has figurado tú? ¿no se ha figurado él? ¿no se ha figurado V.? ¿no nos hemos figurado nosotros? ¿no os habeis figurado vosotros? ¿no se han figurado ellos? ¿no se han figurado VV.?</p> </div> </div>	
<p style="text-align: center;">Imperative Mode.</p>	
<p style="text-align: center;">SINGULAR.</p> <p style="text-align: center;">—</p> <p>no te figures tú. no se figure él. no se figure V.</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">PLURAL.</p> <p>no no figuremos nosotros. no os figureis vosotros. no se figuren ellos. no se figuren VV.</p>

401. The pronoun-object regularly stands before the finite verb in all conditions of a sentence. In the literary style, however, it may be attached to the verb in the simple tenses, and to the auxiliary in the compound tenses, when the verb begins a phrase ; but in such position of the object, the subject must take its place after the verb or participle : —

equivoquéme (yo), equivocóse (él), héme equivocado (yo), háse equivocado (él),	I made a mistake. he made a mistake. I have made a mistake. he has made a mistake.
---	---

REMARK. — In quaint, archaic language, the auxiliary and participle often change places, and the reflexive pronoun is attached to the participle : —

"alegrádome he con la buena
nueva que me ha venido ; á la
casa del Señor irémos,"

I rejoice at the glad tidings that
have reached me ; we will go
to the house of the Lord.

The last words of Fray Luis de Granada, 1588.

402. The reflexive object is regularly attached to the infinitive and gerund, whether the phrase is affirmative or negative ; the pronoun-subject, however, is more often placed after these forms :—

verme yo, for me to see myself.
verse él, for him to see himself.
haberme visto yo, for me to have
seen myself.
haberse visto él, for him to have
seen himself.

viéndome yo, I seeing myself.
viéndose él, he seeing himself.
habiéndome visto yo, I having
seen myself.
habiéndose visto él, he having
seen himself.

no verse él, for him not to see
himself.
no haberse visto él, for him not
to have seen himself.

no viéndose él, he not seeing him-
self.
no habiéndose visto él, he not
having seen himself.

403. The first person plural of the imperative suppresses the *s* of the verb-ending when the pronominal object is attached to it :—

- | | | |
|-------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. figurémonos | for figurémosnos, | let us imagine. [selves. |
| 2. entendámonos | for entendámosnos, | let us understand our- |
| 3. arrepintámonos | for arrepintámosnos, | let us repent. |
- but no nos figuremos, entendamos, arrepintamos.

404. The second person plural of the imperative loses its *d* before the attached pronoun-object :—

- | | | |
|----------------|-------------------|------------------------|
| 1. figuráos | for figurados, | imagine ye. |
| 2. entendéos | for entendedos, | understand yourselves. |
| 3. arrepentíos | for arrepentidos, | repent ye. |

Except the imperative of *irse*, — *ídos*, go away.

405. The reflexive verb may be strengthened by the repetition of the pronoun-object in the prepositional case joined to the adjective **mismo**, **a**, or **propio**, **a**, *self*:—

yo me alabo á mí mismo,	I praise myself.
ella se jacta de sí misma,	she boasts of herself.
VV. se burlan de sí mismos,	you laugh at yourselves.
vosotros os burlais de vosotros mismos, [nosotros mismos,	ye laugh at yourselves.
nosotros nos hemos perdido á	we have ruined ourselves.
tú te engañas á tí propio,	thou deceivest thyself.

Special Uses of the Reflexive.

406. Verbs that in Spanish are permanently reflexive, with an active or neuter signification in English, may, besides the personal inflection, be conjugated impersonally with **se**, *itself*, the dative pronoun serving to distinguish the person:—

me figúro,	(I figure to myself, etc.)	or se me figúra,	(it figures itself to me, etc.)	<i>I imagine.</i>
te figuras,		or se te figura,		<i>thou imaginest.</i>
se figura,		or se le figura,		<i>he imagines.</i>
V. se figura,		or se le figura á V.,		<i>you imagine.</i>
nos figuramos,		or se nos figura,		<i>we imagine.</i>
os figurais,		or se os figura,		<i>ye imagine.</i>
se figuran,		or se les figura,		<i>they imagine.</i>
VV. se figuran,		or se les figura á VV.,		<i>you imagine.</i>
me he figurado,		or se me ha figurado,		<i>I have imagined.</i>
te has figurado,		or se te ha figurado,		<i>thou hast imagined.</i>
se ha figurado,		or se le ha figurado,		<i>he has imagined.</i>
V. se ha figurado,		or se le ha figurado á V.,		<i>you have imagined.</i>
nos hemos figurado,		or se nos ha figurado,		<i>we have imagined.</i>
os habeis figurado,		or se os ha figurado,		<i>ye have imagined.</i>
se han figurado,		or se les ha figurado,		<i>they have imagined.</i>
VV. se han figurado,		or se les ha figurado á VV.,		<i>you have imagined.</i>

me olvidé,	or se me olvidó,	<i>I forgot.</i>
te olvidaste,	or se te olvidó,	<i>thou didst forget.</i>
se olvidó, etc.,	or se le olvidó, etc.,	<i>he forgot, etc.</i>
me había olvidado,	or se me había olvidado,	<i>I had forgotten.</i>
te habías olvidado,	or se te había olvidado,	<i>thou hadst forgotten.</i>
se había olvidado, etc.,	or se le había olvidado, etc.,	<i>he had forgotten, etc.</i>

407. In Spanish, the formal passive is comparatively little used at the present day, other less cumbersome constructions being better adapted to the genius of that language. Hence :—

408. The passive voice may be replaced by the reflexive verb used personally :—

el libro se publicó ,	the book was issued.
la voz se repitió ,	the voice was repeated.
su gloria se verá ,	his glory will be seen.
el dinero se ganó, se perdió ,	the money was won, was lost:
ellos se engañan mucho,	they are greatly deceived.
las casas se han vendido ,	* the houses have been sold.
eso no se puede decir , or }	that cannot be said, or
eso no puede decirse , }	you cannot say that.

a. In public announcements, the verb *to be* of the passive is usually omitted in English, while, in Spanish, the reflexive, which always replaces it in such cases, is given in full :—

aquí se habla Español,	Spanish (is) spoken here.
se cambia toda clase de moneda,	all kinds of coin (are) exchanged.
se compran valores de la deuda pública,	government securities (are) bought.
se hacen cobros y pagos,	collections and payments made.
se confeccionan tarjetas y facturas en el acto,	cards and billheads made up without delay.

se garantiza el trabajo,	work warranted.
se cierra los Domingos,	closed on Sundays.
se prohíbe fijar carteles,	"post no bills."
no se admiten imposiciones	no deposits received after five
después de las cuatro,	o'clock.

409. The passive voice may also be replaced by the reflexive verb used impersonally:—

se dice ; se ha dicho ,	it is said; it has been said.
se me engaña ,	I am deceived.
se me ha engañado ,	I have been deceived.
se le permite ; se le permitió ,	he is allowed; he was allowed.
se nos había engañado ,	we had been deceived.
se les habrá permitido ,	they will have been allowed.

Literally: it says itself, it has said itself, it deceives itself to me, it has deceived itself to me, *etc.*

410. The reflexive used impersonally is a substitute of the third person plural active, and is preferred when a vague or indirect reference to persons is desirable. This favorite construction has grown out of the national propensity to equivocation:—

no se me entiende	I am not understood
(<i>or no me entienden</i>),	(Fr. <i>on ne me comprend pas</i>).
se le mandó salir	he was ordered to go out
(<i>or le mandaron salir</i>),	(Fr. <i>on lui ordonna de sortir</i>).
se me dice	I am told
(<i>or me dicen</i>),	(Fr. <i>on me dit</i>).
se me ha dicho	I have been told
(<i>or me han dicho</i>),	(Fr. <i>on m'a dit</i>).

REMARK.—It is customary to regard this *se* as an indefinite subject—*they, you, one*—like the French *on* (*homme*) and Germanic *man*; but an accusative cannot be a nominative, and the only true explanation is to regard the verb, as it is, impersonal, representing such Latin constructions as *itur, ventum est, invidetur mihi*, *etc.*

411. So also in the redundant construction :—

á **él** se le mató á pedradas,
 (le *mataron* á pedradas),
 á **tales hombres** se les engaña
 fácilmente, [fácilmente),
 (á tales hombres *engañan*
 á los buenos príncipes no se
 les ha de perder la vergüenza,
 á **nadie** se le puede imputar esta
 fealdad,

he was stoned to death,
 (they stoned him to death).
 such men are easily deceived,
 [easily).
 (they deceive such men
 we are not to lose our respect for
 good princes.
 such a vile action can be imputed
 to no man.

412. The following examples of passive constructions will serve to illustrate and fix the foregoing rules :—

<div> <div>1. { soy engañado, me engaño, se me engaña,</div> <div>2. { eres engañado, te engañas, se te engaña, es engañado,</div> <div>3. { se engaña, se le engaña, V. es engañado,</div> <div>3. { V. se engaña, se le engaña á V., somos engañados,</div> <div>1. { nos engañamos, se nos engaña,</div> <div>2. { sois engañados, os engañais, se os engaña,</div> <div>3. { son engañados, se engañan, se les engaña,</div> <div>3. { VV. son engañados, VV. se engañan, se les engaña á VV.,</div> </div> <div>I am deceived, etc.</div>	<div> <div>1. { he sido engañado, me he engañado, se me ha engañado,</div> <div>2. { has sido engañado, te has engañado, se te ha engañado, ha sido engañado,</div> <div>3. { se ha engañado, se le ha engañado, V. ha sido engañado,</div> <div>3. { V. se ha engañado, se le ha engañado á V., hemos sido engañados,</div> <div>1. { nos hemos engañado, se nos ha engañado, habeis sido engañados,</div> <div>2. { os habeis engañado, se os ha engañado, han sido engañados,</div> <div>3. { se han engañado, se les ha engañado, VV. han sido engañados,</div> <div>3. { VV. se han engañado, se les ha engañado á VV.,</div> </div> <div>I have been deceived, etc.</div>
--	---

Reciprocal Verbs.

413. When reflexive verbs in the plural refer to two or more persons distributively, they are called reciprocal verbs, and the object-pronoun is rendered *each other* when two are indicated, and *one another* if reference is made to several :—

nos alabamos,	we praise each other, <i>or</i> one another.
os alabais,	ye praise each other, <i>or</i> one another.
se aman,	they love each other, <i>or</i> one another.
alabémonos,	let us praise one another.
amáos el uno al otro,	love each other.
amáos los unos á los otros,	love one another.
ámense, <i>or</i> que se amen,	let them love each other, <i>etc.</i>
estos dos hermanos se abrazan cariñosamente,	these two brothers (<i>or</i> this brother and sister [§ 106]) embrace each other affectionately.
todos los individuos de esta familia se quieren entrañablemente.	all the members of this family are passionately fond of one another.

414. The reciprocal use of the reflexive verb may be strengthened by the term **el uno — el otro**, *fem.* **la una — la otra**; **los unos — los otros**, *fem.* **las unas — las otras**; or **uno — otro**, *etc.* :—

consoláos los unos á los otros en estas palabras,	comfort ye one another with these words.
no os burleis los unos de los otros , [con la otra,	do not laugh at (make fun of) one another.
hijas, no os impacientéis la una veo que las dos hemos nacido la una para la otra ,	children, don't tease each other.
sentémonos uno junto á otro ,	I perceive that we two were born for each other.
nos felicitaremos unos á otros con ese motivo,	let us sit near each other.
	we shall congratulate one another on account of it.

The Impersonal Verb.

415. Impersonal verbs are properly such as are employed in the third person singular only. Their subject, which in English is *it*, cannot be expressed in Spanish when an operation of nature is described; but otherwise, the neuter **ello**, *it*, *that*, is occasionally admissible if intensity or emphasis require:—

nieva; truena; graniza,	it snows; it thunders; it hails.
llueve; amanece; anochece,	it rains; it dawns; it grows dark.
consta; ello consta,	it is proven, <i>or</i> it is known.
importa; ello importa,	it is important, <i>or</i> it matters.
ello es que . . . ,	the fact is that . . . (it is that . . .).

416. Impersonal verbs are inflected according to the conjugation indicated by their infinitive, to wit:—

417. Nevar, nevando, nevado, to snow.

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
nieva, <i>it snows.</i>	nieve, <i>it may snow.</i>
nevaba, <i>it was snowing.</i>	nevara, <i>it might snow.</i>
nevó, <i>it snowed.</i>	nevase, <i>it might snow.</i>
nevará, <i>it will snow.</i>	nevare, <i>it should snow.</i>
nevaría, <i>it would snow.</i>	nevara, etc., (if) <i>it snowed.</i>
Imperative Mode:— <i>nieve, or que nieve, let it snow.</i>	
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
ha nevado, <i>it has</i>	haya nevado, <i>it may</i>
había nevado, <i>it had</i>	hubiera nevado, <i>it might</i>
hubo nevado, (when) <i>it had</i>	hubiese nevado, <i>it might</i>
habrá nevado, <i>it will have</i>	hubiere nevado, <i>it should</i>
habría nevado, <i>it would have</i>	hubiera nevado, (if) <i>it had s.</i>

418. **Llover**, lloviendo, llovido, *to rain*.

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<i>llueve, it rains.</i> <i>llovía, it was raining.</i> <i>llovió, it rained.</i> <i>lloverá, it will rain.</i> <i>llovería, it would rain.</i>	<i>llueva, it may rain.</i> <i>lloviera, it might rain.</i> <i>lloviese, it might rain.</i> <i>lloviere, it should rain.</i> <i>lloviera, (if) it rained.</i>
Imperative Mode:— <i>llueva, or que llueva, let it rain.</i>	
Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<i>ha llovido, it has</i> <i>había llovido, it had</i> <i>hubo llovido, (when) it had</i> <i>habrá llovido, it will have</i> <i>habría llovido, it would have</i>	<i>haya llovido, it may</i> <i>hubiera llovido, it might</i> <i>hubiese llovido, it might</i> <i>hubiere llovido, it should</i> <i>hubiera llovido, (if) it had r.</i>

419. **Amanecer**, amaneciendo, amanecido, *to dawn*.

Indicative Mode.	Subjunctive Mode.
<i>amanece, it dawns.</i> <i>amanecía, it was dawning.</i> <i>amaneció, it dawned.</i> <i>amanecerá, it will dawn.</i> <i>amanecería, it would dawn.</i>	<i>amanezca (374), it may</i> <i>amaneciera, it might</i> <i>amaneciese, it might</i> <i>amaneciere, it should</i> <i>amaneciera, (if) it dawned.</i>
Imperative Mode:— <i>que amanezca, let it dawn.</i>	

420. Verbs that are naturally impersonal may assume a personal signification and inflection:—

amanecí en Cádiz,

it was morning when I reached
Cádiz.

anochecimos en Madrid,

night had set in when we reached
Madrid, or we reached Madrid
at night.

llovían palos sobre nosotros,	blows came down upon us <i>in quick succession</i> .
antes eran amigos ; pero hace un año que tronaron ,	they were formerly good friends ; but they fell out <i>boisterously</i> a year ago.

421. Many personal verbs are temporarily employed in impersonal senses : —

bastar , <i>to be sufficient</i> .	basta , <i>it suffices</i> .
parecer , <i>to appear</i> .	parece , <i>it seems</i> .
convenir , <i>to agree, to suit</i> .	conviene , <i>it suits, behooves</i> .
baste decir,	let it suffice to say.
no convenía ,	it was not expedient.

a. Such verbs may also be used in the third person plural as personal verbs : —

no bastan explicaciones,	explanations are not sufficient.
las condiciones me parecen duras,	the conditions appear to me (to be) severe.
[das,	
no me convendrán tales medi-	such measures will not suit me.

422. A number of verbs are used only in the third persons singular and plural. Such properly belong to defective verbs : —

acaece — acaecen ,	} happens — happen.
acontece — acontecen ,	

423. The English impersonal expression "*it is*" is variously rendered in Spanish : —

424. By *es* : —

a. With adjectives, nouns, and adverbs.

es cierto ; es tarde,	it is sure ; it is late.
es preciso ; es menester,	it is necessary.
es verdad ; es mentira,	it is true ; it is false.
es de día ; así es ,	it is daylight ; so it is.

b. To denote the hour, only when that is *one* or any of its divisions. With all other hours, "it is" must be expressed by *son* :—

es la una — la una y media,	| it is one — half past one.
son las dos — las diez,	| it is two — ten (o'clock).

425. By *está*, to denote accidental state :—

está oscuro ; está lloviendo,	| it is dark ; it is raining.
---	-----------------------------

426. By *hace* :—

a. When reference is made to the weather or temperature :—

¿qué tal tiempo hace ?	| what sort of weather is it ?
hace buen tiempo,	| it is fine weather.
hace sol ; hace aire,	| it is sunny ; it is windy.
hace frío ; hace calor,	| it is cold ; it is warm.

b. Idiomatically, with reference to time :—

hace ocho días que no le veo,	| it is a week since I have seen him ; <i>i.e.</i> , I have not seen him in a week.
¿cuánto tiempo hace que trabaja V. aquí ?	| how long is it that you have been working here ? <i>i.e.</i> , how long have you been working here ?

427. By *hay*, with reference to distance :—

¿cuánto hay de aquí al palacio ?	| how far is it from here to the palace ?
---	---

428. The English expressions "*it is I*," "*it is thou*," "*it is he*," etc., are given in Spanish by the regular inflection of the verb "to be" with the subject-pronoun :—

yo soy ; tú eres ; él es,	| it is I ; it is thou ; it is he.
¿es ella ? somos nosotros,	| is it she ? it is we.
¿son ellos ? ellos son,	| is it they ? it is they.

a. The same construction obtains when a relative follows :—

yo soy **quien**, *or* **el que**,
no somos nosotros **los que**,

it is I who, *or* I am the one who.
it is not we who, *or* we are not
the ones who.

429. "It is better" is translated by **más vale**, *it is worth more* :—

más vale esquivarlo,
más vale tarde que nunca,
más vale pájaro en mano que
buitre volando,

it is better to evade it.
(it is) better late than never.
a bird in the hand is worth two
in the bush.

(*literally*, a bird in hand is better than a vulture on the wing.)

IRREGULAR VERBS.

430. An irregular verb is properly one that deviates in any respect from the inflection of the regular models, *hablar*, *comer*, and *vivir*.

REMARK.—There are a large number of irregular verbs in Spanish,—about 850, including compounds,—the most of which, however, are mere variations involving uniform laws of orthography and accent, to subserve the purposes of harmony, and to satisfy the national instinct for vowel-expansion. They may be easily reduced to a few classes with appropriate representatives, to which the general alphabetic Index of irregular verbs refers. Hence the following definitions of technical terms, embracing principles of wide application, will greatly assist the learner to master quickly the whole subject.

431. Irregular verbs are to be inflected, according to class and conjugation, on the three stems—present, preterit, and future—as bases. See § 360.

432. The original stem of a verb is found by suppressing the characteristic infinitive-ending. That of the future and conditional of the indicative (**future stem**), is the full infinitive itself (§§ 359; 359, a) :—

busc-ar, *to look for.*

buso-ó, *he looked for.*

buscar-é, *I shall look for.*

buscar-ía, *I should look for.*

433. In the regular verb the original stem is the same throughout; but in the irregular verb each group of tenses may have a distinct form of the original stem, or three distinct stems:—

poder, *to be able.*

original stem, *pod*;

present stem, *pod*, *pued*;

preterit stem, *pu*;

future stem, *podr*.

ir, *to go.*

original stem, *i* and *va*;

present stem, *i* and *v*;

preterit stem, *fu* (verb *to be*);

future stem, *ir*.

434. Tonic stems are such as have the primary stress or tonic accent upon them in any given form:—

tēng-ō, *I have.*

tiēn-ēs, *thou hast.*

tiēn-ě, *he has.*

tiēn-ēn, *they have.*

tūv-ě, *I had.*

vēng-ō, *I come.*

viēn-ēs, *thou comest.*

viēn-ě, *he comes.*

viēn-ēn, *they come.*

viIn-ě, *I came.*

435. Atonic stems are such as have but a secondary accent, the primary stress being laid on the personal ending:—

tēn-ēmos, *we have.*

tēn-ēis, *ye have.*

tūv-iste, *thou hadst.*

vēn-īmos, *we come.*

vēn-īs, *ye come.*

viIn-īmos, *we came.*

436. A stem-vowel is the characteristic vowel in any radical, and always stands nearest to the infinitive ending:—

acert-ar, *acquir-ir.*

sonre-ir.

recost-ar, **redargü-ir.**

437. Strong stems are those which are followed by endings beginning with, or consisting of, one of the strong vowels *a* or *o*:—

teng-o,	<i>I have.</i>	veng-o,	<i>I come.</i>
teng-a,	<i>I (may) have.</i>	veng-as,	<i>thou mayst come.</i>
teng-amos,	<i>let us have.</i>	veng-an,	<i>they may come.</i>
tuv-o,	<i>he had.</i>	vin-o,	<i>he came.</i>

438. Weak stems are those which are followed by endings beginning with, or consisting of, one of the weak vowels *e* or *i*:—

dec-ir,	<i>to say, to tell.</i>	¿rí-este?	<i>dost thou laugh?</i>
dec-imos,	<i>we say — tell.</i>	se ri-en,	<i>they laugh.</i>
dic-es,	<i>thou sayest — tellest.</i>	nos re-imos,	<i>we laugh.</i>
dic-iendo,	<i>saying, telling.</i>	sab-iendo,	<i>knowing.</i>

439. The following orthographic changes are to be noted:—

Strong stems ending in z become weak stems ending in c .							
"	"	"	c	"	"	"	qu.
"	"	"	g	"	"	"	gu.
"	"	"	gu	"	"	"	gü.
Weak stems ending in c become strong stems ending in z .							
"	"	"	qu	"	"	"	c.
"	"	"	g	"	"	"	j.
"	"	"	gu	"	"	"	g.

440. The expansion of a vowel into a diphthong may be called *diphthongization*. In verbs, the diphthong of the vowel *a* is *ai*; that of *e*, *ie*; and of *o*, *ue*.

441. The diphthongs *ie* and *io* are said to be *consonantized* when the first vowel composing them is changed into *y* consonant, pronounced as in *year*.

442. The diphthong *ie* is consonantized:—

a. When it is initial in a tonic stem:—

err-ar — *ierro*, written **yerro**, but **err-amos** because atonic.

ergu-ir — *iergo*, written **yergo**, but **ergu-imos** because atonic.

ir — (*iendo*), **yendo**, *going*.

b. When it is initial in a verbal ending after a stem-vowel; likewise *ió* when final in the same case:—

cre-er — (*cre-iendo*), **creyendo**.

— (*cre-íó*), **creyó**.

tra-er — (*tra-iendo*), **trayendo**.

inclu-ir — (*inclu-iendo*), **inclu-
yendo**.

ca-er — (*ca-iendo*), **cayendo**.

— (*ca-íó*), **cayó**.

le-er — (*le-iendo*), **leyendo**.

argü-ir — (*argü-iendo*), **argu-
yendo**.

443. The *i* of the diphthongs *ie* and *ió* is absorbed by foregoing double consonants—*ll*, *ñ*, (*ch* usually), and *j* when it represents the archaic *x*, formerly pronounced *sh*:—

ceñ-ir — **ciflando**, **cifló**.

dijera, anciently *dixera*.

tañer — **tafiendo**, **tafió**.

trajese, anciently *traxese*.

444. The diphthong *ue* is said to be *aspirated* when it assumes an *h*, which regularly occurs if the diphthong is initial and has the tonic accent:—

ol-er — *uelo*, written **huelo**; but *ol-ēmos*, because atonic.

Remarks on the Present Stem.

445. Tonic stems, whether weak or strong, are often strengthened in the present indicative and subjunctive, and in the imperative:—

a. By the expansion of the radical vowel *e* into *ie*, and of *o* into *ue*:—

pens-ar — **pienso**, *I think*.

ten-er — **tiene**, *he has*.

volv-er — **vuelvo**, *I return*.

mov-er — **mueve**, *he moves*.

b. By the mutation of the original stem-vowel *e* to *i*:—

serv-ir — **sirvo**, *I serve*.

— **sirve**, *he serves*.

but **servimos**, *we serve*.

seg-uir — **sigo**, *I follow*.

— **sigue**, *he follows*.

but **seguimos**, *we follow*.

446. Strong stems, whether tonic or atonic, are likewise frequently strengthened in the present indicative and subjunctive, and in the imperative:—

a. By changing the original stem-vowel *e* to *i*:—

serv — sirva , <i>I or he may serve.</i>	seg — siga , <i>I or he may follow.</i>
— sirvāmos , <i>we may serve.</i>	— sigāmos , <i>let us follow.</i>

b. By adding a *g* to the original stem ending in a consonant, in the following verbs:—

as-ir — asg-o , asg-a , <i>I seize.</i>	ten-er — teng-o , teng-a , <i>I have.</i>
pon-er — pong-o , pong-a , <i>I place.</i>	val-er — valg-o , valg-a , <i>I am worth.</i>
sal-ir — salg-o , salg-a , <i>I go out.</i>	ven-ir — veng-o , veng-a , <i>I come.</i>

REMARK. — This *g* is the expression of the Latin *e* and *i* enounced with a consonant power. Thus:—

valeo — <i>valyo</i> , Span. <i>valgo</i> .	venio — <i>venyo</i> , Span. <i>vengo</i> .
valeam — <i>valya</i> [<i>m</i>], Span. <i>valga</i> .	veniam — <i>venya</i> [<i>m</i>], Span. <i>venga</i> .

So *asgo*, Lat. *adscio*; *pongo*, Lat. *pono* for *pono*; *salgo*, Lat. *salio*; *tengo*, Lat. *teneo*. The Portuguese still preserves the Latin *y* sound, graphically represented by *lh* and *nh*: *valho*, *valha*; *venho*, *venha*; etc.

c. By adding a *g* to the diphthongized stem ending in a vowel, in the following verbs:—

ca-er — cāig-o , cāig-a , <i>I fall.</i>	tra-er — träig-o , träig-a , <i>I bring.</i>
o-ir — ōig-o , ōig-a , <i>I hear.</i>	

d. By diphthongizing the medial stem-vowel *a* into *ai*, and reducing it graphically to its corresponding simple vowel (*ai* = *e*), in the following verbs:—

cab-er — (<i>caip</i>) quep-o (§ 13), quep-a (Lat. <i>capio</i> , <i>capiam</i>), <i>I hold.</i>
sab-er — (<i>saip</i>) sep [<i>p-o</i>], sep-a (Lat. <i>sapio</i> , <i>sapiam</i>), <i>I know.</i>
hab-er — (<i>haib</i>) he [<i>b-o</i>], but hay-a (Lat. <i>habeo</i> , <i>habeam</i>), <i>I have.</i>

The Portuguese preserves the diphthong in *caib-o*, *caib-a*; *saib-a*.

e. By changing the final stem-consonant *c* into *g*, in
 hac-er — **hag-o**, **hag-a** (Latin, | dec-ir — **dig-o**, **dig-a** (Latin,
facio, faciam). | *dico, dicam*).

For the letter *z*, as a mode of *euphonizing* certain strong stems,
 see § 374.

447. The verbs **ver**, *to see*, and **ser**, *to be*, find their
 strong stem in the archaic infinitives *veer* and *seer*:—

ve-er — **ve-o**, **ve-a**, *I see.* | se-er — **se-a**, *I may be.*

448. Atonic stems usually contain the original radical
 before *weak* vowels, and the strengthened radical or
 modified vowel before *strong* vowels:—

sab-ēis , <i>ye know.</i>	|	sep-āis , <i>ye may know.</i>
ten-ēmos , <i>we have.</i>	|	teng-āmos , <i>let us have.</i>
mor-īmos , <i>we live.</i>	|	mur-āmos , <i>we may die.</i>

449. Four verbs are expanded in the first person sing-
 ular of the present indicative by assuming a final *y*:—

ser , <i>to be</i> , ancient	<i>so</i> ;	modern	soy , <i>I am.</i>
estar , <i>to be</i> ,	<i>estó</i> ;		estoy , <i>I am.</i>
dar , <i>to give</i> ,	<i>do</i> ;		doy , <i>I give.</i>
ir , <i>to go</i> .	<i>vo</i> ;		voy , <i>I go.</i>

450. Eight verbs make their imperative second per-
 son singular in abbreviated forms:—

valer , <i>to be worth</i> ;	val and vale , <i>be worth</i> ;	no valgas.
salir , <i>to go out</i> ;	sal (<i>for sale</i>), <i>go out</i> ;	no salgas.
venir , <i>to come</i> ;	ven (<i>for viene</i>), <i>come</i> ;	no vengas.
tener , <i>to have</i> ;	ten (<i>for tiene</i>), <i>have</i> ;	no tengas.
poner , <i>to put, place</i> ;	pon (<i>for pone</i>), <i>place</i> ;	no pongas.
hacer , <i>to make, to do</i> ;	haz (<i>for hace</i>), <i>make, do</i> ;	no hagas.
decir , <i>to say, to tell</i> ;	dí (<i>for dice</i>), <i>say, tell</i> ;	no digas.
ir , <i>to go</i> ;	ve (<i>for va</i>), <i>go</i> ;	no vayas.

451. The imperfect indicative is always regularly formed from the original stem, except in the following verbs:—

ir—*iba*, *I was going* (first conj.). | ver—*veía* (*anc. via*), *I was seeing*—*era*, *I was (being)*. [ing.]

Tonic Preterit Stems.

452. Fifteen verbs have preterit stems, which are tonic in the past definite first and third persons singular, with the respective endings *e* and *o* instead of *é*—*ó*, or *í*—*ió*. In the other persons and tenses of this stem, the tonic accent is, as usual, on the endings, which are regular. Thus:—

vine , <i>I came.</i>	puse , <i>I placed.</i>
viniste , <i>thou camest.</i>	pusiste , <i>thou placedst.</i>
vino , <i>he came.</i>	puso , <i>he placed.</i>
vinimos , <i>we came.</i>	pusimos , <i>we placed.</i>
vinisteis , <i>ye came.</i>	pusisteis , <i>ye placed.</i>
vinieron , <i>they came.</i>	pusieron , <i>they placed.</i>
viniera , <i>I might come.</i>	pusiera , <i>I might place.</i>
viniese , <i>I might come.</i>	pusiese , <i>I might place.</i>
viniere , <i>I should come.</i>	pusiere , <i>I should place.</i>

REMARK.—These tonic preterit stems have retained more or less distinctly the form of the Latin irregular perfects as they must have been popularly employed in the Iberian peninsula. Therefore the vowels of the stem and termination were attracted or exchanged, and the diphthongs arising therefrom were reduced to simple vowels, according to the custom of the language. For example: *sapui* was attracted to *sáupí* and the diphthong changed to *o*,—**sope**,—precisely as *aurum* makes **oro**, *gold*. The modern speech, since the close of the fourteenth century, has preferred the stem-vowel *u* to *o*—**supe**, **tuve**, **puse**, etc. The Portuguese retains the ancient *o*, lengthened according to its phonological system into *ou* (*ó-ũ*), in *houve*, *soube*, *coube*, and *trouxe* (*trów-shě*), which correspond to the Castilian *hube*, *supe*, *cupe*, *truje*.

453. List of tonic preterit stems, as found in the first and third persons singular of the past definite indicative, together with their origin and formation :—

	Infinitive.	Preterit. <i>First and third sing.</i>	Old Spanish.	Modern Spanish.
LAT. SP.	habēre habēr	habui, habuit <i>hāubi, hāubu</i>	hobe, hobo	hūbe, hūbo.
AND FOUR BY ANALOGY WITH <i>haber</i> :—				
LAT. SP.	tenēre tenēr	(tabui, tabuit) <i>tāubi, tāubu</i>	tove, tovo	tūve, tūvo.
LAT. SP.	stare estar	(stabui, stabuit) <i>stāubi, stāubu</i>	estove, -ovo	estūve, estūvo.
LAT. SP.	ambūlare andar	(andabui, -buit) <i>andāubi, -bu</i>	andove, -ovo	andūve, andūvo.
LAT. SP.	capēre cabēr	(capui, capuit) <i>cāupi, cāupu</i>	cope, copo	cūpe, cūpo.
LAT. SP.	sapēre sabēr	sapui, sapuit <i>sāupi, sāupu</i>	sope, sopo	sūpe, sūpo.
LAT. SP.	ponēre ponēr	posui, posuit <i>pōusi, pōusu</i>	pose, poso	pūse, pūso.
LAT. SP.	(potēre) podēr	potui, potuit <i>pōuti, pōutu</i>	pode, podo	pūde, pūdo.
LAT. SP.	facēre hacēr	feci, fecit <i>fice, fisu</i>	fice, fiço	hice, hizo.
LAT. SP.	venire venir	veni, venit <i>vine, vinu</i>	vine, vino	vīne, vīno.
LAT. SP.	quaerēre querēr	(quaesi), quaesivit <i>quise, quisu</i>	quise, quiso	quīse, quīso.
LAT. SP.	vidēre ver (<i>veer</i>)	vidi, vidit <i>vidi, vidu</i>	vide, vido	ví, vío (<i>regular</i>).
LAT. SP.	dicēre decir	dixi, dixit <i>dixi, dixu</i>	dixe, dixo	dīje, dījo.
LAT. SP.	ducēre con-ducir	duxi, duxit <i>duxi, duxu</i>	-duxe, -duxo	-dūje, -dūjo.
LAT. SP.	trahēre traer (anal. with <i>ducere</i>)	traxi, traxit <i>traxi, traxu</i> } <i>truxi, truxu</i> }	traxe, traxo } truxe, truxo }	trāje, trājo. } trūje, trūjo. }

Future Stems.

454. Ten verbs form their future stem by rejecting the vowel of the infinitive-ending, five of which replace it by a phonetic *d* (§ 39):—

caber — cabr-é, cabr-ía.	salir — saldr-é, saldr-ía.
haber — habr-é, habr-ía.	valer — valdr-é, valdr-ía.
poder — podr-é, podr-ía.	poner — pondr-é, pondr-ía.
querer — querr-é, querr-ía.	tener — tendr-é, tendr-ía.
saber — sabr-é, sabr-ía.	venir — vendr-é, vendr-ía.

REMARK.—The three last stems were anciently euphonized by metathesis of the *nr*, instead of by intercalating the orthographic *d*:—

poner — ponr — porn-é, porn-ía.	tener — tenr — tern-é, tern-ía.
venir — venr — vern-é, vern-ía.	

455. Two verbs form their future stem from primitive infinitives that no longer exist:—

decir — dir — dir-é, dir-ía.	hacer — far — har-é, har-ía.
------------------------------	------------------------------

The latter verb is from Lat. *facēre*, Ital. *fare*, and Fr. *faire*.

In the following inflections, only deviations from the three model conjugations, *hablar*, *comer*, *vivir*, are printed in **heavy type**.

To show where the stress falls in forms of the verb that do not admit the graphic accent, a long mark is placed over the vowel of the tonic syllable.

First Class.

456. The characteristic of this class is the expansion of the stem-vowels *e* and *o* into their corresponding diphthongs *ie*, *ue*, when the accent falls on the *radical*, or, in other words, when it is *tonic* (§§ 19; 19, a). This

can only occur throughout the singular, and in the third person plural, of the present indicative, subjunctive, and imperative; for, in all other persons and tenses, the accent lies on the *verbal ending*.

E STEMS. — FIRST CONJUGATION.

457. Pensar, pensando, pensado, to think.

PRESENT STEMS. — *piens* (tonic), *pens* (atonic).

PRES. IND.	piens-o	piens-as.	piens-a	pens-āmos	pens-āis	piens-an.
PRES. SUBJ.	piens-e	piens-es	piens-e	pens-ēmos	pens-ēis	piens-en.
IMPERAT.	—	piens-a	piens-e	pens-ēmos	pens-ād	piens-en.
IMPERF.	pens-āba	-abas	-aba	-ābamos	-ābais	-aban.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	pens-é	-aste	-ó	-āmos	-ásteis	-āron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	pens-āra	-āras	-āra	-āramos	-ārais	-āran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	pens-āse	-āses	-āse	-āsemos	-āscis	-āsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	pens-āre	-āres	-āre	-āremos	-āreis	-āren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	pensar-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	pensar-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

458. Acertar, acertando, acertado, to hit the mark.

PRES. IND.	acierto	aciertas	acierta	acertāmos	acertāis	aciertan.
PRES. SUBJ.	acierte	aciertes	acierte	acertēmos	acertēis	aciertén.
IMPERAT.	—	acierta	acierte	acertēmos	acertād	aciertén.
	acertāba; acerté, acertāra, acertāse, acertāre; acertar-é, -ía.					

459. Alentar, alentando, alentado, to encourage.

PRES. IND.	alliento	allientas	allienta	alentamos	alentais	allientan.
PRES. SUBJ.	alliente	allientes	alliente	alentemos	alenteis	allientén.
IMPERAT.	—	allienta	alliente	alentemos	alentad	allientén.
	alentaba; alenté, alentara, alentase, alentare; alentar-é, -ía.					

460. Cerrar, cerrando, cerrado, to shut.

PRES. IND.	cierro	cierras	cierra	cerramos	cerrais	cierran.
PRES. SUBJ.	cierre	cierres	cierre	cerremos	cerreis	cierren.
IMPERAT.	—	cierra	cierre	cerremos	cerrad	cierren.

cerraba; cerré, cerrara, cerrase, cerrare; cerrar-é, -ía.

461. Apretar, apretando, apretado, to grasp tightly.

PRES. IND.	aprieto	aprietas	aprieta	apretamos	apretais	aprietan.
PRES. SUBJ.	apriete	aprietes	apriete	apretemos	apreteis	aprieten.
IMPERAT.	—	aprieta	apriete	apretemos	apretad	aprieten.

apretaba; apreté, apretara, apretase, apretare; apretar-é, -ía.

462. Atestar, atestando, atestado, to cram.

PRES. IND.	atiesto	atiestas	atiesta	atestamos	atestais	atiestan.
PRES. SUBJ.	atieste	atiestes	atieste	atestemos	atesteis	atiesten.
IMPERAT.	—	atiesta	atieste	atestemos	atestad	atiesten.

atestaba; atesté, atestara, atestase, atestare; atestar-é, -ía.

463. Sembrar, sembrando, sembrado, to sow.

PRES. IND.	siembro	siembras	siembra	sembramos	sembrais	siembran.
PRES. SUBJ.	siembre	siembres	siembre	sembremos	sembreis	siembren.
IMPERAT.	—	siembra	siembre	sembremos	sembrad	siembren.

sembraba; sembré, sembrara, sembrase, sembrare; sembrar-é, -ía.

464. Helar, helando, helado, to freeze.

PRES. IND.	hielo	hielas	hiela	helamos	helais	hielan.
PRES. SUBJ.	hiele	hiele	hiele	helemos	heleis	hielen.
IMPERAT.	—	hiela	hiele	helemos	helad	hielen.

helaba; helé, helara, helase, helare; helaré, helaría.

Euphonic Changes.

465. In the verb *errar*, the stem-vowel being initial, the vowel *i* of the diphthong is consonantized, that is, written and pronounced *y* consonant (§ 442, a): —

466. Errar, errando, errado, *to miss*.

PRES. IND.	yerro	yerras	yerra	errāmos	errāis	yerran.
PRES. SUBJ.	yerre	yerres	yerre	errēmos	errēis	yerren.
IMPERAT.	—	yerra	yerre	errēmos	errād	yerren.
errāba; erré, errāra, errāse, errāre; erraré, erraría.						

467. Verbs of this class in *-gar* and *-zar*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *e*, observe the regular orthographic changes explained in § 371:—

468. Negar, negando, negado, *to deny*.

PRES. IND.	niego	niegas	niega	negāmos	negāis	niegan.
PRES. SUBJ.	niegue	niegues	niegue	neguēmos	neguēis	nieguen.
IMPERAT.	—	niega	niegue	neguēmos	negād	nieguen.
negāba; negué, negāste, <i>etc.</i> ; negāra, negāse, negāre; <i>etc.</i>						

469. Empezar, empezando, empezado, *to begin*.

PR. IN.	empiezo	empiezas	empieza	empezāmos	empezāis	empiezan.
PR. SJ.	empiece	empieces	empiece	empecēmos	empecēis	empiecen.
IMPER. —		empieza	empiece	empecēmos	empezād	empiecen.
empezāba; empecé, empezāste, <i>etc.</i> ; empezāra, empezāse; <i>etc.</i>						

E STEMS. — SECOND CONJUGATION.**470. Perder**, perdiendo, perdido, *to lose*.PRESENT STEMS. — **plerd** (tonic), *perd* (atonic).

PRES. IND.	plerd-o	plerd-es	plerd-e	perd-ēmos	perd-ēis	plerd-en.
PRES. SUBJ.	plerd-a	plerd-as	plerd-a	perd-āmos	perd-āis	plerd-an.
IMPERAT.	—	plerd-e	plerd-a	perd-āmos	perd-ēd	plerd-an.
IMPERF.	perd-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	perd-í	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	perd-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iēramos	-iērais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	perd-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iēsemos	-iēseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	perd-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iēremos	-iēreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	perder-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	perder-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

471. Entender, entendiendo, entendido, to understand.

PR. IN.	entiendo entiendes entiende	entendēmos entendēis	entienden.
PR. SJ.	entienda entiendas entienda	entendāmos entendāis	entiendan.
IMPER. —	entiende entienda	entendāmos entendēd	entiendan.
	entendía; entendí, entendiera, entiēse, entiēre; entender-é, -ía.		

O STEMS. — FIRST CONJUGATION.

472. Sonar, sonando, sonado, to sound.

PRESENT STEMS. — **suen** (tonic), **son** (atonic).

PRES. IND.	suen-o	suen-as	suen-a	son-āmos	son-āis	suen-an.
PRES. SUBJ.	su, n-e	suen-es	suen-e	son-ēmos	son-ēis	suen-en.
IMPERAT.	—	suen-a	suen-e	son-ēmos	son-ād	suen-en.
IMPERF.	son-āba	-abas	-aba	-ābamos	-ābais	-aban.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	son-é	-aste	-ó	-āmos	-āsteis	-āron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	son-āra	-āras	-āra	-āramos	-ārais	-āran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	son-āse	-āses	-āse	-āsemos	-āseis	-āsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	son-āre	-āres	-āre	-āremos	-āreis	-āren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	sonar-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	sonar-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

473. Costar, costando, costado, to cost.

PRES. IND.	costo	costas	costa	costāmos	costāis	costan.
PRES. SUBJ.	coste	costes	coste	costēmos	costēis	costen.
IMPERAT.	—	costa	coste	costēmos	costād	costen.
	costāba; costé, costāra, costāse, costāre; costar-é, -ía.					

474. Acordar, acordando, acordado, to agree.

PRES. IND.	acuerdo acuerdas acuerda	acordamos acordais	acuerdan.
PRES. SUBJ.	acuerde acuerdes acuerde	acordemos acordeis	acuerden.
IMPERAT.	—	acuerda acuerde	acordemos acordad acuerden.
	acordaba; acordé, acordara, acordase, acordare; acordar-é, -ía.		

475. Hollar, hollando, hollado, *to trample.*

PRES. IND.	huello	huellas	huella	hollamos	hollais	huellan.
PRES. SUBJ.	huelle	huelles	huelle	hollemos	holleis	huellen.
IMPERAT.	—	huella	huelle	hollemos	hollad	huellen.
		hollaba ; hollé, hollara, hollase, hollare ; hollaré, hollaría.				

476. Volar, volando, volado, *to fly.*

PRES. IND.	vuelo	vuelas	vuela	volamos	volais	vuelan.
PRES. SUBJ.	vuele	vueles	vuele	volemos	voleis	vuelen.
IMPERAT.	—	vuela	vuele	volemos	volad	vuelen.
		volaba ; volé, volara, volase, volare ; volaré, volaría.				

477. Contar, contando, contado, *to count.*

PRES. IND.	cuento	cuentas	cuenta	contamos	contais	cuentan.
PRES. SUBJ.	cuento	cuentes	cuento	contemos	conteis	cuenten.
IMPERAT.	—	cuenta	cuento	contemos	contad	cuenten.
		contaba ; conté, contara, contase, contare ; contaré, contaría.				

478. Probar, probando, probado, *to prove.*

PRES. IND.	pruebo	pruebas	prueba	probamos	probais	prueban.
PRES. SUBJ.	pruebe	pruebes	pruebe	probemos	probeis	prueben.
IMPERAT.	—	prueba	pruebe	probemos	probad	prueben.
		probaba ; probé, probara, probase, probare ; probaré, probaría.				

Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.

479. The verbs **desosar**, *to separate the bones from the meat*, and **desovar**, *to spawn* (from **hueso**, *bone*, and **huevo**, *egg*), introduce an *h* before the diphthong of the present stem : —

480. Desosar, desosando, desosado.

PR. IN.	deshueso	deshuesas	deshuesa	desosāmos	desosāis	deshuesan.
PR. S.	deshuese	deshueses	deshuese	desosēmos	desosēis	deshuesen.
IMPER.	—	deshuesa	deshuese	desosēmos	desosād	deshuesen.
		desosāba ; desosé, desosāra, desosāse, desosāre ; desosar-é, -ía.				

481. Verbs of this class in *-car*, *-gar*, and *-zar*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *o*, observe the regular orthographic changes laid down in § 371.

482. Trocar, trocando, trocado, *to barter*.

PR. IN. **trueco truecas trueca** trocāmos trocāis **truecan**.
 PR. SJ. **trueque trueques trueque** troquēmos troquēis **truequen**.
 IMPER. — **trueca trueque** troquēmos trocād **truequen**.
 trocāba; **troqué**, trocāste, *etc.*; trocāra, trocāse, trocāre; *etc.*

483. Rogar, rogando, rogado, *to request*.

PRES. IND. **ruego ruegas ruega** rogāmos rogāis **ruegan**.
 PRES. SUBJ. **ruegue ruegues ruegue** roguēmos roguēis **rueguen**.
 IMPERAT. — **ruega ruegue** roguēmos rogād **rueguen**.
 rogāba; **rogué**, rogāste, *etc.*; rogāra, rogāse, rogāre; rogaré, *etc.*

484. Here belongs the verb **jugar** (Lat. *jocari*), which follows the analogy of this class, with the stem-vowel *u*, anciently *o* :—

485. Jugar, jugando, jugado, *to play, to gamble*.

PRES. IND. **juego juegas juega** jugāmos jugāis **juegan**.
 PRES. SUBJ. **juegue juegues juegue** juguēmos juguēis **jueguen**.
 IMPERAT. — **juega juegue** juguēmos jugād **jueguen**.
 jugāba; **jugué**, jugāste, *etc.*; jugāra, jugāse, jugāre; jugaré, *etc.*

486. Forzar, forzando, forzado, *to force*.

PRES. IND. **uerzo fuerzas fuerza** forzāmos forzāis **forzan**.
 PRES. SUBJ. **uerce fuerces fuerce** forcēmos forcēis **fuercen**.
 IMPERAT. — **uerza fuerce** forcēmos forzād **fuercen**.
 forzāba; **forcé**, forzāste, *etc.*; forzāra, forzāse, forzāre; *etc.*

487. In verbs of this class whose stem-vowel *o* stands after a *g*, the diphthong assumes the diæresis (*üe*), according to §§ 17 and 32, *a* :—

488. Agorar, agorando, agorado, *to divine (augurare).*

PRES. IND.	agüero	agüeras	agüera	agorāmos	agorāis	agüeran.
PRES. SUBJ.	agüere	agüeres	agüere	agorēmos	agorēis	agüeren.
IMPERAT.	—	agüera	agüere	agorēmos	agorād	agüeren.
		agorāba; agoré, agorāra, agorāse, agorāre; agorar-é, -la.				

O STEMS. — SECOND CONJUGATION.

489. Mover, moviendo, movido, *to move.*PRESENT STEMS. — **muev** (tonic), **mov** (atonic).

PRES. IND.	muev-o	muev-es	muev-e	mov-ēmos	mov-ēis	muev-en.
PRES. SUBJ.	muev-a	muev-as	muev-a	mov-āmos	mov-āis	muev-an.
IMPERAT.	—	muev-e	muev-a	mov-āmos	mov-ēd	muev-an.
IMPERF.	mov-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	mov-í	-iste	-ió	-ímos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	mov-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iērais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	mov-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iēseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	mov-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iēreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	mover-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	mover-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

490. Morder, mordiendo, mordido, *to bite.*

PRES. IND.	muerdo	muerdes	muerde	mordēmos	mordēis	muerden.
PRES. SUBJ.	muerda	muerdas	muerda	mordāmos	mordāis	muerdan.
IMPERAT.	—	muerde	muerda	mordāmos	mordēd	muerdan.
		mordía; mordí, mordiera, mordiēse, mordiēre; morder-é, -la.				

491. Volver, volviendo, vuelto, *to return.*

PRES. IND.	vuelvo	vuelves	vuelve	volvemos	volveis	vuelven.
PRES. SUBJ.	vuelva	vuelvas	vuelva	volvamos	volvais	vuelvan.
IMPERAT.	—	vuelve	vuelva	volvamos	volved	vuelvan.
		volvía; volví, volviera, volviēse, volviere; volveré, volvería.				

492. Moler, moliendo, molido, *to grind*.

PRES. IND.	muelo	mueles	muele	molemos	moleis	muelen.
PRES. SUBJ.	muera	muera	muera	molamos	molais	muelan.
IMPERAT.	—	muele	muera	molamos	moled	muelan.

molía; molí, moliera, moliese, moliere; moleré, molería.

Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.

493. The verb **oler** assumes an *h* before the diphthong of the tonic stem:—

494. Oler, oliendo, olido, *to scent, to smell*.

PRES. IND.	huelo	huelas	huele	olēmos	olēis	huelen.
PRES. SUBJ.	huela	huelas	huela	olāmos	olāis	huelan.
IMPERAT.	—	huele	huela	olāmos	olēd	huelan.

olía; olí, oliera, oliése, oliere; oleré, olería.

495. Verbs of this class in *-cer* preceded by a consonant, and a few in *-ocer*, besides diphthongizing the stem-vowel *o*, observe the regular orthographical changes indicated in § 373. See § 374, exception:—

496. Torcer, torciendo, torcido, *to twist*.

PRES. IND.	tuerzo	tuerces	tuerce	torcemos	torceis	tuercen.
PRES. SUBJ.	tuerza	tuerzas	tuerza	torzamos	torzais	tuerzan.
IMPERAT.	—	tuerce	tuerza	torzamos	torced	tuerzan.

torcía; torcí, torciera, torciese, torciere; torceré, torcería.

497. Cocer, cociendo, cocido, *to boil, to bake*.¹

PRES. IND.	cuezo	cueces	cuece	cocēmos	cocēis	cuecen.
PRES. SUBJ.	cueza	cuezas	cueza	cozāmos	cozāis	cuezan.
IMPERAT.	—	cuece	cueza	cozāmos	cocēd	cuezan.

cocía; cocí, cociera, cociese, cociere; coceré, cocería.

¹ **Cocer** means *to boil, to cook*, meats, vegetables, tea, etc., and *to bake* bread, pottery, brick. Of *water*, it is preferable to use **hervir** (*fervere*). The mistress, for example, would say, *el agua hierve*; and the servant, *el agua está cociendo*. "Boiled meat" is *carne cocida*; "boiling water," or "very hot water," *agua hirviente*. "To boil an egg" is *pasar un huevo por agua*; "boiled eggs," *huevos pasados por agua*; "baked clay," *barro cocido*; etc.

Second Class.

498. This class embraces verbs of the third conjugation only, with the radical vowels *e* and *o*. The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system.

In the present stem, besides the usual diphthongization of the vowels *e* and *o* when tonic, these vowels subside into *i* and *u* respectively before a *strong* termination, whenever the stem is *atonic*; that is, in the first and second persons plural of the subjunctive, and in the first person plural of the imperative.

Again, in the preterit stem, including the gerund, the radical vowels *e* and *o* become respectively *i* and *u*, as often as the ending that follows contains the diphthong *ie* or *io*.

E STEMS.

499. Sentir, (sintiendo), sentido, to feel, to perceive.

PRESENT STEM. — **sient** (tonic), **sent** (atonic, weak), **sint** (atonic, strong).

PRES. IND.	sient-o	sient-es	sient-e	sent-imos	sent-ís	sient-en.
PRES. SUBJ.	sient-a	sient-as	sient-a	sint-āmos	sint-āis	sient-an.
IMPERAT.	—	sient-e	sient-a	sint-āmos	sent-id	sient-an.
IMPERF.	sent-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íamos	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **sint** (before a diphthong).

GERUND.	sintiēdo.					
PAST DEF.	sent-í	-iste	sintió	sent-imos	-ísteis	sintiēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	sint-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iēramos	-iērais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	sint-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	sint-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	sentir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	sentir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

500. Herir, (hiriendo), herido, to strike (with a weapon).

PRES. IND.	hiero	hieres	hiere	herimos	herís	hieren.
PRES. SUBJ.	hiera	hieras	hiera	hirāmos	hirāis	hieran.
IMPERAT.	—	hiere	hiera	hirāmos	herid	hieran.
IMPERF.	her-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	hiriendo.					
PAST DEF.	her-í	-iste	hirió	her-imos	-ísteis	hirieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	hir-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	hir-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	hir-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	herir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	herir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. So the compounds of *herir* (from Lat. *haerere*), or of *ferir* (from Lat. *ferire*), and of *-gerir*, *-jerir* (Lat. *-gerere*, *-serere*).

501. Herir means *to strike with a weapon*, with intent to wound or to put to death. Otherwise, *to strike* is expressed by **dar un golpe — dar golpes — á alguien**, *to inflict a blow — blows — on any one: —*

<i>Ruben.</i> Conserve yo mi vida, y Raquel muera (hiérela).	<i>Reuben.</i> Let me preserve my life, and let Rachel die (<i>he strikes</i>).
<i>Raquel.</i> ¡Ay de mí!	<i>Rachel.</i> Alas for me!

— Tragedy of *Rachel*, by D. Vicente García de la Huerta, 1778.

502. Advertir, (advirtiendo), advertido, to observe.

	<i>ad-</i>		<i>ad-</i>			
PRES. IND.	vierto	viertes	vierte	vertimos	vertís	vierten.
PRES. SUBJ.	vierta	viertas	vierta	virtamos	virtais	viertan.
IMPERAT.	—	vierte	vierta	virtamos	vertid	viertan.
IMPERF.	vert-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	advirtiendo.					
PAST DEF.	vert-í	-iste	virtió	vert-imos	-ísteis	virtieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	virt-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	virt-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	virt-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	vertir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	vertir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

503. Hervir (hirviendo), hervido, *to boil*.

PRES. IND.	hiervo	hierves	hierve	hervimos	hervís	hierven.
PRES. SUBJ.	hierva	hiervas	hierva	hírvamos	hírvals	hiervan.
IMPERAT.	—	hierve	hierva	hírvamos	hervid	hiervan.
IMPERF.	herv-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	hirviendo.					
PAST DEF.	herv-í	-iste	hirvió	herv-ímos	-ísteis	hirvieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	hírv-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	hírv-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	hírv-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	hervir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	hervir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

504. In the verb **erguir**, *to throw back* (the head) *haughtily*, the stem being initial, the vowel *i* may be either consonantized, or it may replace the diphthong altogether, in the present tenses. The other changes are the same as in the model verb *sentir*:—

505. Erguir (irguiendo), erguido.

PR. IND.	yergo	yergues	yergue	} erguimos	erguís	{ yerguen. irguen.
	irgo	irgues	irgue			
PR. SJ.	yerga	yergas	yerga	} irgamos	irgais	{ yergan. irgan.
	irga	irgas	irga			
IMPERAT.	—	yergue	yerga	} irgamos	erguid	{ yergan. irgan.
	—	irgue	irga			
IMPERF.	erguía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	irguiendo.					
PAST D.	erguí	erguiste	irguí	erguimos	erguísteis	irguieron.
1 IMP. SJ.	irguiera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SJ.	irguiese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SJ.	irguiere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	erguir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	erguir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

506. Verbs in *-quirir* which are derived from a primitive radical *quer* (Lat. *quaerere*), have the usual diphthong *ie* in the present stem when tonic; but otherwise they preserve the characteristic *i* throughout.

507. Adquirir (adquiriendo), adquirido, *to get, to obtain.*

PR. IN. **adquiro adquiere adquiere** adquirimos adquirís **adquieren.**

PR. SJ. **adquiera adquieras adquiera** adquiramos adquiráis **adquieran.**

IMPER. — **adquiere adquiera** adquiramos adquirid **adquieran.**
adquiría; adquiriendo, adquirí, adquiriera, adquiriese; *etc.*

O STEMS.

508. Dormir (durmiendo), dormido, *to sleep.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **duerm** (tonic), *dorm* (atonic weak), **durm** (atonic strong).

PR. IN. **duerm-o duerm-es duerm-e** dorm-imos dorm-ís **duerm-en.**

PR. SJ. **duerm-a duerm-as duerm-a durm-amos durm-áis duerm-an.**

IMPER. — **duerm-e duerm-a durm-amos** dorm-id **duerm-an.**

IMPF. dorm-ía -ías -ía -íamos -áis -ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **durm** (before a diphthong).

GER. **durmiendo.**

PA. D. dorm-í -iste **durmió** dorm-imos -ísteis **durmieron.**

1 I. SJ. **durm-iëra** -iëras -iëra -iëramos -iërais -iëran.

2 I. SJ. **durm-iëse** -iëses -iëse -iësemos -iëseis -iësen.

FU. SJ. **durm-iëre** -iëres -iëre -iëremos -iëreis -iëren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUT. dormir-é -ás -á -émos -éis -án.

COND. dormir-ía -ías -ía -íamos -áis -ían.

509. Morir (muriendo), muerto, *to die.*

PRES. IND. **muero mueres muere** morimos morís **mueren.**

PRES. SUBJ. **muera mueras muera** muramos muráis **mueran.**

IMPERAT. — **muere muera** muramos morid **mueran.**

IMPERF. mor-ía -ías -ía -íamos -áis -ían.

GERUND. **muriendo.**

PAST DEF. mor-í -iste **murió** mor-imos -ísteis **murieron.**

1 IMP. SUBJ. **mur-iera** -ieras -iera -iéramos -iérais -ieran.

2 IMP. SUBJ. **mur-iese** -ieses -iese -iésemos -iéseis -iesen.

FUT. SUBJ. **mur-iere** -ieres -iere -iéremos -iéreis -ieren.

FUTURE. morir-é -ás -á -émos -éis -án.

CONDIT. morir-ía -ías -ía -íamos -áis -ían.

510. Podrir and pudrir (pudriendo), podrido, to decay.

This verb, which usually made the stem-vowels interchangeable in certain tenses and persons, has now become nearly regular with *u*, by the authority of the Spanish Academy. The latest recommendation of that body¹ fixes the inflection as follows (we insert the old variations between parentheses) :—

PR. IN.	pudro	pudres	pudre	{ pudrimos (<i>podrimos</i>)	{ pudrís (<i>podrís</i>)	pudren.
PR. SJ.	pudra	pudras	pudra	pudramos	pudrais	pudran.
IMPER.	—	pudre	pudra	pudramos	{ pudrid (<i>podrid</i>)	pudran.
IMPF.	pudr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
	(<i>podr-ía</i>)	(-ías)	(-ía)	(-íamos)	(-íais)	(-ían).
GER.	pudriendo.					
PA. D.	pudrí	pudriste	} pudrió	{ pudrimos (<i>podrimos</i>)	{ pudristeis (<i>podristeis</i>)	} pudrieron.
	(<i>podrí</i>)	(<i>podriste</i>)				
1 I. SJ.	pudri-era	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 I. SJ.	pudri-ese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FU. SJ.	pudri-ere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUT.	pudrir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
	(<i>podrir-é</i>)	(-ás)	(-á)	(-émos)	(-éis)	(-án).
COND.	pudrir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
	(<i>podrir-ía</i>)	(-ías)	(-ía)	(-íamos)	(-íais)	(-ían).

Third Class.

511. This class embraces only verbs of the third conjugation, with the radical vowel *e*. The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system.

In the present stem, the vowel *e* becomes *i* when the radical syllable is tonic, or atonic strong; that is, throughout the present indicative, subjunctive, and the imperative, save only the first and second persons plural

¹ *Gramática de la Lengua Castellana, por la Real Academia Española.* Madrid, 1880 (published January, 1881), p. 132.

of the indicative, and the second person plural imperative.

In the preterit system, the vowel *e*, as in *e* stems of the preceding class, uniformly becomes *i*, when the personal ending contains a diphthong; that is, in the gerund, in the third persons singular and plural of the past definite, and throughout the derivative tenses.

512. *Pedir*, (*pidiendo*), *pedido*, *to ask*.

PRESENT STEMS. — *pid* (tonic, atonic strong), *pid* (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	pid-o	pid-es	pid-e	ped-imos	ped-ís	pid-en.
PRES. SUBJ.	pid-a	pid-as	pid-a	pid-āmos	pid-áis	pid-an.
IMPERAT.	—	pid-e	pid-a	pid-āmos	ped-id	pid-an.
IMPERF.	ped-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — *pid* (before a diphthong).

GERUND.	pidiendo.					
PAST DEF.	ped-í	-iste	pídíó	ped-imos	-ísteis	pídieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	pid-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iēramos	-iērais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	pid-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iēsemos	-iēseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	pid-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iēremos	-iēreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	pedir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	pedir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

513. *Servir*, (*sirviendo*), *servido*, *to serve*.

PRES. IND.	sirvo	sirves	sirve	servimos	servís	sirven.
PRES. SUBJ.	sirva	sirvas	sirva	sirvāmos	sirváis	sirvan.
IMPERAT.	—	sirve	sirva	sirvāmos	servid	sirvan.
IMPERF.	serv-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	sirviendo.					
PAST DEF.	serv-í	-iste	sirvíó	servimos	-ísteis	sirviéron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	sirv-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iēramos	-iērais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	sirv-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iēsemos	-iēseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	sirv-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iēremos	-iēreis	-iēren.
FUTURE.	servir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	servir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

Orthographic and Euphonic Changes.

514. Verbs of this class in *-gir*, besides modifying the radical vowel *e*, observe the euphonic changes indicated in § 375:—

515. Regir, (rigiendo), regido, to rule.

PRES. IND.	rijo	riges	rige	regimos	regís	rigen.
PRES. SUBJ.	rija	rijas	rija	rijámos	rijáis	rijan.
IMPERAT.	—	rige	rija	rijámos	regid	rijan.
IMPERF.	reg-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	rigiēdo.					
PAST DEF.	reg-í	-iste	rigió	re-gimos	-ísteis	rigiēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	rig-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iéramos	-iérais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	rig-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	rig-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iéremos	-iéreis	-iēren.
FUTURE.	regir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	regir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

516. Verbs of this class in *-guir* (*gheer*) modify the stem-vowel, and conform to the euphonic changes laid down in § 376:—

Seguir, (siguiendo), seguido, to follow.

PRES. IND.	sigo	sigues	sigue	seguimos	seguís	siguen.
PRES. SUBJ.	sigá	sigá	sigá	sigamos	sigáis	sigan.
IMPERAT.	—	sigue	sigá	sigamos	seguid	sigan.
IMPERF.	seguíá	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	siguiēdo.					
PAST DEF.	seguí	-iste	siguió	seguimos	-ísteis	siguieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	sigulera	-iēras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	siguliese	-iēses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	sigulere	-iēres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	seguiré	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	seguiría	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

517. Verbs of this class in the double consonant *-ñir*, and optionally those in *-chir*, modify the stem-vowel *e*,

and absorb the *i* of the diphthongs *ie*, *io*, contained in the gerund, the past definite third persons singular and plural, and the derivative tenses, according to § 378:—

518. Ceñir, (ciñendo), ceñido, to gird.

PRES. IND.	ciño	ciñes	ciñe	ceñimos	ceñís	ciñen.
PRES. SUBJ.	ciña	ciñas	ciña	ciñamos	ciñáis	ciñan.
IMPERAT.	—	ciñe	ciña	ciñamos	ceñid	ciñan.
IMPERF.	ceñí- <i>la</i>	- <i>las</i>	- <i>la</i>	- <i>lamos</i>	- <i>lais</i>	- <i>lan</i> .
GERUND.	ciñendo.					
PAST DEF.	ceñí- <i>í</i>	- <i>iste</i>	ciñó	ceñí- <i>imos</i>	- <i>ísteis</i>	ciñeron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	ciñ- <i>era</i>	- <i>eras</i>	- <i>era</i>	- <i>éramos</i>	- <i>érais</i>	- <i>eran</i> .
2 IMP. SUBJ.	ciñ- <i>ese</i>	- <i>eses</i>	- <i>ese</i>	- <i>ésemos</i>	- <i>éséis</i>	- <i>esen</i> .
FUT. SUBJ.	ciñ- <i>ere</i>	- <i>eres</i>	- <i>ere</i>	- <i>éremos</i>	- <i>éreís</i>	- <i>eren</i> .
FUTURE.	ceñir- <i>é</i>	- <i>ás</i>	- <i>á</i>	- <i>émos</i>	- <i>éis</i>	- <i>án</i> .
CONDIT.	ceñir- <i>la</i>	- <i>las</i>	- <i>la</i>	- <i>lamos</i>	- <i>lais</i>	- <i>lan</i> .

519. Verbs in *-eir* modify the stem-vowel *e* into *i*, according to this class, but they lose the *i* of the diphthongs *ie* and *io* throughout the preterit stem:—

520. Re-ir, (ri-endo), re-ido, to laugh.

PRES. IND.	rio	ries	rie	reimos	reís	rien.
PRES. SUBJ.	ria	rias	ria	riamos	riáis	rian.
IMPERAT.	—	rie	ria	riamos	reíd	rian.
IMPERF.	re- <i>ía</i>	- <i>ías</i>	- <i>ía</i>	- <i>lamos</i>	- <i>lais</i>	- <i>lan</i> .
GERUND.	ri-endo.					
PAST DEF.	re- <i>í</i>	- <i>iste</i>	rió	re- <i>imos</i>	- <i>ísteis</i>	riéron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	ri- <i>era</i>	- <i>eras</i>	- <i>era</i>	- <i>éramos</i>	- <i>érais</i>	- <i>ēran</i> .
2 IMP. SUBJ.	ri- <i>ese</i>	- <i>eses</i>	- <i>ese</i>	- <i>ésemos</i>	- <i>éséis</i>	- <i>ēsen</i> .
FUT. SUBJ.	ri- <i>ere</i>	- <i>eres</i>	- <i>ere</i>	- <i>éremos</i>	- <i>éreís</i>	- <i>ēren</i> .
FUTURE.	reir- <i>é, etc.</i>			CONDIT.	reir- <i>la, etc.</i>	

Fourth Class.

521. This class embraces all verbs in *-uir*, including those in *-guir* (not those in *-guir*, § 376 and remark). The gerund uniformly belongs to the preterit system, as in the second and third classes.

In the present stem a *y* consonant is inserted before the ending when the radical is tonic (weak or strong), and also when atonic strong; that is, in the same positions of the present indicative, subjunctive, and of the imperative, in which the third class modifies the stem-vowel.

In the preterit system, including the gerund, the diphthongs *ie* and *ió* are consonantized throughout (§§ 441; 442, *b*).

522. **Huir**, (huyendo), huído, *to flee*.

PRESENT STEMS. — **hu-y** (tonic; atonic strong), **hu** (atonic weak)

PR. IN.	hūyo	hūyes	hūye	huimos	huís	hūyen.
PR. SJ.	hūya	hūyas	hūya	huyāmos	huyāis	hūyan.
IMPER.	—	hūye	hūya	huyāmos	huid	hūyan.
IMPERF.	hu-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **hu** (with diphthongs consonantized).

GERUND. **huyēndo.**

P. DEF.	hu-í	-iste	-yó	-imos	-ísteis	-yēron.
1 IMP. SJ.	hu- yēra	-yēras	-yēra	-yéramos	-yérais	-yēran.
2 IMP. SJ.	hu- yēse	-yēses	-yēse	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yēsen.
FUT. SJ.	hu- yēre	-yēres	-yēre	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	huir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	huir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

523. **Atribuir**, (atribuyendo), atribuído, *to ascribe*.

PR. IN.	atribū-yo	-yes	-ye	atribu-imos	-ís	atribū-yen.
PR. SJ.	atribū-ya	-yas	-ya	atribu-yāmos	-yāis	atribū-yan.
IMPER.	—	-ye	-ya	atribu-yāmos	-id	atribū-yan.
IMPERF.	atribu-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

GERUND. **atribuyēndo.**

P. DEF.	atribu-í	-iste	-yó	-imos	-ísteis	-yēron.
1 IMP. SJ.	atribu- yēra	-yēras	-yēra	-yéramos	-yérais	-yēran.
2 IMP. SJ.	atribu- yēse	-yēses	-yēse	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yēsen.
FUT. SJ.	atribu- yēre	-yēres	-yēre	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yēren.
FUTURE.	atribuir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	atribuir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

524. Instituir, (instituyendo), instituïdo, to establish.

PRES. IND.	institũ-yo	-yes	-ye	institũ-imos	-ís	institũ-yen.
PRES. SUBJ.	institũ-ya	-yas	-ya	institũ-yāmos	-yāís	institũ-yan.
IMPERAT.	—	-ye	-ya	institũ-yāmos	-íd	institũ-yan.
IMPERF.	institũ-fa	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GERUND.	instituyendo.					
PAST DEF.	institũ-í	-iste	-yó	-imos	-ísteis	-yeron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	institũ-yēra	-yēras	-yēra	-yéramos	-yérais	-yēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	institũ-yēse	-yēses	-yēse	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	institũ-yēre	-yēres	-yēre	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yēren.
FUTURE.	instituir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	instituir-fa	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

525. Verbs in *-güir* lose the diaeresis as often as they admit the *y* consonant:—

526. Argüir, (arguyendo), argüïdo, to discuss.

PR. IN.	argũ-yo	-yes	-ye	argũ-imos	-ís	argũ-yen.
PR. SJ.	argũ-ya	-yas	-ya	argũ-yāmos	-yāís	argũ-yan.
IMPER.	—	-ye	-ya	argũ-yāmos	argũ-íd	argũ-yan.
IMPRF.	argũ-fa	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
GER.	arguyendo.					
P. DEF.	argũ-í	-iste	argũ-yó	argũ-imos	-ísteis	argũ-yeron.
1 I. SJ.	argũ-yēra	-yēras	-yēra	-yéramos	-yérais	-yēran.
2 I. SJ.	argũ-yēse	-yēses	-yēse	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yēsen.
FU. SJ.	argũ-yēre	-yēres	-yēre	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yēren.
FUT.	argüir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
COND.	argüir-fa	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

Fifth Class.

527. This class embraces those verbs that have irregular preterit systems derived from the Latin by attraction, with the tonic accent on the radical in the first and third persons singular of the past definite. The present and future stems are generally irregular.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

528. **Andar**, andando, andado, *to go* (indefinitely).

PRESENT STEM. — REGULAR.

PRES. IND.	ando	andas	anda	andāmos	andáis	āndan.
PRES. SUBJ.	ande	andes	ande	andēmos	andéis	ānden.
IMPERAT.	—	anda	ande	andēmos	andād	ānden.
IMPERF.	and-aba	-abas	-aba	-ábamos	-ábais	-āban.

PRETERIT STEM. — **anduv** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	andūve	anduviste	andūvo	anduv-imos	-isteis	-iēron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	anduv-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iēramos	-iērais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	anduv-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iēsemos	-iēseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	anduv-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iēremos	-iēreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	andar-é, <i>etc.</i>	CONDIT.	andar-fa, <i>etc.</i>
---------	----------------------	---------	-----------------------

a. Andar is a general undefined going, expressing manner or state; *ir*, a going in a specific direction, or for a definite purpose. Of inanimate objects and animals, *andar* is used; of persons, *ir*. *Ir á*, followed by an infinitive, means *to be going to, to be about to* :—

andar de Ceca en Meca,¹ *to go from Dan to Beersheba.*

andar vagando por todas partes, *to go roaming all over.*

andar de prisa — despacio, *to go fast — slow.*

andar á gatas, *to go on all fours.*

el relój no anda; está parado, *the watch don't go; it has stopped.*

el caballo anda bien, *the horse travels well.*

la tierra anda, *the earth moves.*

ir de Madrid á Sevilla, *to go from Madrid to Seville.*

ir al teatro — á la compra, *to go to the play — to market.*

ir de un recado, *to go of an errand.*

él va de ministro á tal parte, *he goes as a minister to such a place. [to take a short walk.*

voy á dar un paseito, *I am going*
¿qué me va V. á dar? *what are you going to give me?*

¹ The **Ceca** of Córdoba, originally a *Mint* (Arab. *dār as-sikka*), was the central oratory for pilgrims in the western caliphate, corresponding to the **ca'aba** of Mecca in that of Bagdad.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

529. Caber, *cabiendo, cabido, to be contained in, (en), to hold.*

PRESENT STEMS. — **quep** (strong, § 446, *d*), *cab* (weak).

PRES. IND.	quepo	<i>cabes</i>	<i>cabe</i>	<i>cabēmos</i>	<i>cabēis</i>	<i>caben.</i>
PRÉS. SUBJ.	quepa	<i>quepas</i>	<i>quepa</i>	<i>quepāmos</i>	<i>quepáis</i>	<i>quepan.</i>
IMPERAT.	—	<i>cabe</i>	<i>quepa</i>	<i>quepāmos</i>	<i>cabēd</i>	<i>quepan.</i>
IMPERF.	<i>cab-ía</i>	<i>-ías</i>	<i>-ía</i>	<i>-íamos</i>	<i>-íais</i>	<i>-ían.</i>

PRETERIT STEM. — **cup** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	cūpe	<i>cupiste</i>	cūpo	<i>cup-imos</i>	<i>-ísteis</i>	<i>-ieron.</i>
1 IMP. SUBJ.	cup-iēra	<i>-iēras</i>	<i>-iēra</i>	<i>-iēramos</i>	<i>-iērais</i>	<i>-iēran.</i>
2 IMP. SUBJ.	cup-iēse	<i>-iēses</i>	<i>-iēse</i>	<i>-iēsemos</i>	<i>-iēseis</i>	<i>-iēsen.</i>
FUT. SUBJ.	cup-iēre	<i>-iēres</i>	<i>-iēre</i>	<i>-iēremos</i>	<i>-iēreis</i>	<i>-iēren.</i>

FUTURE STEM. — **cabr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	cabr-é	<i>-ás</i>	<i>-á</i>	<i>-émos</i>	<i>-éis</i>	<i>-án.</i>
CONDIT.	cabr-ía	<i>-ías</i>	<i>-ía</i>	<i>-íamos</i>	<i>-íais</i>	<i>-ían.</i>

a. The use of **caber** (from the Latin *capere, to take*) is anomalous, in that it reverses the English order of subject and object, and is construed with the preposition *en*. Thus: **En esta sala caben quinientas personas**, *this hall holds five hundred persons*, — literally, “five hundred persons hold in this hall”; **no cabe más en esta vasija**, *this vessel will not hold any more*, — literally, “no more holds in this vessel.” In this sense of material capacity, *coger*, with the English construction, may be substituted; as, *esta sala coge quinientas personas; esta vasija no coge más*.

b. **Caber** signifies also moral capacity in the sense of *to be capable of*; as, **no cabe en él tal infamia**, *he is not capable of such baseness*; **todo cabe en fulano**, *so and so is capable of anything*; **no cabe más**, *there is no room for more*, or “that caps the climax,” — the latter meaning also expressed in Spanish by **no faltaba más**.

c. **Cabe** is used impersonally in the sense of “it is possible”; negative, “there is no — possible”: **si cabe**, *if it is possible, if it may be*; **no cabe duda**, *there is no possible doubt*.

530. Hacer, haciendo, hecho, to make, to do (Lat. *facere*).

PRESENT STEMS. — **hag** (strong, § 446, *e*), **hac** (weak).

PRES. IND.	hago	haces	hace	hacemos	hacéis	hacen.
PRES. SUBJ.	haga	hagas	haga	hagamos	hagáis	hagan.
IMPERAT.	—	haz (§ 450)	haga	hagamos	haced	hagan.
IMPERF.	hacía	hacías	hacía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **hic** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	hice	hiciste	hizo (§ 14)	hicimos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	hiciera	hicieras	hiciera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	hiciese	hicieses	hiciese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	hiciere	hicieres	hiciere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **har** (§ 455).

FUTURE.	har-é	-ás	-á	-emos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	har-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

531. Satisfacer, satisfaciendo, satisfecho, to satisfy.

satis-

satis-

PRES. IND.	fago	faces	face	facemos	facéis	facen.
PRES. SUBJ.	faga	fagas	faga	facemos	facáis	fagan.
IMPERAT.	—	face or faz	faga	facemos	facéd	fagan.
IMPERF.	facía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	fice	ficiste	fizo	ficimos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	ficiera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	ficiese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	ficiere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	faré, etc.			CONDIT.	faría, etc.	

532. Poder, (pudiendo), podido, to be able.

PRESENT STEMS. — **pued** (tonic, § 445, *a*), **pod** (atonic, § 435).

PRES. IND.	puedo	puedes	puede	podemos	podeis	pueden.
PRES. SUBJ.	pueda	puedas	pueda	podamos	podais	puedan.
IMPERAT.	—	—	—	—	—	—
IMPERF.	pod-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **pod** (§ 452).

GERUND.	pudiendo.					
PAST DEF.	pūde	pudiste	pūdo	pud-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	pud-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	pud-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	pud-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **podr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	podr-é	-ás, etc.	CONDIT.	podr-ía	-ías, etc.	
---------	---------------	------------------	---------	----------------	-------------------	--

a. Poder is one of the so-called modal verbs, and signifies *may* (*might*), *can* (*could*), denoting physical or moral possibility, permission, and a possible contingency:—

no puedo hacerlo,	I cannot do it.
no hemos podido efectuarlo,	we could not bring it about.
¿se puede pasar?	may one (I) come in?
no se puede seguir adelante,	you can't go on.
podrá ser; pudo ser,	it may be; it might have been.

533. **Poner**, poniendo, puesto, *to put, to place.*

PRESENT STEMS.—**pong** (strong, § 446, *ð*), **pon** (weak).

PRES. IND.	pongo	pones	pone	ponēmos	ponēis	ponen.
PRES. SUBJ.	ponga	pongas	ponga	pongāmos	pongáis	pongan.
IMPERAT.	—	pon (§ 450)	ponga	pongāmos	ponēd	pongan.
IMPERF.	pon-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM.—**pus** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	pūse	pusiste	pūso	pus-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	pus-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	pus-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	pus-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM.—**pondr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	pondr-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	pondr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. Poner may be accompanied by the prepositions *en*, *sobre*, or *encima de*, to signify “to put” or “set on” a surface or the *outside* of anything. “To place” or “put in” the *inside* of anything is expressed by *meter en*. The synonym of both verbs is *colocar*:—

poner (<i>or colocar</i>) el sombrero	to put the hat on the table.
en la mesa,	
meter la costura en el cajon,	to put the sewing in the drawer.
colocarla en su sitio,	to put it in its place.

b. Ponerse, *to set one's self about, to begin*, followed by *á* and an infinitive; *to put on* a garment, gloves, etc. **Meterse en**, *to get one's self into, to meddle with*:—

se puso á cantar y á bailar,	he began to sing and to dance.
me pongo la levita,	I put on the frock-coat.
se ha metido en honduras,	he has got into straits — “gone beyond his depth.”
no se meta V. en los negocios ajenos,	do not meddle with other people's business.

534. *Querer*, queriendo, querido, *to will, to wish*.

PRESENT STEMS. — *queler* (tonic), *quer* (atonic).

PRES. IND.	quiero	quieres	quiere	querēmos	querēis	quieren.
PRES. SUBJ.	quiera	quieras	quiera	querāmos	querāis	quieran.
IMPERAT.	—	quiere	quiera	querāmos	querēd	quieran.
IMPERF.	quer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — *quis* (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	quise	quisiste	quiso	quis-imos	-isteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	quis-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	quis-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	quis-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — *querr* (§ 454).

FUTURE.	querr-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	querr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. Querer, as a verb of mode, denotes will, inclination, in the meanings *to will, to be willing, to wish* : —

¿quiere V. leer esta carta?	will you read this letter?
no quiso hacer lo que yo le propuse,	he would not do what I suggested.
el muchacho quería jugar, mas su compañero no quiso,	the boy wanted to play, but his mate was not willing to.

b. When will, would, signify future time, or a condition, the appropriate tense must be used : —

¿cuándo vendrá V. á verme?	when will you come to see me?
vendría pronto, si tuviese tiempo,	I would come soon, if I had time.

c. Querer signifies also *to like, to love, to be fond of* : —

el padre quiere á sus hijos,	the father is fond of his children.
-------------------------------------	-------------------------------------

535. **Saber**, sabiendo, sabido, *to know* (things).PRESENT STEMS.—**sep** (strong), **sab** (weak).

PRES. IND.	sé (§ 446, <i>a</i>)	sabes	sabe	sabēmos	sabēis	saben.
PRES. SUBJ.	sepa	sepas	sepa	sepāmos	sepáis	sepan.
IMPERAT.	—	sabe	sepa	sepāmos	sabed	sepan.
IMPERF.	sab-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM.—**sup** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	sūpe	supiste	sūpo	sup-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	sup-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	sup-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	sup-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM.—**sabr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	sabr-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	sabr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. Saber is to know things, objects of thought; conocer (§ 374, c), to know persons, and to be acquainted with things, objects of thought:—

lo **sé**; no quiero **saberlo**, *I know it; I do not want to know it.*

¿**sabe** V. su lección? la **sé** de memoria, *do you know your lesson? I know it by heart.*

yo ya **sabía** lo que quiso averiguar, *I knew what he wanted to find out.*

le **conozco**; no quiero **conocerle**, *I know him; I do not wish to know him.*

¿**conoce** V. este libro? lo **conozco**, *are you acquainted with this book? I am.*

conozco mi deber, y **sabré** desempeñarlo, *I know my duty, and shall find means to discharge it.*

b. Can (could) is always rendered by saber instead of poder, when it means to know how:—

sabe hablar Castellano,

yo **sé**
yo **puedo** } hacer eso,

he can speak Spanish.

I can (*intellectual possibility*)
I can (*physical possibility*) } do that.

536. Tener, teniendo, tenido, to have, to possess.PRESENT STEMS. — **teng** (strong), **tien** (tonic weak), **ten** (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	tengo	tienes	tiene	tenēmos	tenēis	tienen.
PRES. SUBJ.	tenga	tengas	tenga	tengāmos	tengāis	tengan.
IMPERAT.	—	ten (§ 450)	tenga	tengāmos	tenēd	tengan.
IMPERF.	ten-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **tuv** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	túve	tuviste	túvo	tuv-imos	-ísteis	-íeron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	tuv-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	tuv-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	tuv-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **tendr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	tendr-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	tendr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. Tener was formerly much used as an auxiliary verb, but at present it is limited to certain verbs in certain locutions not easy to define. The student will do well to confine himself to *haber*, till experience and observation serve to guide him surely:—

tengo entendido que . . . ,	I have learned that
lo tiene averiguado ya,	he has ferretted it out already.
tienen ideado un proyecto,	they have a plan in mind.

537. Traer, trayendo (§ 442, b), traído, to bring.PRESENT STEMS. — **traig** (strong), **tra** (weak).

PR. IN.	tráigo	traes	trae	traēmos	traēis	traēn.
PR. SJ.	tráiga	traigas	traiga	traigāmos	traigāis	traigan.
IMPER.	—	trae	traiga	traigāmos	traēd	traigan.
IMPF.	tra-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — **traj** (§ 452).

P. DEF.	tráje	trajiste	trájo	traj-imos	-ísteis	-eron (§ 443).
1 I. SJ.	traj-era	-eras	-era	-éramos	-érais	-eran.
2 I. SJ.	traj-ese	-eses	-ese	-ésemos	-ésels	-esen.
FU. SJ.	traj-ere	-eres	-ere	-éremos	-érels	-eren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUT.	traer-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
COND.	traer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. The preterit stem *truj* is now obsolete as a literary form, although it is still heard, like most Castilian archaisms, among rustic people. Its inflection is precisely like the prevailing form:—

PAST DEF.	trūje	trujiste	trūjo	truj-imos	-lsteis	-ëron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	truj-ëra	-ëras	-ëra	-éramos	-érais	-ëran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	truj-ëse	-ëses	-ëse	-ésemos	-ésels	-ësen.
FUT. SUBJ.	truj-ëre	-ëres	-ëre	-éremos	-érels	-ëren.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

538. Conducir, conduciendo, conducido, to conduct.

PRESENT STEMS.—**conduze** (strong, § 374, *d*), **conduc** (weak).

	<i>con-</i>		<i>con-</i>			
PRES. IND.	dūzco	dūces	dūce	ducimos	ducís	dūcen.
PRES. SUBJ.	dūzca	dūzcas	dūzca	duzcāmos	duzcāis	dūzcan.
IMPERAT.	—	dūce	dūzca	duzcāmos	ducid	dūzcan.
IMPERF.	ducía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM.—**conduj** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	dūje	dujiste	dūjo	duj-imos	-lsteis	-ëron (§ 443).
1 IMP. SUBJ.	duj-ëra	-ëras	-ëra	-éramos	-érais	-ëran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	duj-ëse	-ëses	-ëse	-ésemos	-ésels	-ësen.
FUT. SUBJ.	duj-ëre	-ëres	-ëre	-éremos	-érels	-ëren.

FUTURE STEM.—REGULAR.

FUTURE.	ducir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	ducir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. **Ducir** (Lat. *ducere*), *to lead*, is not in use, as a simple verb, since the close of the fifteenth century.

539. Decir, diciendo, dicho, to say, to tell.

PRESENT STEMS.—**dig** (strong), **dió** (tonic weak), **dec** (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	dig	dices	dice	decimos	decís	dicen.
PRES. SUBJ.	diga	digas	diga	digāmos	digāis	digan.
IMPERAT.	—	dí (§ 450)	diga	digāmos	decid	digan.
IMPERF.	decía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM.—**dij** (§ 452).

PAST DEF.	dije	dijiste	dijo	dij-imos	-lsteis	-ëron (§ 443).
1 IMP. SUBJ.	dij-ëra	-ëras	-ëra	-éramos	-érais	-ëran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	dij-ëse	-ëses	-ëse	-ésemos	-ésels	-ësen.
FUT. SUBJ.	dij-ëre	-ëres	-ëre	-éremos	-érels	-ëren.

FUTURE STEM.—**dir** (§ 455).

FUTURE.	dir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	dir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. The special form **diz**, *they say*, seems to be a contraction of the Latin *dicitur* (*dicit-ur*, *dist*, like *moz-o* from *must-us*). It is a quaint sort of a synonym for *se dice* or *dicen* :—

diz que ese labrador es rico, | they say that farmer is rich.

b. Like *decir*, are inflected all the compounds, such as *antedecir*, *contradecir*, *desdecir*, *entrededir*, *interdecir*, *predecir*, save only in the imperative second singular, which, in these, is generally *dice*, instead of *dt*. In *bendecir* and *maldecir*, the variations are more numerous, as will appear by the inflection of the first. The latest edition of the Academy's grammar makes all compounds of *decir* follow the inflection of *bendecir* in the imperative and in the future stem; but this use is not constant either in literature or in conversation.

540. **Bendecir**, *bendiciendo*, *bendecido*, (*benito*), *to bless*.

This verb and its contrary, **maldecir**, *to curse*, differ from the simple *decir*, in the past participle, the imperative second singular, and in the future stem only. Thus :—

	<i>ben-</i>			<i>ben-</i>		
PRES. IND.	digo	dices	dice	decimos	decís	dicen.
PRES. SUBJ.	diga	digas	diga	digamos	digais	digan.
IMPERAT.	—	<i>dice</i>	diga	digamos	decid	digan.
IMPERF.	decía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	dije	dijiste	dijo	dij-imos	-ísteis	-eron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	dij-era	-eras	-era	-éramos	-érais	-eran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	dij-ese	-eses	-ese	-ésemos	-éseis	-esen.
FUT. SUBJ.	dij-ere	-eres	-ere	-éremos	-éreis	-eren.
FUTURE.	<i>decir-é</i>	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	<i>decir-ía</i>	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. The irregular past participles *bendito* and *maldito* are used little as such, save in a few expressions, as : **bendito** seas, *blessings on thee*; **maldito** sea, *confound him*—literally, *mayest thou be blessed, may he be accursed*.

541. **Venir**, (viniendo), venido, *to come*.PRESENT STEMS. — **veng** (strong), **vien** (tonic weak), **ven** (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	vengo	vienes	viene	venimos	venís	vienen .
PRES. SUBJ.	venga	vengas	venga	vengamos	vengáis	vengan .
IMPERAT.	—	ven (§ 450)	venga	vengamos	venid	vengan .
IMPERF.	ven-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían .

PRETERIT STEM. — **vin** (§ 453).GERUND. **viniendo**.

PAST DEF.	vine	viniste	vino	vin-imos	-isteis	-ieron .
1 IMP. SUBJ.	vin-i-éra	-i-éras	-i-éra	-i-éramos	-i-érais	-i-éran .
2 IMP. SUBJ.	vin-i-ése	-i-éses	-i-ése	-i-ésemos	-i-éseis	-i-ésen .
FUT. SUBJ.	vin-i-ere	-i-eres	-i-ere	-i-éremos	-i-éreis	-i-eren .

FUTURE STEM. — **vendr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	vendr-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án .
CONDIT.	vendr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían .

Sixth Class.

542. This class embraces a few verbs not easily reducible to any of the foregoing.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

543. **Dar**, dando, dado, *to give*.PRESENT STEM. — **d** REGULAR.

PRES. IND.	doy (§ 449)	das	da	damos	dais	dan .
PRES. SUBJ.	dé	des	dé	demos	deis	den .
IMPERAT.	—	da	dé	demos	dad	den .
IMPERF.	daba	dabas	daba	dábamos	dábais	daban .

PRETERIT STEM. — **d** (second conjugation).

PAST DEF.	dí	diste	dió	dimos	disteis	dieron .
1 IMP. SUBJ.	diera	dieras	diera	diéramos	diérais	dieran .
2 IMP. SUBJ.	diese	dieses	diese	diésemos	diéseis	diesen .
FUT. SUB.	diere	dieres	diere	diéremos	diéreis	dieren .

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	dar-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án .
CONDIT.	dar-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían .

SECOND CONJUGATION.

544. **Caer**, cayendo (§ 442, *b*), caído, *to fall*.PRESENT STEMS. — **caig** (strong, § 446, *c*), *ca* (weak).

PRES. IND.	cāigo	<i>cāes</i>	<i>cāe</i>	<i>caēmos</i>	<i>caéis</i>	<i>caen</i> .
PRES. SUBJ.	cāiga	cāigas	cāiga	caigāmos	caigāis	caigan .
IMPERAT.	—	<i>cāe</i>	cāiga	caigāmos	<i>caed</i>	caigan .
IMPERF.	<i>ca-fa</i>	<i>-ías</i>	<i>-ía</i>	<i>-íamos</i>	<i>-iais</i>	<i>-ían</i> .

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR (but see § 442, *b*).

PAST DEF.	<i>caí</i>	<i>caíste</i>	cayó	<i>ca-ímos</i>	<i>-ísteis</i>	-yēron .
1 IMP. SUBJ.	<i>ca-yēra</i>	<i>-yēras</i>	-yēra	-yéramos	-yérais	-yēran .
2 IMP. SUBJ.	<i>ca-yēse</i>	<i>-yēses</i>	-yēse	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yēsen .
FUT. SUBJ.	<i>ca-yēre</i>	<i>-yēres</i>	-yēre	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yēren .

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	<i>caer-é</i>	<i>-ás</i>	<i>-á</i>	<i>-émos</i>	<i>-éis</i>	<i>-án</i> .
CONDIT.	<i>caer-fa</i>	<i>-fas</i>	<i>-fa</i>	<i>-famos</i>	<i>-faís</i>	<i>-ían</i> .

545. **Placer**, placiendo, placido, *to please*.

PRES. IND.	<i>place</i> .	1 IMP. SUBJ.	pluguiera (<i>placiera</i>).
PRES. SUBJ.	plazca (<i>plegue</i>).	2 IMP. SUBJ.	pluguiese (<i>placiese</i>).
IMPERAT.	plegue (<i>plega</i>).	FUT. SUBJ.	pluguiere (<i>placiere</i>).
IMPERF.	<i>placía</i> .	FUTURE.	<i>placerá</i> .
PAST DEF.	plugo (<i>plació</i>).	CONDIT.	<i>placería</i> .

a. The impersonal verb *placer* is now mostly archaic, except in ejaculations. Otherwise, it is replaced by *querer*, *to wish*, *to please*; *gustarle á uno*, and *parecerle á uno*, *to please*, *to suit*, *any one* : —

¡plegue á Dios que se salve!
¡pluguiera á Dios que jamás le
hubieses visto!
vendrás cuando te pluguiere,
si á V. le place,
si le gusta á V.,
si á V. le parece,
si V. quiere,

God grant he may be saved!
 would God you had never seen
 him!
 you will come when you please.

if you please, *or* if you like.

546. The compounds of *placer* are conjugated like *nacer* (§ 374, *b*); that is, they are regular throughout, except in the present stem, when they are euphonized by the intercalation of a *z* with strong vowel-endings:—

Complacer, complaciendo, complacido, *to oblige*.

	<i>com-</i>		<i>com-</i>			
PRES. IND.	plazco	places	place	placemos	placeis	placen.
PRES. SUBJ.	plazca	plazcas	plazca	plazcamos	plazcals	plazcan.
IMPERAT.	—	place	plazca	plazcamos	placed	plazcan.
IMPERF.	plací	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	plací	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	placiera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	placiese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	placiere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	placer-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	placer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

547. Valer, valiendo, valido, *to be worth*.

PRESENT STEMS. — **valg** (strong, § 446, *b*), *val* (weak).

PRES. IND.	valgo	vales	vale	valēmos	valēis	vālen.
PRES. SUBJ.	valga	valgas	valga	valgāmos	valgāis	valgan.
IMPERAT.	—	val and <i>vale</i>	valga	valgāmos	valēd	valgan.
IMPERF.	val-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	val-í	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	val-iēra	-iēras	-iēra	-iēramos	-iērais	-iēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	val-iēse	-iēses	-iēse	-iēsemos	-iēseis	-iēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	val-iēre	-iēres	-iēre	-iēremos	-iēreis	-iēren.

FUTURE STEM. — **valdr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	valdr-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	valdr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. So also the reflexive verb **valerse**, *to avail one's self of (de)*, *to take advantage*:—

me **valgo**, te **vales**, se **vale**, nos **valemos**, os **valeis**, etc.

se vale de este recurso para engañar y estafar á la gente sencilla,	he takes advantage of this expedient to deceive and defraud simple people.
--	--

548. **Ver**, viendo, visto, *to see*.

PRESENT STEMS. — <i>ve</i> (strong), <i>v</i> (weak).						
PRES. IND.	veo	ves	ve	vemos	vêis	ven.
PRES. SUBJ.	vea	veas	vea	veamos	veáis	vean.
IMPERAT.	—	ve	vea	veamos	ved	vean.
IMPERF. (§ 451)	ve-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PRETERIT STEM. — <i>v</i> REGULAR.						
PAST DEF.	vi	viste	vió	vimos	vísteis	vieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	viera	vieras	viera	viéramos	viérais	vieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	viese	vieses	viese	viésemos	viéseis	viesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	viere	vieres	viere	viéremos	viéreis	vieren.
FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.						
FUTURE.	ver-é, etc.		CONDIT. ver-ía, etc.			

a. Ver was formerly written and pronounced *veer* (from the Latin *vidēre*), and was regular in the present indicative and subjunctive, but still irregular in the imperfect. Thus:—

veo	vees	vee	(veēmos)	(veēis)	veen.
vea	veas	vea	veamos	veais	vean.
—	vee	—	—	veed.	
vía	vías	vía	víamos	víais	vían.

In the past definite first and third persons singular, the forms *vide*, *vido*, from the Latin *vidi*, *vidit*, were used.

549. Like *ver* are inflected all its own compounds; those in *veer*, as well as all simple verbs in *-eer*, like *creer*, *leer*, *poseer*, etc., are regular throughout, save that the diphthongs *ie* and *io* must always be *consonantized*, according to § 442, *b*:—

a. Proveer, *proveyendo*, *proveído*, *or* *provisto*, *to provide*.

PRES. IND.	provêo	provêes	provêe	proveēmos	proveêis	provêen.
PRES. SUBJ.	provêa	provêas	provêa	proveamos	proveáis	provêan.
IMPERAT.	—	provêe	provêa	proveamos	proveed	provêan.
IMPERF.	prove-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	prove-í	-íste	-yó	-imos	-ísteis	-yêron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	prove-yêra	-yêras	-yêra	-yéramos	-yérais	-yêran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	prove-yêse	-yêses	-yêse	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yêsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	prove-yêre	-yêres	-yêre	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yêren.
FUTURE.	proveer-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	proveer-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

b. Creer, creyendo (§ 442, b), creído, to believe.

PRES. IND.	creo	crees	cree	creemos	creéis	creen.
PRES. SUBJ.	crea	creas	crea	creamos	creáis	crean.
IMPERAT.	—	cree	crea	creamos	creed	crean.
IMPERF.	cre-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	cre-í	-iste	-yó	-imos	-ísteis	-yeron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	cre-yera	-yeras	-yera	-yéramos	-yérais	-yeran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	cre-yese	-yeses	-yese	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	cre-yere	-yeres	-yere	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yeren.
FUTURE.	creer-é, etc.		CONDIT. creer-ía, etc.			

c. Poseer, poseyendo, poseído, to possess.

PRES. IND.	poséo	posées	posée	poseemos	poseéis	poséen.
PRES. SUBJ.	posea	poseas	posea	poseamos	poseáis	posean.
IMPERAT.	—	posee	posea	poseamos	poseed	posean.
IMPERF.	pose-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	pose-í	-iste	-yó	-imos	-ísteis	-yeron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	pose-yēra	-yeras	-yera	-yéramos	-yérais	-yēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	pose-yēse	-yeses	-yese	-yésemos	-yéseis	-yēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	pose-yēre	-yeres	-yere	-yéremos	-yéreis	-yēren.
FUTURE.	poseer-é, etc.		CONDIT. poseer-ía, etc.			

550. Yacer, yaciendo, yacido, to lie (Lat. jacēre).

PRES. IND.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{yazco} \\ \text{yazgo} \\ \text{yago} \end{array} \right\}$	yaces	yace	yacemos	yaceis	yacen.
PRES. SUBJ.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{yazca} \\ \text{yazga} \\ \text{yaga} \end{array} \right\}$	yazcas	yazca	yazcamos	yazcais	yazcan.
		yazgas	yazga	yazgamos	yazgais	yazgan.
		yagas	yaga	yagamos	yagais	yagan.
IMPERAT.	—	yace, <i>or</i> yaz			yaced	
		yacia; yací, yaciera, yaciese, yaciere; yacer-é, -ía.				

THIRD CONJUGATION.

551. Asir, asiendo, asido, to lay hold of.

PRESENT STEMS. — **asg** (strong), **as** (weak).

PRES. IND.	asgo	ases	ase	asimos	asís	āsen.
PRES. SUBJ.	asga	asgas	asga	asgāmos	asgāis	asgan.
IMPERAT.	—	ase	asga	asgāmos	asid	asgan.
		asía; así, asiera, asiese, asiere; asiré, asiría.				

552. **Ir**, yendo (§ 442, *a*), ido, *to go* (definitely).

PRES. IND.	voy (§ 449)	vas	va	vamos	vais	van.
PRES. SUBJ.	vaya	vayas	vaya	vayāmos	vayáis	vayan.
IMPERAT.	—	ve (§ 450)	vaya	vamos	id	vayan.
IMPERF.	iba (§ 451)	ibas	iba	íbamos	íbais	iban.
PAST DEF.	fuí	fuiste	fué	fuimos	fuísteis	fueron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	fuera	fueras	fuera	fuéramos	fuérais	fueran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	fuese	fueses	fuese	fuésemos	fuéseis	fuesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	fuere	fueres	fuere	fuéremos	fuéreis	fueren.
FUTURE.	ir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	ir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

a. Irse, yéndose, ídose, *to go away, to go*.

PRES. IND.	me voy	te vas	se va	nos vamos	os vais	se van.
PRES. SUBJ.	me vaya	te vaya	se vaya	nos vayāmos	os vayáis	se vayan.
IMPERAT.	—	véte	váyase	vámonos	ídos (§ 404)	váyanse.
IMPERF.	me iba	te ibas	se iba	nos íbamos	os íbais	se iban.
PAST DEF.	me fuí	te fuiste	se fué	nos fuimos	os fuísteis	se fueron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	me fuera	te fueras	se fuera	nos fuéramos	os fuérais	se fueran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	me fuese	te fueses	se fuese	nos fuésemos	os fuéseis	se fuesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	me fuere	te fueres	se fuere	nos fuéremos	os fuéreis	se fueren.
FUTURE.	me iré	te irás	se irá	nos irémos	os iréis	se irán.
CONDIT.	me iría	te irías	se iría	nos iríamos	os iríais	se irían.

553. **Oir**, oyendo (§ 442, *b*), oído, *to hear*.PRESENT STEMS. — **oír** (strong), **oy** (tonic weak), **o** (atonic weak).

PRES. IND.	oigo	oyes	oye	oímos	oís	oyen.
PRES. SUBJ.	oiga	oigas	oiga	oigāmos	oigáis	oigan.
IMPERAT.	—	oye	oiga	oigāmos	oid	oigan.
IMPERF.	o-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — *o* (diphthongs *ie*, *ió*, consonantized).

PAST DEF.	oí	oíste	oyó	oímos	oísteis	oyéron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	oyēra	oyēras	oyēra	oyéramos	oyérais	oyēran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	oyēse	oyēses	oyēse	oyésemos	oyéseis	oyēsen.
FUT. SUBJ.	oyēre	oyēres	oyēre	oyéremos	oyéreis	oyēren.

FUTURE STEM. — REGULAR.

FUTURE.	oir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	oir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

554. Salir, saliendo, salido, to go out.PRESENT STEMS. — **salg** (strong), *sal* (weak).

PRES. IND.	salgo	sales	sale	salimos	salís	salen.
PRES. SUBJ.	salga	salgas	salga	salgamos	salgáis	salgan.
IMPERAT.	—	sal	salga	salgamos	salid	salgan.
IMPERF.	sal-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

PRETERIT STEM. — REGULAR.

PAST DEF.	sal-í	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	sal-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	sal-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	sal-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.

FUTURE STEM. — **saldr** (§ 454).

FUTURE.	saldr-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	saldr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

DEFECTIVE VERBS.

555. The following verbs are used only in those forms of which the personal ending begins with an *i*, including, however, the future : —

abolir,	<i>regular.</i>	despavorir,	<i>regular.</i>
agüerrir,	<i>like herir.</i>	embair,	<i>regular.</i>
arrecirse,	<i>like herir.</i>	empedernir,	<i>like servir.</i>
aterirse,	<i>like herir.</i>	garantir,	<i>regular.</i>
desmarrirse,	<i>regular.</i>	manir,	<i>regular.</i>

Examples.**a. Abolir, aboliendo, abolido, to abolish.**

PRES. IND.	—	—	—	abol-imos	-ís	—
IMPERAT.	—	—	—	—	abol-id	—
IMPERF.	abol-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PAST DEF.	abol-í	-iste	-ió	-imos	-ísteis	-ieron.
1 IMP. SUBJ.	abol-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 IMP. SUBJ.	abol-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FUT. SUBJ.	abol-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUTURE.	abolir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
CONDIT.	abolir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

b. Aguerir, aguirriendo, aguerrido, to exercise in war.

PR. IN.	—	—	—	aguerr-imos	-ls	—
IMPER.	—	—	—	—	aguerr-id	—
IMPF.	aguerr-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.
PA. D.	aguerr-í	-iste	aguirrió	aguerr-imos	-ísteis	aguirrieron.
1 I. SJ.	aguirr-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 I. SJ.	aguirr-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FU. SJ.	aguirr-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUT.	aguerrir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
COND.	aguerrir-ía	-ías	-ía	-íamos	-íais	-ían.

556. The verb **raer**, *to erase*, is now replaced by **rayar**, which is regular. The original form is, however, met with occasionally, conjugated like **caer**. Thus :—

raigo and **rayo**, **raes**, **rae**, **raemos**, **raeis**, **raen**.
raiga and **raya**, *etc.*
 ra-ía; **raí**, **raiste**, **rayó**, *etc.*; **rayera**, **rayese**, **rayere**, *etc.*

557. Roer, *to gnaw*, has the following forms :—

róo, **roigo**, and **royo**; **roes**, **roe**, *etc.*
roa, **roiga**, and **roya**; **roas**, **roigas**, and **royas**; *etc.*

a. Corroer, *to corrode*, makes **corroe** — **corroen** in the indicative present, and **corroa** — **corroan** in the subjunctive.

558. Many verbs are used only in the third persons singular and plural of certain tenses (see also § 422) :—

a. Aplacer, *to please* (obsolete) :—

aplace — aplacen. | aplacia — aplacían.

b. Atañer, *to appertain* :—

atañe — atañen. | atañía — atañían.

aquien lo de yuso en esta nra | to whom appertaineth or may
 carta contenido **atañe** / o | appertain what followeth in
atañer puede, | this our letter.

— *Law for the expulsion of the Jews from Spain*, A.D. 1492.

c. **Concernir**, *concerniendo*, *concernido*, *to concern*.**conclerme** — **conclernen.****concierna** — **conciernan.**

concernía — concernían.

concernió — concernieron.

concerniera — concernieran.

concerniese — concerniesen.

concerniere — concernieren.

concernirá, *etc.*; all little used.

559. The verb **soler**, *to be accustomed to* (past participle **solido**) has in common use only the following forms:—

PRES.	suelo	sueles	suele	solemos	soleis	suelen.
IMPERF.	solía	solías	solía	solíamos	solíais	solían.

IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES.

560. Past participles are said to be irregular when they do not end in *-ado* or *-ido*, like the primitive models *habl-ado*, *com-ido*, *viv-ido*. The irregularity proceeds from the original Latin form, more or less contracted and modified (classic and post-classic), and is found even with verbs that are otherwise regular in Spanish.

561. Regular verbs in Spanish that have an irregular past participle are the following, together with their compounds:—

abrir, *to open*;entreabrir, *to half-open*;**cubrir**, *to cover*;descubrir, *to discover*;encubrir, *to conceal*;**escribir**, *to write*;circunscribir, *to circumscribe*;inscribir, *to register*;prescribir, *to prescribe*;proscribir, *to proscribe*;**imprimir**, *to print*;**abierto** (L. *apertus*), *opened*.entreabierto, *half-opened*.**cubierto** (L. *co-opertus*), *covered*.descubierto, *discovered*.encubierto, *concealed*.**escrito** (L. *scriptus*), *written*.circunscrito, *circumscribed*.inscrito, *registered*.prescrito, *prescribed*.proscrito, *proscribed*.**impreso** (L. *impressus*), *printed*.

b. **Aguerrir**, *aguirriendo*, *aguerrido*, *to exercise in war*.

PR. IN.	—	—	—	aguerr-imos	-ls	—
IMPER.	—	—	—	—	aguerr-id	—
IMPF.	aguerr-la	-las	-la	-lamos	-lais	-lan.
PA. D.	aguerr-l	-iste	aguirrió	aguerr-imos	-lsteis	aguirrieron.
1 I. SJ.	aguirr-iera	-ieras	-iera	-iéramos	-iérais	-ieran.
2 I. SJ.	aguirr-iese	-ieses	-iese	-iésemos	-iéseis	-iesen.
FU. SJ.	aguirr-iere	-ieres	-iere	-iéremos	-iéreis	-ieren.
FUT.	aguerrir-é	-ás	-á	-émos	-éis	-án.
COND.	aguerrir-la	-las	-la	-lamos	-lais	-lan.

556. The verb **raer**, *to erase*, is now replaced by *rayar*, which is regular. The original form is, however, met with occasionally, conjugated like *caer*. Thus :—

raigo and **rayo**, **raes**, **rae**, **raemos**, **raeis**, **raen**.
raiga and **raya**, *etc.*
ra-la; **raí**, **raiste**, **rayó**, *etc.*; **rayera**, **rayese**, **rayere**, *etc.*

557. **Roer**, *to gnaw*, has the following forms :—

róo, **roigo**, and **royo**; **roes**, **roe**, *etc.*
roa, **roiga**, and **roya**; **roas**, **roigas**, and **royas**; *etc.*

a. **Corroer**, *to corrode*, makes *corroe* — *corroen* in the indicative present, and *corroa* — *corroan* in the subjunctive.

558. Many verbs are used only in the third persons singular and plural of certain tenses (see also § 422) :—

a. **Aplacer**, *to please* (obsolete) :—

aplace — aplacen. | aplacía — aplacían.

b. **Atañer**, *to appertain* :—

atañe — atañen. | atañía — atañían.

aquien lo de yuso en esta nra	|	to whom appertaineth or may
carta contenido atañe / o	|	appertain what followeth in
atañer puede,	|	this our letter.

— *Law for the expulsion of the Jews from Spain*, A.D. 1492.

c. **Concernir**, *concerniendo*, *concernido*, *to concern*.**conclerne** — **conclernen.****conclerna** — **conclernan.**

concernía — concernían.

concernió — concernieron.

concerniera — concernieran.

concerniese — concerniesen.

concerniere — concernieren.

concernirá, *etc.*; all little used.

559. The verb **soler**, *to be accustomed to* (past participle **solido**) has in common use only the following forms:—

PRES.	suelo	sueles	suele	solemos	soleis	suelen.
IMPERF.	solía	solías	solía	solíamos	solíais	solían.

IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES.

560. Past participles are said to be irregular when they do not end in *-ado* or *-ido*, like the primitive models *habl-ado*, *com-ido*, *viv-ido*. The irregularity proceeds from the original Latin form, more or less contracted and modified (classic and post-classic), and is found even with verbs that are otherwise regular in Spanish.

561. Regular verbs in Spanish that have an irregular past participle are the following, together with their compounds:—

abrir, *to open*;entreabrir, *to half-open*;**cubrir**, *to cover*;descubrir, *to discover*;encubrir, *to conceal*;**escribir**, *to write*;circunscribir, *to circumscribe*;inscribir, *to register*;prescribir, *to prescribe*;proscribir, *to proscribe*;**imprimir**, *to print*;**abierto** (L. *apertus*), *opened*.entreabierto, *half-opened*.**cubierto** (L. *co-optertus*), *covered*.descubierto, *discovered*.encubierto, *concealed*.**escrito** (L. *scriptus*), *written*.circunscrito, *circumscribed*.inscrito, *registered*.prescrito, *prescribed*.proscrito, *proscribed*.**impreso** (L. *impressus*), *printed*.

562. Irregular verbs in Spanish that have an irregular past participle are the following, together with their compounds :—

decir, *to say, to tell;*

contradecir, *to gainsay;*
desdecir, *to unsay;*
interdecir, *to prohibit;*
predecir, *to foretell;*

hacer (obs. **facere**), *to make, to do;*

contrahacer, *to falsify;*
deshacer, *to undo;*
rehacer, *to do over;*
satisfacer, *to satisfy;*

morir, *to die;*

poner, *to put, to place;*

componer, *to mend;*
deponer, *to lay down;*
disponer, *to dispose;*
exponer, *to set forth;*
imponer, *to deposit;*
oponer, *to oppose;*
proponer, *to propose;*
suponer, *to suppose;*

solver (obs.), *to solve;*

absolver, *to absolve;*
disolver, *to dissolve;*
resolver, *to resolve;*

ver, *to see;*

entrever, *to get a glimpse*
prever, *to foresee; [of;*
rever, *to review;*

volver, *to turn to return;*

devolver, *to give back;*
envolver, *to wrap up;*
revolver, *to turn over;*

dicho (L. *dictus*), *said, told.*

contradicho, *gainsaid.*
desdicho, *unsaid.*
interdicho, *prohibited.*
predicho, *foretold.*

hecho (L. *factus*), *made, done.*

contrahecho, *falsified.*
deshecho, *undone.*
rehecho, *done over.*
satisfecho, *satisfied.*

muerto (L. *mort[u]s*), *died.*

puesto (L. *pos[ui]tus*), *put.*

compuesto, *mended.*
depuesto, *laid down.*
dispuesto, *disposed.*
expuesto, *set forth.*
impuesto, *deposited.*
opuesto, *opposed.*
propuesto, *proposed.*
supuesto, *supposed.*

suelto (L. *sol[ui]tus*), *solved.*

absuelto, *absolved.*
disuelto, *dissolved.*
resuelto, *resolved.*

visto (L. *vistus* for *visus*), *seen.*

entrevisto, *got a glimpse*
previsto, *foreseen. [of.*
revisto, *reviewed.*

vuelto (L. *vol[ui]tus*), *returned.*

devuelto, *given back.*
envuelto, *wrapped up.*
revuelto, *turned over.*

563. The verbs **bendecir**, *to bless*, and **maldecir**, *to curse*, have the regular past participles **bendecido**, **maldecido**, although compounds of *decir*. The ancient past participles **bendito**, **maldito**, are now used as

adjectives, save only when a wish or desire in the form of an exclamation is to be expressed : —

Dios le ha bendecido á él y á toda su casa, nadie diga que es maldecido de Dios, [jeres! ; bendita seas tú entre las mu- ; sean malditos todos ellos! agua bendita ; una bendita li- mosna,	God hath blessed him and all his house. let no one say he is accursed of God. blessed be thou among women! may they all be accursed! holy water; a blessed alms.
--	--

a. "Blessed," throughout the Scriptures, is rendered by **bienaventurado** when it represents the Hebrew *āshārīm*, and the Greek *μακάριος* : —

¡ bienaventurado el varon que no anda en consejo de malos!	blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the un- godly!
--	--

564. Bienquerer, to esteem, and malquerer, to abhor, have the regular past participles **bienquerido**, **malquerido**, but are more commonly employed with *ser* in the ancient forms **bienquisto**, **malquisto** : —

es bienquisto de sus vecinos,	he is much esteemed by his neighbors.
no es malquisto de ellos,	he is not hated by them.

a. These two verbs are oftener used as separable, and thus we say: les **queremos bien**, *we are very fond of them*; no la **quiso mal**, *he did not hate her*.

565. Freir, to fry, and its compounds, have two past participles, **freído** and **frito**, either of which may be used with *haber*; but with *ser* and *estar* it is more common to employ the latter form : —

¿ no han { freído } todavía los huevos?	have they not fried the eggs yet?
los huevos ya están fritos ,	the eggs are fried now.

566. Injerir, *to graft*, has the regular past participle **injerido** with *haber* and *ser*, and the form **injerto** in other relations without an auxiliary :—

fueron quebradas (las ramas)	(the branches) were broken off
para que yo fuese injerido ,	that I might be grafted in.
mi padre me decía que era Espa-	my father told me I was a Span-
ñol transplantado en Italiano,	iard transplanted into an Ital-
y Gallego enjerito en Romano,	ian, and a Gallician grafted
— <i>Estébanillo</i> , 1646.	on to a Roman.

a. The orthography of *injerir*, instead of *ingerir*, is sustained both by the etymology of the word and the old form of writing it. **Enxerir** (pronounced *ensherir*) came from *inserère*, and not *ingerère*, the *s* medial regularly passing over into *sh*; old Spanish, *x*, and modern, *j*. The Academy, however, recognizes only *ingerir*, an untenable form.

567. Matar, in its proper sense of *to kill*, referring to persons, has the irregular past participle **muerto**, like *morir*; but, in the figurative senses, involving the idea of harassing, worrying, putting one out of patience, and, as a reflexive verb, as well as in its proper sense, referring to animals, it is regular — **matado** :—

álguien ha muerto (<i>morir</i>),	some one has died (is dead).
álguien le ha muerto (<i>matar</i>),	some one has killed him.
me ha matado con sus chismes,	he worried me to death with his gossip.
dice que yo he matado la vaca,	he says that I killed the cow.
él se ha muerto (<i>morirse</i>),	he has died (he died).
él se ha matado (<i>matarse</i>),	he has committed suicide.

568. Oprimir, *to oppress*, and **suprimir**, *to suppress*, have the regular past participles **oprimido**, **suprimido**, and occasionally the irregular forms **opreso** and **supreso**, although the latter do not often occur :—

se ha suprimido El Imparcial,	"The Imparcial" has been suppressed.
la obra fué suprimida ,	the work was suppressed.

569. The verb **prender** in the sense of *to arrest* a person, has two participles, **prendido** and **preso** (Lat. *prehensus*). With *haber*, either form may be used; but with *ser* and *estar*, it is customary to prefer **preso**:—

han prendido }	} al reo,	they have arrested the culprit.
han preso		
llegó el alguacil y dijo, sed preso	} en nombre del rey,	the constable came up and said, "You are my prisoner in the king's name."
todos están presos ya,		all are now made prisoners.

a. In all other significations, *prender* is regular throughout:—
el fuego había **prendido** en la casa, | the house had taken fire.

b. All compounds of *prender* have only the regular past participle. Such are: **aprender**, *to learn*; **comprender**, *to understand*; **emprender**, *to undertake*; etc.:—

ha aprendido algo nuevo hoy,	he has learned something new to-day.
han comprendido la trama,	they understood the plot.
el encargo no fué emprendido ,	the charge was not undertaken.

570. **Proveer**, *to provide*, makes **proveído** and **provisto**, the latter usually with *estar*:—

el gobierno ha proveído lo necesario para la seguridad del país,	the government has provided what is necessary for the security of the country.
la plaza estaba provista de todo,	the fortress was provided with everything.

571. **Romper**, *to break*, makes **rompido** and **roto** in the past participle, but the latter form generally prevails in all positions, when the verb is used transitively:—

han roto los cristales de la tienda,	they have broken the window-panes of the shop.
se ha roto el vaso,	the glass has been broken. [use.
la fuente está rota; ya no sirve,	the dish is broken; it is of no

a. As an intransitive verb, *romper* is regular in its past participle:—

ha roto con su amigo, <i>but</i>	he has broken with his friend.
ha roto todos los lazos,	he has severed every tie.

b. The compound forms of *romper* are regular. Thus: *corromper*, *to corrupt*; *interrumpir*, *to interrupt*; etc.:—

sin ser corrompido,	without being corrupted.
le han interrumpido,	they interrupted him.
después de haber prorumpido en lágrimas,	after having burst into tears.

572. Past participles are variable in gender and number, like adjectives in *o*, when they are conjugated with any auxiliary whatever, except *haber*; likewise, when used as pure adjectives or participial adjectives without a verb:—

ella tiene escrita una carta,	she has written a letter.
las cartas están escritas,	the letters are written.
las condiciones del empréstito han sido publicadas,	the terms of the (government) loan have been published.
la cuestión queda zanjada,	the affair is adjusted.
una lección aprendida,	a lesson learned.
los libros impresos,	printed books.
una hoja suelta,	a printed sheet, a notice.
las simpatías granjeadas,	sympathies acquired.
ella ha escrito la carta,	she has written the letter.
han emprendido las obras,	they have begun building.

573. Past participles, like common adjectives, are often converted into substantives:—

preso, <i>arrested</i>;	| un preso, a <i>prisoner</i> .
--------------------------	-------------------------------

§ 574.

GENERAL ALPHABETICAL INDEX

TO THE

INFLECTION OF ALL THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

A.		
abastecer . . .	like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	agorar . . . § 488.
abnegar . . .	" <i>negar</i> , § 468.	agradecer . . . like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
abhorrecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	aguerrir . . . § 555. b.
absolver . . .	" <i>volver</i> , § 491.	alebrarse . . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.
pp. <i>absuelto</i> .		alentar . . . § 459.
absonar . . .	" <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	aliquebrar . . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.
abstenerse . . .	" <i>tener</i> , § 536.	almorzar . . . " <i>forzar</i> , § 486.
abstraer . . .	" <i>traer</i> , § 537.	alongar . . . " <i>rogar</i> , § 483.
abuñolar . . .	" <i>volar</i> , § 476.	amanecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
acaecer . . .	§§ 374, a; 422.	amoblar . . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.
acertar . . .	§ 458.	amolar . . . " <i>volar</i> , § 476.
aclocar . . .	" <i>trocar</i> , § 482.	amollecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
acollar . . .	" <i>hollar</i> , § 475.	amorecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
acontecer . . .	§§ 374, a; 422.	amortecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
acordar ¹ . . .	§ 474.	amover . . . " <i>mover</i> , § 489.
acornar . . .	" <i>acordar</i> , § 474.	andar . . . § 528.
acostar . . .	" <i>costar</i> , § 473.	anochecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
acrecentar . . .	" <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	antedecir . . . " <i>decir</i> , § 539, b.
acrecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	pp. <i>antedicho</i> .
adecentar . . .	" <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	anteponer . . . " <i>poner</i> , § 533.
adestrar . . .	" <i>atestar</i> , § 462.	pp. <i>antepuesto</i> .
adherir . . .	" <i>herir</i> , § 500.	antever . . . " <i>ver</i> , § 548.
adolecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	pp. <i>antevisto</i> .
adormecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	apacentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.
adormir . . .	" <i>dormir</i> , § 508.	aparecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
adquirir . . .	§ 507.	apercollar . . . " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.
aducir . . .	" <i>conducir</i> , § 538.	apernar . . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
advertir . . .	§ 502.	apetecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
afollar . . .	" <i>hollar</i> , § 475.	apostar ¹ . . . " <i>costar</i> , § 473.
aforar ² . . .	" <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	apretar . . . § 461.
		aprobar . . . " <i>probar</i> , § 478.

¹ Regular in the sense of "to tune."² Regular when it means "to gauge."¹ Regular in the sense of "to post" men, guards, etc.

argüir . . .	§ 526.
arrecirse . . .	§ 555.
arrendar . . . like <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
arrepentirse . . . " <i>sentir</i> ,	§ 499.
ascender . . . " <i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
asentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
asentir . . . " <i>sentir</i> ,	§ 499.
aserrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> ,	§ 460.
asir	§ 551.
asolar	§ 476.
asoldar	§ 474.
asonar	§ 472.
asosegar	§ 468.
atañer	§§ 378, b; 558, b.
atender	§ 471.
atenerse	§ 536.
atentar ¹	§ 459.
aterirse	§ 555.
aterrar ²	§ 460.
atestar ³	§ 462.
atraer	§ 537.
atravesar	§ 461.
atribuir	§ 523.
atronar	§ 472.
avalentar	§ 459.
avanecerse	§ 374, a.
avenir	§ 541.
aventar	§ 459.
avergonzar;	
like <i>agorar</i> , § 488, and <i>forzar</i> ,	§ 486.
azolar	§ 476.

B.

berdecir . . .	§ 540.
pp. <i>bendecido</i> .	
bienquerer . . . like <i>querer</i> ,	§ 534.
blanquecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
bregar	§ 468.
bruñir	§ 378, c.
bullir	§ 378, a.

C.

caber	§ 529.
caer	§ 544.
calentar like <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
canecer " <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
carecer	§ 374, a.
cegar " <i>negar</i>	§ 468.
ceñir	§ 518.
cerner " <i>perder</i> ,	§ 470.
cerrar	§ 460.
cimentar	§ 459.
circular	§ 523.
clarecer	§ 374, a.
clocar	§ 482.
cocer	§ 497.
colar	§ 476.
colegir	§ 515.
colgar	§ 483.
comedir	§ 512.
comenzar	§ 469.
compadecer	§ 374, a.
comparecer	§ 374, a.
competir	§ 512.
complacer	§ 546.
complañir	§ 378, c.
componer	§ 533.
pp. <i>compuesto</i> .	
comprobar	§ 478.
concebir	§ 512.
concernir	§ 558, c.
concertar	§ 458.
concluir	§ 522.
concordar	§ 474.
condescender	§ 471.
condolerse	§ 492.
conducir	§ 538.
conferir	§ 500.
confesar	§ 461.
confluir	§ 522.
conmover	§ 489.
conocer	§ 374, c.
conseguir	§ 516.
consentir	§ 499.
consolar	§ 476.
consonar	§ 472.

¹ Regular in the more usual modern sense of "to attempt a crime."

² Regular when it means "to terrify."

³ Meaning "to testify," it is regular.

constituir . . . like <i>instituir</i> , § 524.	deponer . . . like <i>poner</i> , § 533.
constreñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> , § 518.	pp. <i>depuesto</i> .
construir . . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.	derrenegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.
contrar . . . " § 477.	derrengar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.
contender . . . " <i>entender</i> , § 471.	derretir . . . " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.
contener . . . " <i>tener</i> , § 536.	derrocar . . . " <i>trocár</i> , § 482.
contorcerse . . . " <i>torcer</i> , § 496.	derruir . . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.
contracordar . . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.	desabastecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
contradecir . . . " <i>decir</i> , § 539, b.	desacertar . . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
pp. <i>contradicho</i> .	desacollar . . . " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.
contraer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.	desacordar . . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.
contrahacer . . . " <i>hacer</i> , § 530.	desadormecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
pp. <i>contrahecho</i> .	desadvertir . . . " <i>advertir</i> , § 502.
contraponer . . . " <i>poner</i> , § 533.	desaferrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.
pp. <i>contrapuesto</i> .	desaforar ¹ . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.
contravenir . . . " <i>venir</i> , § 541.	desagradecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
contribuir . . . " <i>atribuir</i> , § 523.	desalentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.
controvertir . . . " <i>advertir</i> , § 502.	desamoblar . . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.
convalecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desandar . . . " <i>andar</i> , § 528.
convenir . . . " <i>venir</i> , § 541.	desaparecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
convertir . . . " <i>advertir</i> , § 502.	desapretar . . . " <i>apretar</i> , § 461.
corregir . . . " <i>regir</i> , § 515.	desaprobar . . . " <i>probar</i> , § 478.
corroer . . . " § 557, a.	desarrendar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.
costar . . . " § 473.	desasentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.
crecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desasir . . . " <i>asir</i> , § 551.
crear . . . " § 549, b.	desasosegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.
D.	desatender . . . " <i>entender</i> , § 471.
dar . . . " § 543.	desatentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.
decaer . . . like <i>caer</i> , § 544.	desaterrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.
decentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	desatraer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.
-decir . . . " § 539.	desatравар . . . " <i>apretar</i> , § 461.
pp. <i>dicho</i> .	desavenir . . . " <i>venir</i> , § 541.
decrecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desaventar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.
deducir . . . " <i>conducir</i> , § 538.	desbastecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
defender . . . " <i>entender</i> , § 471.	desbravecier . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
defenecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	descabullirse . . . " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.
deferir . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.	descaecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
degollar . . . " <i>agorar</i> , § 488.	descender . . . " <i>entender</i> , § 471.
demoler . . . " <i>moler</i> , § 492.	desceñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> , § 518.
demostrar . . . " <i>costar</i> , § 473.	descolgar . . . " <i>rogar</i> , § 483.
denegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.	descollar . . . " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.
denegrecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	descomedirse . . . " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.
denostar . . . " <i>costar</i> , § 473.	
dentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	

¹ Regular when it means "to redeem a heritage."

descomponer, like <i>poner</i> , § 533. pp. <i>descompuesto</i> .	desgobernar, like <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
desconcertar, " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.	desguarnecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
desconocer . . " <i>conocer</i> , § 374, c.	deshacer . . " <i>hacer</i> , § 530. pp. <i>deshecho</i> .
desconsentir . . " <i>sentir</i> , § 499.	deshelar . . " <i>helar</i> , § 464.
desconsolar . . " <i>volar</i> , § 476.	desherbar . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
descontar . . " <i>contar</i> , § 477.	desherrar . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.
desconvenir . . " <i>venir</i> , § 541.	deshombrecerse, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
descordar . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.	deshumedecer, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
descornar . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.	desimponer . . " <i>poner</i> , § 533. pp. <i>desimpuesto</i> .
descrecer . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desinvernar . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
desdar . . " <i>dar</i> , § 543.	desleir . . " <i>reir</i> , § 520.
desdecir . . " <i>decir</i> , § 539.	deslendar . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.
pp. <i>desdicho</i> .	deslucir . . " <i>lucir</i> , § 374, d.
desdentar . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	desmajolar . . " <i>volar</i> , § 476.
desembecerse, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desmedirse . . " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.
desembellecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desmelar . . " <i>helar</i> , § 464.
desembravecer, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desmembrar, " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.
desempedrar . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.	desmentir . . " <i>sentir</i> , § 499.
desempobrecer, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desmerecer . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
desencarecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desmullir . . " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.
desencerrar . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.	desnegar . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.
desencordar . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.	desnevar . . " <i>nevar</i> , § 417.
desen crudecer, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desobedecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
desen cruelecer, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desoir " <i>oir</i> , § 553.
desenfurecerse, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desolar " <i>volar</i> , § 476.
desengrosar . . " <i>costar</i> , § 473.	desoldar " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.
desenmohecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desollar " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.
desenmudecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desobstruir . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.
desensoberbecer, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desosar ¹ § 480.
desentenderse, " <i>entender</i> , § 471.	desovar " <i>desosar</i> , § 480.
desenterrar . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.	desparecer . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
desentorpecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	despedir " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.
desentristecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	despedrar . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
desentumecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desperecer . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
desenvolver . . " <i>volver</i> , § 491.	despernar . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
pp. <i>desenvuelto</i> .	despertar . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
deservir " <i>servir</i> , § 513.	despezar ² . . " <i>empezar</i> , § 469.
desfallecer . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desplacer " <i>complacer</i> , § 546.
desfavorecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	desplegar " <i>negar</i> , § 468.
desferrar " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.	
desflaquecerse, <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
desflojar " <i>trocar</i> , § 482.	
desfloreecer . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
desfortalecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	

¹ Signifying "not to dare," it is regular.² Regular when it means to reduce the end of a pipe or tube, so as to fit it to another.

despoblar . like <i>probar</i> , § 478.	
desproveer . " <i>proveer</i> , § 549, a.	
pps. <i>desprovido</i> and <i>desprovisto</i> .	
destentar . like <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	
desteñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> , § 518.	
desterrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.	
destituir . . . " <i>instituir</i> , § 524.	
destorcer . . . " <i>torcer</i> , § 496.	
destrocar . . . " <i>trocar</i> , § 482.	
destruir . . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.	
desvanecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
desventar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	
desverdecir , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
desvergonzarse ,	
like <i>forzar</i> , § 486; and <i>agorar</i> , § 488.	
desvolver . like <i>volver</i> , § 491.	
pp. <i>desvuelto</i> .	
detener . . . " <i>tener</i> , § 536.	
detracer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.	
devolver . . . " <i>volver</i> , § 491.	
pp. <i>devuelto</i> .	
dezmar . . . " <i>atestar</i> , § 462.	
diferir . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.	
difundir . . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.	
digerir . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.	
diluir . . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.	
discerner . . . " <i>perder</i> , § 470.	
discernir . . . " <i>hervir</i> , § 503.	
disconvenir , " <i>venir</i> , § 541.	
discordar . . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.	
disentir . . . " <i>sentir</i> , § 499.	
disminuir . . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.	
disolver . . . " <i>volver</i> , § 491.	
pp. <i>disuelto</i> .	
disonar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	
dispartar . . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.	
displacer . . . " <i>complacer</i> , § 546.	
disponer . . . " <i>poner</i> , § 533.	
pp. <i>dispuesto</i> .	
distender . . . " <i>entender</i> , § 471.	
distraer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.	
distribuir . . . " <i>atribuir</i> , § 523.	
divertir . . . " <i>advertir</i> , § 502.	
doler . . . " <i>moler</i> , § 492.	
dormir § 508.	
	E.
educir . . . like <i>conducir</i> , § 538.	
elegir " <i>regir</i> , § 515.	
embarbecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embastecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embebecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embellecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embermejecer , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embestir . . . " <i>servir</i> , § 513.	
emblanquecer , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embobecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embosquecer , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embravecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
embrutecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
emparentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	
empedernir § 555.	
empedrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.	
empellar . . . " <i>helar</i> , § 464.	
empequeñecer , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
empezar § 469.	
emplastecer , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
emplumecer , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
empobrecer , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
empodrecer , " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
empoltronecerse , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
emporcar . . . " <i>trocar</i> , § 482.	
enaltecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
enardecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encabellecerse , <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encalvecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encallecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encandecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encanecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encarecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encarnecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encender <i>entender</i> , § 471.	
encentar " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	
encerrar " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.	
enclocar " <i>trocar</i> , § 482.	
encloquecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encomendar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	
encontrar " <i>contar</i> , § 477.	
encorar " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	
encordar " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.	

encorecer . . .	like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	enruinecerse, like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encornar . . .	" <i>acordar</i> , § 474.	ensalmorar . . .	" <i>volar</i> , § 476.
encovar . . .	" <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	ensandecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
encrudecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	ensangrentar, " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	
encruelecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	ensoberbecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
encubertar . . .	" <i>acertar</i> , § 458.	ensoñar . . .	" <i>sonar</i> , § 472.
endentar . . .	" <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	ensordecir . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
endenter . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	entallecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
endurecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	entender . . .	§ 471.
enfiercerse . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	entenebrece, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
enflaquecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	enternecer, . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
enfranquecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		enterrar . . .	" <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.
enfurecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	entigrecerse . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
engorar . . .	" <i>agorar</i> , § 488.	entontecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
engrandecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	entorpecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
engreírse . . .	" <i>reír</i> , § 520.	entortar . . .	" <i>acordar</i> , § 474.
engrosar . . .	" <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	entredecir . . .	" <i>decir</i> , § 539.
engrumecerse, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		pp. <i>entredicho</i> .	
engullir . . .	" <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.	entregerir . . .	" <i>herir</i> , § 500.
enhambrecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		entrelucir . . .	" <i>lucir</i> , § 374, d.
enhambrentar, " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.		entremorir . . .	" <i>morir</i> , § 509.
enhestar . . .	" <i>atestar</i> , § 462.	pp. <i>muerto</i> .	
enlénzar . . .	" <i>empezar</i> , § 469.	entreoir . . .	" <i>oir</i> , § 553.
enloquecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	entrepárecerse, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
enlucir . . .	" <i>lucir</i> , § 374, d.	entrepárrar . . .	" <i>acertar</i> , § 458.
enlentece, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		entreponer . . .	" <i>poner</i> , § 533.
enmagrecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	pp. <i>entrepuesto</i> .	
enmalecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	entretener . . .	" <i>tener</i> , § 536.
enmarillecerse, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		entrever . . .	" <i>ver</i> , § 548.
enmelar . . .	" <i>helar</i> , § 464.	pp. <i>entrevisto</i> .	
enmendar . . .	" <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	entristecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
enmohecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	entullecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
enmollece, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		entumecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
enmudecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	envanecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
ennegrecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	envejecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
ennoblece, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		enverdece, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
ennudecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	envestir . . .	" <i>servir</i> , § 513.
enorgullece, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		envilecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
enrarecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	envolver . . .	" <i>volver</i> , § 491.
enriquecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	pp. <i>envuelto</i> .	
enrobustecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		enzurdece, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
enrodar . . .	" <i>probar</i> , § 478.	equivaler . . .	" <i>váler</i> , § 547.
enrojecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	erguir . . .	§ 505.
enronquece, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		errar . . .	§ 466.
enroñecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	escabullirse . . .	" <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.

escandecer	like <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
escarmantar ,	" <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
escarnecer	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
esclarecer .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
escocer . . .	" <i>cocer</i>	§ 497.
escolar . . .	" <i>volar</i> ,	§ 476.
esforzar . . .	" <i>forzar</i> ,	§ 486.
establecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
estar		§ 382.
estatuir . . .	" <i>instituir</i> ,	§ 524.
estregar . . .	" <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
estremecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
estreñir . . .	" <i>ceñir</i> ,	§ 518.
excluir	" <i>huir</i> ,	§ 522.
expedir . . .	" <i>pedir</i> ,	§ 512.
exponer . . .	" <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>expuesto</i> .		
extender . . .	" <i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
extraer	" <i>traer</i> ,	§ 537.
extreñir . . .	" <i>ceñir</i> ,	§ 518.

F.

fallecer . . .	like <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
favorecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
feneecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
ferrar	" <i>cerrar</i> ,	§ 460.
floreecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
fluir	" <i>huir</i> ,	§ 522.
follar	" <i>hollar</i> ,	§ 475.
fortalecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
forzar		§ 486.
fregar	" <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
freir	" <i>reir</i> ,	§ 520.

pps. *freído* and *frito*.

G.

gañir	like <i>plañir</i> ,	§ 378, c.
gemecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
gemir	" <i>pedir</i> ,	§ 512.
gobernar . . .	" <i>acertar</i> ,	§ 458.
gruir	" <i>huir</i> ,	§ 522.
gruñir	" <i>plañir</i> ,	§ 378, c.
guañir	" <i>plañir</i> ,	§ 378, c.
guarecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
guarnecer . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.

H.

haber		§ 351.
hacendar . . .	like <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
hacer		§ 530.
pp. <i>hecho</i> .		
heder	" <i>perder</i> ,	§ 470.
helar		§ 464.
henchir . . .	§§ 378, d; 513.	
hender	" <i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
heñir	" <i>ceñir</i> ,	§ 518.
herbar	" <i>acertar</i> ,	§ 458.
herbecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
herir		§ 500.
herrar	" <i>cerrar</i> ,	§ 460.
hervir		§ 503.
holgar	" <i>rogar</i> ,	§ 483.
hollar		§ 475.
huir		§ 522.
humedecer . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.

I.

imbuir	like <i>atribuir</i> ,	§ 523.
impeidir . . .	" <i>pedir</i> ,	§ 512.
imponer . . .	" <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>impuesto</i> .		
improbar . . .	" <i>probar</i> ,	§ 478.
incensar . . .	" <i>pensar</i> ,	§ 457.
incluir	" <i>huir</i> ,	§ 522.
indisponer . .	" <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>indispuesto</i> .		
inducir	" <i>conducir</i> ,	§ 538.
inferir	" <i>herir</i> ,	§ 500.
infernar . . .	" <i>acertar</i> ,	§ 458.
infuir	" <i>huir</i> ,	§ 522.
ingerir	" <i>herir</i> ,	§ 500.

pp. *ingerto*.

inhestar . . .	" <i>atestar</i> ,	§ 462.
injerir	" <i>herir</i> ,	§ 500.
pp. <i>injerto</i> .		
inquirir . . .	" <i>adquirir</i> ,	§ 507.
inseguir . . .	" <i>seguir</i> ,	§ 516.
instituir . . .		§ 524.
instruir . . .	" <i>atribuir</i> ,	§ 523.
interdecir . .	" <i>decir</i> ,	§ 539.
pp. <i>interdicho</i> .		

interponer . . . like <i>poner</i> , § 533. pp. <i>interpuesto</i> .		mover § 489.	
intervenir . . . " <i>venir</i> , § 541.		muir like <i>huir</i> , § 522.	
introducir . . . " <i>conducir</i> , § 538.		mullir " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.	
invernar . . . " <i>acertar</i> , § 458.		muñir " <i>plañir</i> , § 378, c.	
invertir . . . " <i>advertir</i> , § 502.			N.
invertir . . . " <i>servir</i> , § 513.		nacer § 374, b.	
-ir § 552.		negar § 468.	
	J.	negrecer . . . like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
jimenzar . . . like <i>empezar</i> , § 469.		nevar § 417.	
jugar § 485.			O.
	L.	obedecer . . . like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
languidecer, like <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		obscurecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
leer " <i>creer</i> , § 549, b.		obstruir " <i>huir</i> , § 522.	
liquefacier . . . " <i>satisfacer</i> , § 531.		obtener " <i>tener</i> , § 536.	
lobreguecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		ofrecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
lucir § 374, d.		oir § 553.	
luir " <i>huir</i> , § 522.		oler § 494.	
	Ll.	oponer " <i>poner</i> , § 533.	
llover § 418.		pp. <i>opuesto</i> .	
	M.	oscurecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
maldecir . . . like <i>bendecir</i> , § 540.			P.
malherir . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.		pacar like <i>nacer</i> , § 374, b.	
malquerer . . . " <i>querer</i> , § 534.		padecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
malsonar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.		palidecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
maltraer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.		parecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
mancornar . . . " <i>acordar</i> , § 474.		pedir § 512.	
manifestar . . . " <i>atestar</i> , § 462.		pensar § 457.	
mantener . . . " <i>tener</i> , § 536.		perder § 470.	
mecer § 373.		perecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
medir " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.		permanecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
melar " <i>helar</i> , § 464.		perniquebrar, " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.	
mentar " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.		perseguir " <i>seguir</i> , § 516.	
mentir " <i>sentir</i> , § 499.		pertenecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
merecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		pervertir " <i>advertir</i> , § 502.	
merendar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.		pimpollecier . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
moblar " <i>contar</i> , § 477.		placer § 545.	
mohecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.		plañir § 378, c.	
moler § 492.		plastecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	
morder § 490.		plegar " <i>negar</i> , § 468.	
morir § 509.		poblar " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	
pp. <i>muerto</i> .		poder § 532.	
mostrar " <i>costar</i> , § 473.		podrecer " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	

podrir . . .	§ 510.	reaparecer . . . like <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374. a.
poner . . .	§ 533.	reapretar . . . " <i>apretar</i> ,	§ 461.
pp. <i>puesto</i> .		reaventar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
poseer . . .	§ 549. c.	rebendecir . . . " <i>bendecir</i> ,	§ 540.
posponer !. like <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.	reblandecir . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374. a.
pp. <i>pospuesto</i> .		rebullirse . . . " <i>bullir</i> ,	§ 378. a.
preconocer . . . " <i>conocer</i> ,	§ 374. c.	recaer . . . " <i>caer</i> ,	§ 544.
predecir . . . " <i>decir</i> ,	§ 539.	recalentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
pp. <i>predicho</i> .		recentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
predisponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.	receñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> ,	§ 518.
pp. <i>predispuesto</i> .		recluir . . . " <i>huir</i> ,	§ 522.
preferir . . . " <i>herir</i> ,	§ 500.	recocer . . . " <i>cocer</i> ,	§ 497.
prelucir . . . " <i>lucir</i> ,	§ 374. d.	recolar . . . " <i>volar</i> ,	§ 476.
premorir . . . " <i>morir</i> ,	§ 509.	recolegir . . . " <i>regir</i> ,	§ 515.
pp. <i>premuerto</i> .		recomendar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
preponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.	recomponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>prepuesto</i> .		pp. <i>recompuesto</i> .	
presentir . . . " <i>sentir</i> ,	§ 499.	reconducir . . . " <i>conducir</i> ,	§ 538.
presuponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.	reconocer . . . " <i>conocer</i> ,	§ 374. c.
pp. <i>presupuesto</i> .		reconstruir . . . " <i>huir</i> ,	§ 522.
prevalecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374. a.	recontar . . . " <i>contar</i> ,	§ 477.
prevaler . . . " <i>valer</i> ,	§ 547.	reconvalecer , " <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374. a.
prevenir . . . " <i>venir</i> ,	§ 541.	reconvenir . . . " <i>venir</i> ,	§ 541.
prever . . . " <i>ver</i> ,	§ 548.	recordar . . . " <i>acordar</i> ,	§ 474.
pp. <i>previsto</i> .		recostar . . . " <i>costar</i> ,	§ 473.
probar . . .	§ 478.	recrecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374. a.
producir . . . " <i>conducir</i> ,	§ 538.	recrudecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374. a.
proferir . . . " <i>herir</i> ,	§ 500.	redargüir . . . " <i>argüir</i> ,	§ 526.
promover . . . " <i>mover</i> ,	§ 489.	redoler . . . " <i>moler</i> ,	§ 492.
proponer . . . " <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.	reducir . . . " <i>conducir</i> ,	§ 538.
pp. <i>propuesto</i> .		reelegir . . . " <i>regir</i> ,	§ 515.
proseguir . . . " <i>seguir</i> ,	§ 516.	reencomendar , " <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
prostituir . . . " <i>instituir</i> ,	§ 524.	referir . . . " <i>herir</i> ,	§ 500.
proveer . . .	§ 549. a.	reflorecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374. a.
pps. <i>proveído</i> and <i>provisto</i> .		refluir . . . " <i>huir</i> ,	§ 522.
provenir . . . like <i>venir</i> ,	§ 541.	reforzar . . . " <i>forzar</i> ,	§ 486.
puđrir . . .	§ 510.	refregar . . . " <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
		refreir . . . " <i>reir</i> ,	§ 520.
		pp. <i>refreído</i> and <i>refrito</i> .	
		regañir . . . like <i>plañir</i> ,	§ 378. c.
		regar . . . " <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
		regimentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
		regir . . .	§ 515.
		regoldar . . . " <i>agorar</i> ,	§ 488.
		regruñir . . . " <i>plañir</i> ,	§ 378. c.

rehacer . . . like <i>hacer</i> , § 530.	resentirse . . . like <i>sentir</i> , § 499.
pp. <i>rehecho</i> .	resolver . . . " <i>volver</i> , § 491.
rehenchir . . . " <i>henchir</i> , § 378, d.	pp. <i>resuelto</i> .
reherir . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.	resollar . . . " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.
reherrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.	resonar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.
rehervir . . . " <i>hervir</i> , § 503.	resplandecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
rehollar . . . " <i>hollar</i> , § 475.	resquebrar . . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.
rehuir . . . " <i>huir</i> , § 522.	restablecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
rehumedecer, " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	restituir . . . " <i>instituir</i> , § 524.
reir § 520.	restregar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.
rejuvenecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	restrñir . . . " <i>plañir</i> , § 378, c.
relentecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	retallecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
relucir . . . " <i>lucir</i> , § 374, d.	retemblar . . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.
remendar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.	retener . . . " <i>tener</i> , § 530.
rementir . . . " <i>sentir</i> , § 499.	retentar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.
remolar . . . " <i>volar</i> , § 476.	reteñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> , § 518.
remoler . . . " <i>moler</i> , § 492.	retiñir . . . " <i>plañir</i> , § 378, c.
remorder . . . " <i>morder</i> , § 490.	retoñecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
remover . . . " <i>mover</i> , § 489.	retorcer . . . " <i>torcer</i> , § 496.
remullir . . . " <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.	retostar . . . " <i>costar</i> , § 473.
renacer . . . " <i>nacer</i> , § 374, b.	retraer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.
rendir . . . " <i>servir</i> , § 513.	retribuir . . . " <i>atribuir</i> , § 523.
renegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.	retronar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.
renovar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	retrotraer . . . " <i>traer</i> , § 537.
reñir . . . " <i>ceñir</i> , § 518.	revejecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
repacer . . . " <i>nacer</i> , § 374, b.	revenirse . . . " <i>venir</i> , § 541.
repadecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.	reventar . . . " <i>alentar</i> , § 459.
repedir . . . " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.	rever . . . " <i>ver</i> , § 548.
repensar . . . " <i>pensar</i> , § 457.	pp. <i>revisto</i> .
repetir . . . " <i>pedir</i> , § 512.	reverdecir . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
replegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.	reverter . . . " <i>perder</i> , § 470.
repoblar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.	revestir . . . " <i>servir</i> , § 513.
repodrir . . . " <i>podrir</i> , § 510.	revolar . . . " <i>volar</i> , § 476.
reponer . . . " <i>poner</i> , § 533.	revolcarse . . . " <i>trocar</i> , § 482.
pp. <i>repuesto</i> .	revolver . . . " <i>volver</i> , § 491.
reprobar . . . " <i>probar</i> , § 478.	pp. <i>revuelto</i> .
reproducir . . . " <i>conducir</i> , § 538.	robustecer . . . " <i>carecer</i> , § 374, a.
repudrir . . . " <i>podrir</i> , § 510.	rodar . . . " <i>sonar</i> , § 472.
requiebrar . . . " <i>cerrar</i> , § 460.	roer § 557.
requerer . . . " <i>querer</i> , § 534.	rogar § 483.
requerir . . . " <i>herir</i> , § 500.	
resaber . . . " <i>saber</i> , § 535.	S.
resalir . . . " <i>salir</i> , § 554.	saber § 535.
resegar . . . " <i>negar</i> , § 468.	salir § 554.
resembrar . . . " <i>sembrar</i> , § 463.	salpimentar . like <i>alentar</i> , § 459.

salpullir . . .	like <i>bullir</i> ,	§ 378, a.
sarmentar . . .	" <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
sarpullir . . .	" <i>bullir</i> ,	§ 378, a.
satisfacer . . .		§ 531.
pp. <i>satisfecho</i> .		
segar	" <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
seguir		§ 516.
sembrar		§ 463.
sementar	" <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
sentar	" <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
sentir		§ 499.
ser		§ 385.
serrar	" <i>cerrar</i> ,	§ 460.
servir		§ 513.
simenzar	" <i>empezar</i> ,	§ 469.
sobrecrecer . . .	" <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
sobreentender,"	<i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
sobrentender,"	<i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
sobreponer . . .	" <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>sobrepuesto</i> .		
sobresalir	" <i>salir</i> ,	§ 554.
sobresembrar,"	<i>sembrar</i> ,	§ 463.
sobresolar	" <i>volar</i> ,	§ 476.
sobrevenir	" <i>venir</i> ,	§ 541.
sobreventar . . .	" <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
sobreverse,"	<i>perder</i> ,	§ 470.
sobrevestir	" <i>sentir</i> ,	§ 499.
sofreir	" <i>reir</i> ,	§ 520.
pps. <i>sofreido</i> and <i>sofrito</i> .		
solar	like <i>volar</i> ,	§ 476.
soldar	" <i>acordar</i> ,	§ 474.
soler		§ 559.
soltar	" <i>acordar</i> ,	§ 474.
[solver]	" <i>volver</i> ,	§ 491.
pp. <i>suelto</i> .		
sollar	" <i>hollar</i> ,	§ 475.
somover	" <i>mover</i> ,	§ 489.
sonar		§ 472.
sonreir	" <i>reir</i> ,	§ 520.
sonrodarse	" <i>volar</i> ,	§ 476.
sonar	" <i>sonar</i> ,	§ 472.
sorregar	" <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
sosegar	" <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
sostener	" <i>tener</i> ,	§ 536.
soterrar	" <i>cerrar</i> ,	§ 460.

subarrendar . like	<i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
subentender . . .	" <i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
subseguir	" <i>seguir</i> ,	§ 516.
substituir	" <i>instituir</i> ,	§ 524.
substraer	" <i>traer</i> ,	§ 537.
subtender	" <i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
subvenir	" <i>venir</i> ,	§ 541.
subvertir	" <i>advertir</i> ,	§ 502.
sugerir	" <i>herir</i> ,	§ 500.
superponer	" <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>superpuesto</i> .		
supervenir	" <i>venir</i> ,	§ 541.
suponer	" <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>supuesto</i> .		
sustituir	" <i>instituir</i> ,	§ 524.
sustraer	" <i>traer</i> ,	§ 537.

T.

tallecer	like <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
tañer		§ 378, b.
temblar	" <i>sembrar</i> ,	§ 463.
tender	" <i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
tener		§ 536.
tentar	" <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
teñir	" <i>ceñir</i> ,	§ 518.
torcer		§ 496.
tostar	" <i>costar</i> ,	§ 473.
traducir	" <i>conducir</i> ,	§ 538.
traer		§ 537.
transcender	" <i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
transfregar	" <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
translucirse	" <i>lucir</i> ,	§ 374, d.
transponer	" <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>transpuesto</i> .		
trascender	" <i>entender</i> ,	§ 471.
trascolar	" <i>volar</i> ,	§ 476.
trascordarse,"	<i>acordar</i> ,	§ 474.
trasegar	" <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
trasferir	" <i>herir</i> ,	§ 500.
trasfregar	" <i>negar</i> ,	§ 468.
traslucir	" <i>lucir</i> ,	§ 374, d.
trasoir	" <i>oir</i> ,	§ 553.
trasonar	" <i>sonar</i> ,	§ 472.
trasponer	" <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>traspuesto</i> .		

trastrocar	. like <i>trocar</i> ,	§ 482.
trasverter	. " <i>perder</i> ,	§ 470.
trasvolar	. " <i>volar</i> ,	§ 476.
travesar	. " <i>acertar</i> ,	§ 458.
trocar	. . . . .	§ 482.
tronar	. . . . .	§ 472.
tropezar	. . . . .	§ 469.
tullir	. . . . .	§ 378, a.
tumefacerse ,	" <i>satisfacer</i> ,	§ 531.
pp. <i>tumefecho</i> .		

V.

valer	. . . . .	§ 547.
venir	. . . . .	§ 541.
ventar	. . . like <i>alentar</i> ,	§ 459.
ver	. . . . .	§ 548.
pp. <i>visto</i> .		

verdecen	. . . like <i>carecer</i> ,	§ 374, a.
verter	. . . . .	" <i>perder</i> , § 470.
vestir	. . . . .	" <i>servir</i> , § 513.
volar	. . . . .	§ 476.
volcar	. . . . .	" <i>trocar</i> , § 482.
volver	. . . . .	§ 491.
pp. <i>vuelto</i> .		

Y.

yacer	. . . . .	§ 550.
yuxtaponer	. like <i>poner</i> ,	§ 533.
pp. <i>yuxtapuesto</i> .		

Z.

zabullir	. . . like <i>bullir</i> ,	§ 378, a.
zaherir	. . . . .	" <i>herir</i> , § 500.
zambullirse	. . . . .	" <i>bullir</i> , § 378, a.

The Adverb.

575. Adverbs may be classed according to their **form** and **signification**.

576. With reference to their *form*, adverbs are **simple** or **compound**.

577. *Simple* adverbs are further divisible into **primitive** and **derivative**.

578. A *primitive* adverb is one that is expressed by an originally single word, without affixes or etymological adhesions, as :—

sí; no; bien; mal; luego, | **yes; no; well; badly; presently.**

a. Some adverbs, though simple in form, are etymologically compound :—

acaso (from á caso), <i>perchance.</i>	|	despacio (de espacio), <i>slowly.</i>
amenudo (á menudo), <i>often.</i>	|	apénas (á penas), <i>scarcely.</i>

b. Many simple adverbs are properly neuter adjectives temporarily used as adverbs :—

alto , <i>aloud.</i>	|	mucho , <i>much.</i>	|	sólo , <i>only.</i>
bajo , <i>low.</i>	|	poco , <i>little.</i>	|	súbito , <i>suddenly.</i>
falso , <i>out of tune.</i>	|	pronto , <i>soon.</i>	|	temprano , <i>early.</i>

579. *Derivative* adverbs are formed principally from common adjectives by applying to them the affix **-mente** (corresponding to the English ending *-ly*), agreeably to the following laws :—

a. Common adjectives in *o* (fem. *a*) attach the affix to the feminine form :—

franco ;	francamente,	frank ;	frankly.
orgullosa ;	orgullosamente,	proud ;	proudly.
gracioso ;	graciosamente,	graceful ;	gracefully.
acertado ;	acertadamente,	appropriate ;	appropriately.
cierto ;	ciertamente,	sure ;	surely.

REMARK. — Common adjectives of two terminations that do not end in *-o*, form their adverbs by a circumlocution with **manera**, *manner*, never in **-mente** :—

burlon, a, *roguish* — **de una manera burlona**, *roguishly*.

b. If the adjective be of one termination for both genders, the affix is applied to the common form :—

prudente ;	prudentemente,	prudent ;	prudently.
cortés ;	cortésmente,	polite ;	politely.
fácil ;	fácilmente,	easy ;	easily.
feliz ;	felizmente,	happy ;	happily.
fiel ;	fielmente,	faithful ;	faithfully.

REMARK. — The affix **-mente** is originally the ablative singular of the Latin feminine noun **mens**, the *mind*, which finally passed over into the popular signification of *manner*, replacing the classic endings *-ter*, *-e*, etc. Thus :—

certâ mente , ciertamente,	felici mente , felizmente.
facili mente , fácilmente.	fideli mente , fielmente.

At different periods of the Spanish language, the affix was variously written *mientre*, *miente*, and *mente*, and was generally separated from the adjective till about the beginning of the fifteenth century.

580. The affix **-mente** is **atonic**, and does not, therefore, modify, in any way, the accent or structure of the adjective :—

ásperamente ; fácilmente ,	harshly ; easily.
útilmente ; cortésmente ,	usefully ; politely.
ciértamente ; certísimamente ,	surely ; very surely.
fuértamente ; fortísimamente ,	strongly ; most strongly.

581. When two or more adverbs in *-mente* follow one another connected by a conjunction, the affix is applied to the last adjective only:—

clara y distintamente,	clearly and distinctly.
justa ó injustamente,	justly or unjustly.
prudente pero terminantemente,	prudently, but decidedly.

582. Adverbs in *-mente* usually express **manner**, and in this sense may be equally turned into adverbial phrases by employing the adjective with the noun **manera** or **modo**, *way, manner*:—

seguramente, **de una manera segura**, *or de un modo seguro*.
 terminantemente, **de una manera** (*or de un modo*) **terminante**.
 justa y verdaderamente, *or de un modo justo y verdadero*.

583. Adjectives derived from the names of countries, provinces, and cities, are made adverbs of manner by assuming the dative singular feminine with the definite article, agreeing with some noun understood like **usanza**, *usage, style, fashion*:—

á la española,	in the Spanish fashion.
á la francesa,	in the French style.
á la valenciana,	after the mode of Valencia.
á la andaluza,	in the Andalusian style.

These forms correspond to the Latin *more hispanico, gallico, valentino, bætico*.

REMARK.—The same idea may be rendered by the phrase **al estilo** followed by the adjective, or **al estilo de** followed by the proper noun:—

al estilo andaluz,	in the Andalusian style.
al estilo de Castilla,	after the manner of Castile.

584. Many common adjectives assume the feminine formula with *á la*, when they express *manner*, and adopt the adverbial affix when they indicate *time*:—

<i>á la antigua</i> , <i>á la moderna</i> ,	in ancient — modern — style.
<i>antiguamente</i> ; <i>modernamente</i> ,	anciently; in recent times.

585. A few adjectives derived from proper nouns also admit the adverbial formula *á la*:—

<i>andar á la jineta</i> , ¹	to ride with short stirrups.
<i>vestido á la maja</i> , ²	dressed picturesquely.

586. A very few derivative adverbs have the inorganic affix *s*, which belongs to a comparatively late period in the development of the language:—

OLD.	MODERN.	
<i>ante</i> ;	<i>antes</i> ,	formerly; rather.
<i>dempues</i> (<i>de-in-post</i>);	<i>despues</i> ,	afterwards; since.
<i>dende</i> (<i>de-inde</i>);	<i>desde</i> ,	since.
<i>estonce</i> (<i>ex tunc</i>);	<i>entonces</i> ,	then.
<i>mientras</i> ([<i>du</i>] <i>m interim</i>); ³	<i>mientras</i> ,	while.
<i>quizab</i> (<i>quis sapit</i>);	<i>quizás and quiza</i> ,	perhaps.

REMARK. — In the adverb *léjos*, *far*, *far off*, the *s* is organic, the word being from *laxius*, — by attraction, *laixus* and *lexos*, — the form in which it was written prior to the appearance of the Academy's *Dictionary* in 1726–39.

¹ The *jinete* or *ginete* is a name derived from that of a Barbary clan, — the *Beni-Zenēta*, — once the famous Moorish cavalry of Spain, characterized, aside from their armor, by their peculiar mode of riding, so that *andar á la jineta* now means *to ride with short stirrups*, after the manner of the "Zeneta" family.

² The "Maja" and "Manola" are Spanish types of women now only to be met with, as such, in the plays of Ramon de la Cruz, or on the boards of the Madrid theatres. In their fatigue uniforms of plain *percalina*, their descendants are soberly employed in the government tobacco factories.

³ Compare *Mingo*, old Spanish for *Domingo*, *Dominic*.

587. *Compound* adverbs consist of two or more words variously associated, as substantives, adjectives, and adverbs with prepositions, adverbs with adverbs, etc.

a. With the article:—

á la clara, } manifestly.
 á las claras, }
 á la larga, *in the long run*.
 á la ligera, *superficially*.
 á la moda, *in fashion*.
 á la verdad, *truly*.
 al contado, *in cash, cash*.
 al momento, *instantly*.
 al paso, *at a walk, slowly*.

al punto, *immediately*.
 al revés, *on the other side*.
 al vivo, *to the life*.
 á lo divino, *in the sacred style*.
 en el acto, *instantly*.
 en lo sucesivo, *henceforward*.
 por lo más, *at most*.
 por lo ménos, *at least*.
 por lo pronto, *for the present*.

b. Without the article, singular:—

á caballo, *on horseback*.
 á conciencia, *conscientiously*.
 á escape, *in haste, quick*.
 á menudo, *often*.
 á pié, *on foot*.
 á porfía, *persistently*.
 á una, *together*.
 con ligereza, *superficially*.
 con todo, *notwithstanding*.
 de antemano, *beforehand*.
 de buena gana, *willingly*.
 de continuo, *continually*.
 de día, *by day*.
 de etiqueta, *in full dress*.
 de frente, *face to face*.
 de golpe, *suddenly*.
 de hecho, *de facto, truly*.
 de improviso, *off one's guard*.
 de lance, *at a bargain*.
 de molde, *perfectly*.
 de noche, *by night*.
 de nuevo, *anew*.

de paso, *on one's way*.
 de prisa, *in haste*.
 de pronto, *quickly*.
 de propósito, *purposely*.
 de raíz, *radically*.
 de seguro, *surely*.
 de suyo, *of one's own accord*.
 de todo punto, *wholly*.
 de tropel, *pell-mell*.
 de vista, *by sight*.
 en fin, *finally*.
 en resumen, *in short*.
 en seguida, *at once*.
 por alto, *over*.
 por cierto, *certainly, of course*.
 por consiguiente, *consequently*.
 por mayor, *at wholesale*.
 por menor, *at retail*.
 por supuesto, *of course*.
 por último, *lastly*.
 por ventura, *peradventure*.
 sin novedad, *as usual*.

c. Without the article, plural:—

á ciegas, <i>blindly</i> .	á sabiendas, <i>wittingly, knowing-</i>
á coces, <i>with kicks, kicking</i> .	á secas, <i>plainly, plain</i> . ¹ [ly.
á cuestras, <i>on one's shoulders</i> .	á solas, <i>alone, in private</i> .
á escondidas, <i>secretly</i> .	á tientas, <i>feeling one's way</i> .
á escondillas, <i>stealthily</i> .	á voces, <i>aloud</i> .
á gatas, <i>on all fours</i> .	de oídas, <i>by hearsay, report</i> .
á hurtadillas, <i>stealthily</i> .	de rodillas, <i>on one's knees</i> .
á oscuras, <i>in the dark</i> .	de veras, <i>truly</i> .
á pié juntillas, <i>firmly</i> .	en ayunas, <i>agot, uninformed</i> .
á ojos cerrados, <i>blindly</i> .	en cueros, <i>naked</i> .
á trechos, <i>at intervals</i> .	por momentos, <i>every moment</i> .

588. To these may be added a few Latin technical terms, some of them more or less corrupted:—

alias, ² <i>otherwise called</i> .	infraganti (flagranti delicto), <i>in the act</i> .
ex profeso, <i>purposely</i> .	interin, <i>meanwhile</i> .
grátis, <i>gratis</i> .	item and iten, <i>furthermore</i> .
inclusive, <i>inclusive</i> .	máxime, <i>especially</i> .
incontinenti, <i>at once</i> .	

589. With reference to their *signification*, adverbs may be variously classed as:—

a. Adverbs of *time*:—

ahora; entónces,	now; then.
amenudo; raras veces,	often; seldom.
anoche; anteanoche,	last night; night before last.
ántes; despues,	before; afterward.
ayer; anteayer,	yesterday; day before yesterday.
hoy; mañana,	to-day; to-morrow.
siempre; nunca,	always; never.
tarde; temprano,	late; early.

¹ As: se llamó Amadis á secas, *he called himself plain Amadis*.

² Always written in abbreviation and between parentheses; as, José Blanco (a) Pepito el Chico, *Joseph White, alias "Little Joe."*

b. Adverbs of place:—

adelante; atrás,	forward; backward.
á derecha; á izquierda,	on the right; on the left.
aquí, allí; acá, allá,	here, there; hither, thither.
arriba; abajo; encima; debajo,	up; down; above; below.
cerca; léjos; dentro; fuera,	near; far; within; without.

c. Adverbs of manner:—

así; como,	so; as.
alto, <i>or</i> en alta voz,	aloud, <i>or</i> audibly.
bajo, <i>or</i> en voz baja,	low, <i>or</i> in a low tone.
bien; mal,	well; badly <i>or</i> ill.
con el aliento,	in a whisper.
mejor; peor,	better; worse.

and most adverbs in *-mente*.

d. Adverbs of quantity:—

mucho; muy; poco,	much; very; little.
ménos; por lo menos,	less; at least.
más; por lo más,	more; at most.
demasiado, <i>or</i> sobrado,	too; too much.
bastante; harto (<i>asaz, obs.</i>),	enough; sufficiently.
algo; como; apénas,	somewhat; about; scarcely.

e. Adverbs of affirmation and negation:—

sí; eso sí; justo; claro,	yes; that indeed; true; of course.
por supuesto; por cierto,	of course; certainly.
ciertamente; verdaderamente,	surely; truly.
sin duda,	undoubtedly.
no; eso no; nada,	no; not that; not at all.
tampoco; ni yo tampoco,	no; nor I either.
nunca; jamás,	never.

f. Adverbs of doubt:—

acaso; tal vez, <i>or</i> quizás,	perchance; perhaps.
apénas; probablemente,	hardly; probably.
difícilmente,	unlikely, improbably.

590. There are also in Spanish a great number of adverbial phrases like the following :—

á más correr, <i>at one's utmost speed.</i>	[<i>might.</i>]	en alguna parte, <i>somewhere.</i>
á más no poder, <i>with all one's</i>		en cualquier parte, <i>anywhere.</i>
á más tardar, <i>at the latest.</i>		en ninguna parte, }
cuando ménos, <i>at least.</i>		en parte alguna, } <i>nowhere.</i>
cuanto ántes, <i>as soon as possible.</i>		en otra parte, <i>elsewhere.</i>
de acá para allá, <i>hither and thither.</i>		hoy día, } <i>at the present day,</i>
de aquí para allí, <i>here and there.</i>		hoy en día, } <i>now-a-days.</i>
de cuando en cuando, } <i>now and</i>		luego á luego, <i>little by little (time).</i>
de vez en cuando, } <i>then.</i>		paso á paso, <i>step by step, slowly.</i>
de hito-en hito, (to look) <i>through</i>		poco á poco, <i>little by little (de-</i>
<i>and through.</i>	[<i>through.</i>]	<i>gree).</i>
de parte á parte, (to thrust)		uno á uno, <i>one by one, one after</i>
		<i>another.</i>

591. Adverbs in *-mente* are frequently replaced by a phrase composed of the preposition **con**, *with*, and the appropriate noun :—

francamente,	or	con franqueza,	frankly.
maliciosamente,	or	con malicia,	maliciously.
rápidamente,	or	con rapidéz,	rapidly.
recelosamente,	or	con recelo,	apprehensively.
enojosamente,	or	con enojo,	angrily.
cautelosamente,	or	con cautela,	circumspectly.

Use of Certain Adverbs.

592. Some adverbs stand after nouns in the sense of “up” and “down,” “out” and “in,” “before” and “after,” etc :—

escalera arriba, <i>up stairs.</i>	mar afuera, <i>seaward.</i>
escalera abajo, <i>down stairs.</i>	camino adelante, <i>onward.</i>
cuesta arriba, <i>up hill.</i>	meses ántes, <i>months before.</i>
ciudad abajo, <i>down town.</i>	días despues, <i>days afterwards.</i>
tierra adentro, <i>inland.</i>	años atrás, <i>years back, ago.</i>

593. The words **acaso** in the modern language, and **por ventura** in the quainter style, both meaning *forsooth, pray*, are often mere interrogative signs, and as such need not be translated:—

¿ acaso soy yo el que tengo la culpa?	am I the one to blame (forsooth)?
¿ acaso no me entiende V.?	don't you understand me?
¿es hora esta por ventura de hallar la puerta abierta?	is this an hour to find the door open?
¿y habéisla visto algun día por ventura ?	and have ye seen her at any time, pray?

594. **Aquí, ahí, and allí**, with verbs of rest, bear the same relation to each other that the demonstratives *este, ese, and aquel*, do. With verbs of motion, they properly assume the forms **acá, ahí, allá**:—

REST.	MOTION.	
aquí,	acá,	here (where <i>I</i> am).
ahí,	ahí,	there (where <i>you</i> are).
allí,	allá,	there (distant from both).
por aquí,	por acá,	this way, here, hereabouts.
por ahí,	por ahí,	that way, there, thereabouts.
por allí,	por allá,	that way, there, thereabouts.
aquí está,		here he is, }
viene acá ,		here he comes, } (where <i>I</i> am).
ahí está,		there he is, }
ahí va,		there he goes, } (where <i>you</i> are).
allí está,		there he is, }
allá va,		there he goes, } (distant from both).
¿vive V. por aquí ?		do you live hereabouts?
coloque V. eso por ahí ,		set that there, somewhere.

REMARK.—**Por ahí** has also certain vague meanings referring to the whereabouts of persons and things, not easily translated. It is conveniently used when we do not know or wish to declare where a person or thing is, as well in a favorable as in an unfavorable sense:—

¿dónde está fulano?—estará por ahí,	where is so and so?—I presume he's off somewhere.
anda por ahí como siempre,	he is at his old haunts. [where.
la cesta está por ahí fuera,	the basket is out there some-

a. We may say **aquí en**, *here in* (Madrid, where *I* am); **ahí en**, *there in* (Valparaíso, where *you* are); but **allá en**, *there in* (California, where *neither* is) — never **alli en**. In good English, the adverb is usually omitted in such cases:—

aquí en Filadélfia,	(here) in Philadelphia.
ahí en Sevilla,	(there) in Seville.
allá en Bóston,	(there) in Boston.

b. By the same principle, **de aquí** means *from here*, or *hence* (from what *I* have said); **de ahí**, *thence* (from what *you* have said); and **de allí**, *from there, thence* (from what *has been* said).

595. Donde, *where*, is either an interrogative adverb of place, or a relative signifying *which*. Its meaning is rendered specific by prepositions like **á**, *to*; **en**, *in*; **de**, *from*, and **por**, *through*:—

Interrogative.

¿dónde vive V.?	where do you live? (<i>rest.</i>)
¿á dónde va V.?	where are you going? (<i>motion.</i>)
¿de dónde viene V.?	where do you come from?
¿por dónde pasa V.?	which way do you go?

Relative.

la calle donde, or en donde vive,	the street where or in which he lives.
la calle á donde va,	the street to which he goes.
la calle de donde viene,	the street from which he comes.
las calles por donde pasa,	the streets through which he passes.

REMARK. — **Donde** assumes the graphic accent only when it is interrogative in a direct or indirect sentence : —

¿ dónde vive?	where does he live?
no sé dónde vive,	I do not know where he lives.
¿ á dónde va?	where is he going?
ignoro á dónde vaya,	I do not know where he is going.

596. The adverbs *ago*, *since*, are expressed by certain tenses of the verbs **hacer** and **haber** used impersonally : —

<i>hacer</i>	<i>haber</i>	
hace cuatro días,	cuatro días há ,	four days ago.
hace mucho tiempo,	mucho tiempo há ,	long ago.
hacía un mes,	un mes había ,	(it was) a month ago.
hará seis años,	seis años habrá ,	(it will be) six years ago.

597. **Mismo** qualifies such adverbs of time and place as *ahora*, *hoy*, *ayer*, *mañana*, *aquí*, *allí*, etc. : —

ahora mismo ; hoy mismo ,	this very moment ; — day.
ayer mismo ; mañana mismo ,	only yesterday ; to-morrow surely.
aquí mismo ; allí mismo ,	in this — that — very place.

598. **Muy**, *very*, *very much*, qualifies adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial expressions, in the *positive* degree : —

muy bueno ; muy bien,	very good ; very well.
muy amado ; muy alegremente,	very much beloved ; very gaily.
muy á la ligera,	very rapidly, superficially.

a. Likewise past participles of verbs conjugated with *ser*, *estar*, or their substitutes : —

es muy amado,	he is very much beloved.
estaba muy afligido,	he was very much grieved.
se quedó muy satisfecho,	he was very well satisfied.
muy airado ; muy exaltado,	very much angered — excited.

599. Mucho, much, and muchísimo, very much, qualify adjectives, adverbs, and adverbial phrases, in the *comparative* degree:—

mucho mejor; mucho peor,	much better; much worse.
mucho más; mucho menos,	much more; much less.
mucho más contento,	much better pleased.
muchísimo mejor — peor,	very much better — worse.

a. Likewise verbs, and past participles conjugated with *haber*:—

lo siento mucho — muchísimo ,	I regret it much — very much.
no conviene hablar mucho ,	it is not fitting to talk much.
se ha quejado mucho ,	he complained a good deal.
han sufrido muchísimo ,	they endured very much.

a. *Muy* cannot qualify *mucho*, in the present state of the language; *very much, a great deal*, must be expressed by the superlative **muchísimo**:—

pide muchísimo ,	he demands a great deal.
padece muchísimo ,	he suffers very much.

b. *Muy* can never stand alone without an adjective or an adverb; in such case it is always replaced by *mucho* in the signification of *muy*:—

¿es divertido el cuento?— mucho ,	is the story amusing?—very.
¿está muy triste?—sí, mucho ,	is he very sad?—yes, very;
but not <i>mucho</i> divertido, <i>mucho</i> triste.	

600. Recientemente, recently, is reduced to **recien** when standing as an adverb before participial adjectives:—

llegó recientemente ,	he arrived recently.
el recien llegado,	the newly-arrived person.
un niño recien nacido,	a new-born child.
los recien venidos,	the new comers.
los recien casados,	the newly-married pair.
casas recien construidas,	newly-built houses.

601. The conjunction **si**, *if*, is often employed adverbially to mean *why*, expressive of wonder, surprise, or it may have the force of an expletive : —

si no he dicho nada,	why, I did not say anything.
si lo acabo de ver,	why, I just saw it.
pero, señores, si no lo he dicho todavía.	but, gentlemen, I have not mentioned it yet.

602. **Si** (with the graphic accent) signifies *yes*, and may be strengthened and emphasized by adding particles like *tal*, *que*, or by its position. It is then translated by *yes*, *indeed*, or by one of the modal auxiliaries *do*, *did*, *would*, etc. : —

¿lo ve V. ya? —	sí tal , sí que lo veo, lo veo, sí ,	do you see it now? —	{ I do. indeed, I do. yes, I do.
¿vendrá V.? —	sí tal , sí que vendré, vendré, sí ,	will you come? —	{ I will. indeed, I will. yes, I will.
¿le conviene á V. esto? —	eso sí que me conviene,	does this suit you? —	that, indeed, does suit me.
¿le gustan á V. los cuadros? —	esos sí que me gustan,	do you like the pictures? —	those, I do, indeed.

a. In contrasted clauses, **si** is likewise equivalent to *indeed*, *I grant*, *I concede*, or to any appropriate modal auxiliary : —

pobre, sí ; pero honrado como ninguno, ¹	poor, it is true; but second to none in integrity.
vendré, sí ; pero no hoy,	I will come; but not to-day.
es licencia, sí ; pero no poética,	it is a license, I grant you; but not a poetical one.
él no lo quiso; yo, sí ,	he did not wish to; I did.
estos, sí ; pero no aquellos,	these, indeed; but not those.

¹ In the dialect of the illiterate, *probe sí*; *pero honrão como denguno*.

b. After verbs of declaring, believing, suspecting, fearing, and so forth, the adverbs **sí** and **no** are joined to such verbs by means of the conjunction **que**, *that*, and are translated by *yes* or *so*, *not*, or by the appropriate modal auxiliary :—

dice **que sí**, — **que no**,

creo **que sí**, — **que no**,

{ he says "yes," — "no," *or*
 { "that he will," — "will not."
 { I think so, — not, *or*
 { that I (he) will, — will not.

Negation in Spanish.

603. **No** signifies *not*, and always stands before the verb, or in default of the verb, after a subject-pronoun :—

no tengo; ¿**no** tengo yo?

no lo tengo; ¿**no** lo tengo yo?

yo **no**; ellos **no**,

I have not; have I not?

I have it not; have I it not?

not I; not they.

604. Two negatives strengthen one another in Spanish. Therefore adverbs like **ni**, *neither, nor*; **nunca** or **jamás**, *never*; **nada**, *nothing, not anything*, require the verb to be made negative when they stand after the verb; but, if they stand before it, the negative is not required :—

no tengo **ni** pluma **ni** papel, }

no tengo pluma **ni** papel, }

ni pluma **ni** papel tengo, }

no le he visto **nunca**, }

nunca le he visto, }

no me lo dijo **jamás**, }

jamás me lo dijo, }

tal obra **jamás** la tuvo entre sus
libros,

no nos hace falta **nada**, }

nada nos hace falta, }

I have neither pen nor paper.

I have never seen him.

he never told me so.

he never had such a work among
his books.

we lack nothing (nothing is
wanting to us).

a. *Nunca* and *jamás* may be associated in the same sentence to emphasize a negation:—

ya no le hablaré nunca jamás ,	I shall <i>never</i> speak to him again.
nunca jamás se lo volveré á decir,	I shall never say it to him again.

b. Instead of *nunca* or *jamás*, the term **en mi vida**, without a negative expressed, is frequently employed for *never*, *never in my life*:—

en mi vida he dicho semejante cosa,	I never said such a thing.
en mi vida me había visto señor de tanto dinero junto,	never before was I master of so much money at one time.

c. *Nunca*, *jamás*, and *en mi vida*, signify, on the other hand, **ever**, in clauses containing **sin**, *without*; **ni** or **tampoco**, *nor*; in interrogative and exclamatory sentences expecting negative answers, and after comparatives or superlatives:—

sin que diga nunca lo que piensa,	without his ever saying what he thinks.
sin haberle visto jamás ,	without ever having seen him.
¿cómo podré pagar nunca todo lo que le debo?	how can I ever pay all that I owe him?
¿podría yo ir jamás á un sitio tal?	could I ever go to such a place?
tampoco se diga nunca que yo le haya faltado,	nor let it ever be said that I have slighted him.
hoy está peor que nunca ,	he is worse to-day than ever.
tiene la figura más mala que en mi vida he visto,	he has the worst countenance that I ever saw.
(un animal) el más adornada que en mi vida he visto,	(an animal) the most adorned with trappings I ever saw.

605. **Siquiera**, *even*, *at least*, may be employed affirmatively or negatively with **no** and **ni**:—

le rogué me hiciese el favor una vez siquiera ,	[ra,	I begged him to do me the favor once at least. [(five cents).
no quiso rebajar un real siquiera		he would not take off even a <i>real</i>
ni siquiera una vez, <i>or</i> }		not even once.
ni una vez siquiera ,		
ni un real siquiera , <i>or</i> }		not one real even.
ni siquiera un real,		
no le ofreci ni uno siquiera ,		I did not promise him one even.

606. Tampoco, nor — *either, no*, can be used with *no* and *ni* when it closes a negative phrase, and without them when it begins one. In a series of two or more negative answers, it replaces the adverb *no* after the first : —

ni yo tampoco ,		nor I either.
¿quiere V. este libro? — no. Y		do you want this book? — no.
ese? — tampoco ,		And that one? — no.
no quiero ese libro tampoco , <i>or</i>		I do not want that book, either, <i>or</i>
tampoco quiero ese libro,		nor do I want that book.

607. Ya, already, now (Lat. *jam*), means, with a negative, *no longer, not any longer, not* — *now* : —

ya no me habla,	he does not speak to me now.
ya no hace falta,	I don't need it any more.

608. Certain verbs, in association with others, are translated into English by adverbial expressions. Such are : **volver á**, followed by an infinitive, meaning *again* ; **acabar de**, followed likewise by an infinitive and equivalent to *to have just*, while the infinitive is translated by the past participle : —

vuelve á hablar ; á escribir,	he speaks again ; writes again.
acaba de salir ; de entrar,	he has just gone out ; come in.
acababa de llegar,	he had just arrived.

(*literally*, he returns to speak ; he finishes to go out.)

Comparison of Adverbs.

609. Adverbs, like adjectives, have the three usual degrees of comparison, but without variation for gender and number :—

Positive.	Comparative.
cerca, <i>near</i> . lédjos, <i>far, far off</i> . claro, <i>clearly</i> . doctamente, <i>learnedly</i> . fielmente, <i>faithfully</i> .	más cerca, <i>nearer</i> . más léjos, <i>farther, farther off</i> . más claro, <i>more clearly</i> . más doctamente, <i>more learnedly</i> . más fielmente, <i>more faithfully</i> .
Superlative Relative.	Superlative Absolute.
(lo) más cerca, <i>the nearest</i> . (lo) más léjos, <i>the farthest off</i> . (lo) más claro, <i>the most clearly</i> . [<i>edly</i> . (lo) más doctamente, <i>the most learn-</i> (lo) más fielmente, <i>the most faithfully</i> .	cerquísimo (§ 180, <i>b</i>), <i>very near</i> . lejísimo, <i>very far off</i> . clarísimo, <i>very clearly</i> . doctísimamente, <i>very learnedly</i> . fidelísimamente, <i>very faithfully</i> .

610. Four adverbs have an independent organic comparison :—

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative Relative.	Superlative Absolute.
mucho, <i>much</i> . poco, <i>little</i> . bien, <i>well</i> . mal, <i>badly</i> .	más, <i>more</i> . ménos, <i>less</i> . mejor, ¹ <i>better</i> . peor, ² <i>worse</i> .	(lo) más, <i>the most</i> . (lo) ménos, <i>the least</i> . (lo) mejor, <i>the best</i> . (lo) peor, ² <i>the worst</i> .	muchísimo, <i>very much</i> . poquísimo, <i>very little</i> . — — — malísimo, <i>very badly</i> .

611. Another form of the superlative absolute is constructed by associating with the positive one of the

¹ Más bien, like *antes*, means *rather*.

² Occasionally *más mal*, *worse or worst*.

adverbs **muy**, **bien**, *very*; **bastante**, **harto**, *quite*, *sufficiently*; **sumamente**, *exceedingly*; etc. :—

muy cerca; **bien** claro,
bastante léjos,
sumamente bien,

very near; very clearly.
a good way off, quite far.
exceedingly well.

REMARK. — A kind of superlative absolute is found in the repetition of certain adverbs :—

bien bien, *very well*.
casi casi, *very nearly*.
de par en par, *wide open*.

luego luego, *very soon*.
lo ménos lo ménos, *the very least*.
ya ya, *very truly, quite so*.

612. Comparative formulæ are :—

613. Equality, with adverbs: **tan** — **como**, *as* — *as*; **no** — **ménos** — **que**, *not* — *less* — *than* :—

escribe **tan** bien **como** V.,
vive **tan** léjos **como** nosotros,
lee **tan** corrientemente **como** su
maestro, [yo,
no viene **ménos** amenudo **que**
no trabaja con **ménos** asiduidad
que el oficial (§ 624),

he writes as well as you.
he lives as far off as we.
he reads as fluently as his teacher. [I do.
he does not come less often than
he does not work less steadily
than the journeyman.

a. With verbs: **tanto** **como**, or **tanto** **cuanto**, *as much as*; **no** — **ménos** **que**, *not* — *less than* :—

estudia **tanto** **como** (or **cuanto**) su hermano,
no trabajo **ménos** **que** V.,

he studies as much as his brother.
I do not work less than you.

614. Superiority, with adverbs: **más** — **que**, *more than* :—

escribe **más** rápidamente **que** el
dependiente de banquero,
vive **más** cerca **que** V.,

he writes more rapidly than the
banking-clerk.
he lives nearer than you.

a. With verbs: **más que**, *more than*; **mejor que**, *better than*:—

escribe más que su hermano,	-	he writes more than his brother.
vivirá más que nosotros,		he will live longer than we.
está mucho mejor que antes,		he is much better than formerly.

615. Inferiority, with adverbs: **ménos — que**, *less than*; **no — tan — como**, *not — so — as*:—

escribe ménos elegantemente	|	he writes less beautifully than
que su maestro,		his master.
no habla tan corrientemente	|	he does not speak so fluently as
como su hermano, [antes,		his brother. [than before.
me visita ménos amenudo que	|	he calls on me less frequently
no me visita tan amenudo como	|	he does not call on me so often
antes, [solía,		as before. [used to.
no obra tan de ligero como	|	he does not act so giddily as he

a. With verbs: **ménos que**, *less than*; **no — tanto como**, or **no — tanto cuanto**, *not — so much as*; **peor que**, *worse than*:—

sale ménos que antes,	|	he goes out less than formerly.
no sale tanto cuanto solía, }	|	he does not go out as much as
no sale tanto como solía, }		he used to. [bors.
vive peor que sus vecinos todos,	|	he lives worse than all his neigh-
escribe peor que su hermana,	|	he writes worse than his sister.

616. The correlatives **cuanto — tanto**, *the — so much the* —, may be used with any comparative adverb. **Tanto**, *so much*, may be omitted from the formula in both languages, unless used alone:—

cuanto más habla, (tanto) más	|	the more he talks, (so much) the
perjudica su causa,		more he injures his case.
cuanto más estudia, (tanto)	|	the more he studies, (so much)
más aprende,		the more he learns.
cuanto ménos escribe, (tanto)	|	the less he writes, (so much) the
peor sale su letra,		worse his hand appears.

cuanto ménos , (tanto) mejor ,	the less, the better.
tanto peor para él,	so much the worse for him.
tanto mejor para todos,	so much the better for all.

617. *Than* before a numeral is expressed by **de**, instead of **que**, unless the verb in the first member of the comparison be negative :—

se lo dije más de dos veces,	I told him so more than twice.
hace más de mes y medio que estoy aquí,	I have been here more than a month and a half.
no me dijo más que dos pala- bras,	he did not say more than two words to me.

618. *Than* is expressed by **de lo que** when the second member of the comparison contains a verb forming a complete sentence :—

pide más de lo que tengo,	he asks more than I have.
----------------------------------	---------------------------

619. In the phrase, **no poder ménos de**, *to be able to do no less than*, the use of *que* is regarded in Spain as provincial :—

no pudo ménos de censurarle,	he could not do less than censure him.
--	--

620. The use of the expletive adverb **no**, *not*, may be admitted into the second member of a comparison after **que**, *than*, provided the first member be not interrogative, or negative expecting a negative answer :—

más vale el contentamiento que	contentment is better than
no las riquezas, [nosotros?	riches.
¿no son ellos más felices que	are they not happier than we?

621. The relative superlative of adverbs is identical in form with the comparative :—

él es quien vive más cerca ,	he lives nearest.	[tinctly.
el que lee más distintamente ,	the one who reads the most dis-	
los que escriben más rápida y	the ones who write most rapidly	
elegantemente , .	and beautifully.	[most.
[gozan,		
los reyes no son los que más	kings are not the ones who enjoy	
los que ménos trabajan,	those who toil least.	
el que come mejor es el que	he who dines the best is the one	
tiene buen apetito,	who has a good appetite.	
es lo que ménos le preocupa,	that troubles him least.	

a. If, however, the relative superlative is followed by a qualifying term, the neuter article **lo**, *the*, may be used :—

lo más cerca or	} posible,	the nearest possible, or
cuanto más cerca		
acérquese V. lo más que pueda ,		as near as possible.
se acercó lo más que pudo ,		come as near as you can.
lo ménos posible ,		he came as near as he could.
		the least possible.
obra lo más cuerdamente	{ que pueda,	} he acts as prudently
	{ que le sea posible,	
		as he can.

REMARK.—We may also say, **hizo lo posible para . . .**, or **cuanto estuvo de su parte para . . .**, *he did all that he could to . . .*

622. When “most” means *the greater part*, it is expressed by **la mayor parte** in the singular, and by **los** or **las más** in the plural :—

me dejó en herencia la mayor	he bequeathed to me the most
parte de todo cuanto poseía,	of all that he possessed.
los más de los hombres,	most men. [it.
los más no consintieron en ello,	the greater part did not agree to
de las señoras las más se que-	of the ladies, the greater part
daron en casa,	stayed at home.
fabulosos son los más de los	the greater part of the subjects
asuntos por los trágicos de	immortalized by tragic writers
todo tiempo inmortalizados,	in every age are pure fable.

623. The absolute superlative indicates a very high degree, but without comparison :—

vive lejísimos , or muy léjos ,	he lives a great way off.
escribe elegantísimamente , or	he writes most beautifully.
con suma elegancia,	
se ha portado muy mal , or	he has acted despicably.
malísimamente ,	
el actor representó pésima-	the actor played very badly
mente , or malísimamente ,	indeed.

624. Adverbs formed by the association of the preposition **con** with a substantive, insert between them the first term of the comparative :—

Con frecuencia ,	<i>Frequently.</i>
con tanta frecuencia como ántes,	as frequently as before.
con más frecuencia que ántes,	more frequently than before.
con suma frecuencia, or }	
con la mayor frecuencia, }	very frequently.

But, aside from *con* :—

Á gusto ,	<i>Satisfactorily.</i>
tan á gusto como siempre,	as satisfactorily as ever.
más á gusto que nunca,	more satisfactorily than ever.
más á gusto ; muy á gusto ,	most satisfactorily ; very satisfactorily.

The Preposition.

625. Prepositions are **simple** or **complex**, according as they govern their object directly, or in combination with other words.

626. The *simple* prepositions are :—

á , to.	cabe , near, by (archaism).
ante , before, in presence of.	con , with.
bajo , under.	contra , against.

de , of, from.	[since.	no obstante , notwithstanding.
desde (vulg. dende), from,		para , for, in order to, to.
durante , during.		por , by, through.
en , in, at, on.		sacado , a (part.), deducting.
entre , between, among.		salvo , excepting, save.
excepto , except.		segun , according to.
hácia , towards.		sin , without.
hasta , till, until, up to, to.		so (sub), under, on.
mediante , through, by means of.		sobre , on, upon, about.
ménos , except, but.		tras , after.

627. The *complex* prepositions are :—

a. Those composed of simple adverbs followed by *de*, that is, governing the genitive :—

acerca de , about, concerning.	delante de , before (place).
además de , beside.	dentro de , within, in, into.
alrededor de , around.	despues de , after (time, order).
antes de , before (time, order).	detrás de , behind (place).
cerca de , near, about.	encima de , on, over.
debajo de , under (place).	fuera de , outside, beyond.
léjos de , far from.	

b. Those composed of simple adverbs followed by *á*, that is, governing the dative :—

conforme á , according to.	junto á , near, close by.
contrario á , contrary to.	respecto á , with respect to.
frente á , opposite, in front of.	tocante á , touching.

c. One composed of a single adverb followed by *con* :—

juntamente con,	| together with.
-------------------------	----------------

d. Those composed of compound adverbial expressions followed by *de* :—

á casa de , to the house of.	á excepcion de , with the excep-
á causa de , on account of.	á fuerza de , by dint of. [tion of.

á la vista de, *within sight of.*
 al cabo de, *at the expiration of.*
 al lado de, *by the side of.*
 al través de, *across, through.*
 á pesar de, *in spite of.*
 á razon de, *at the rate of.*
 de casa de, *from the house of.*
 de parte de, *on the part of.*
 en casa de, *at the house of.*
 en frente de, *opposite.*

en lugar de, *instead of.*
 en medio de, *in the midst of.*
 en vez de, *instead of.*
 en virtud de, *by virtue of.*
 en vista de, *in view of.*
 más allá de, *beyond.*
 por causa de, *on account of.*
 por el lado de, *on the side of.*
 por razon de, *by reason of.* [*ing.*
 sin embargo de, *notwithstanding.*

e. Those composed of compound adverbial expressions followed by *á* :—

en cuanto á, *with respect to.* | en órden á, *with regard to.*

f. Those composed of two successive prepositions :—
 de á, *of, at, — each.* | para con, *towards, to.*

USE OF CERTAIN PREPOSITIONS.

A, En, De.

628. The leading signification of *á* is *to*, with verbs of motion toward a given point ; that of *en*, *in*, *at*, *on*, with verbs of rest in a place :—

Voy

á España, á Lisbõa, al correo,
 al rio, á palacio, á casa,
 á la tienda, á la plaza,

Estoy

en España, en Madrid,
 en palacio, en casa,

Vengo

de España, de Madrid,
 de palacio, de casa,
 de la tienda, del Museo,

I am going

to Spain, to Lisbon, to the post ;
 to the river, to the palace, home ;
 to the shop, to market.

I am

in Spain, at Madrid ;
 at the palace, at home.

I come

from Spain, from Madrid ;
 from the palace, from home ;
 from the shop, from the Museum.

REMARK. — It will be observed that the Spanish use of *á* and *en* differs materially from the French : *je vais en Espagne, à Lisbonne ; j'ai demeuré en Espagne, á Madrid.*

629. **Á** is further used : —

a. In general, in the dative relation — *to* : —

al hombre ; al muchacho,	to the man ; to the boy.
á la mujer ; á los niños,	to the woman ; to the children.

b. To mark a personal object when specific (§ 76) : —

busco al criado ; busco un criado,	I look for <i>the</i> servant ; — <i>a</i> servant.
veo á la mujer ; veo una mujer,	I see <i>the</i> woman ; — <i>a</i> woman.
temen á Dios ; — al juez,	they fear God ; — the judge.

c. As a connective between certain verbs and a dependent infinitive — *to* : —

voy á verle,	I am going to see him.
empieza á hablar,	he begins to speak.
echó á correr,	he set out to run.
se puso á llorar,	he commenced to cry.

d. Temporary situation — *at* : —

á la puerta ; á la esquina,	at the door ; at the corner.
á la mesa ; al mostrador,	at table ; at the counter.
al Atenœo ; á la Academia,	at the Atheneum ; — Academy.

e. Time, price, rate, — *at* : —

á la noche ; al amanecer,	at night ; at dawn.
á las doce ; á media noche,	at noon ; at midnight.
á dos reales el metro,	at two reals per metre.
á veinte duros mensuales,	at twenty dollars a month.
á ocho reales diarios,	at forty cents <i>per diem</i> .
¿ á cuánto ? — á tanto,	at how much ? — at so much.

f. Distance off — *at - off*:—

á una lëgua ; á veinte pasos,	| at a league off ; at twenty paces.
á tiro de ballesta ; á tiro de piedra,	| at a bow shot ; at a stone's throw.

g. Distributively — *by*:—

uno á uno ; dos á dos,	| one by one ; two by two.
gota á gota,	| drop by drop.
poco á poco,	| little by little.

h. Adverbially — *on, in, with*:—

á caballo ; á pié,	| on horseback ; on foot.
á tiempo ; á palos,	| in time ; with blows.

i. After certain verbs — *on, at, in, off, from*:—

las ventanas dan al jardin,	| the windows face the garden.
jugar á los nãipes ; — al ajedrẽz ;	| to play (at) cards ; — chess ; —
— á la lotería,	| (<i>in</i>) the lottery. [garlic.
sabe á herejía ; sabe á ajo,	| it savors of heresy ; it tastes of
huele á ámbar,	| it smells of amber. [dollars.
llevó al caballero una onza,	| he charged the gentleman sixteen
robó al mozo su chaqueta,	| he stole the lad's jacket.

(*literally*, he took from the gentleman [the price of] an ounce ; he stole from the lad his jacket).

j. Elliptically:—

á que no lo tiene V.,	| I'll bet you haven't it.
á que sí ; á que no,	| I have ; you haven't.

REMARK.—This ellipse, common in ordinary conversation, depends on the verb *apostar á*, *to wager that*, expressed or understood. *Apuesto (or apostaré) á que me va V. á pagar lo que me debe*, *I'll wager you'll pay me what you owe me.* — *A que no*, *I'll bet I won't.* — *A que sí*, *you will*, etc. So, *á que vendrá mañana Fulano de Tal*, *I'll wager So and So will come to-morrow.* — *A que no vendrá*, *I'll bet he won't*, etc. Not very elegant, but constantly heard.

630. **En** further signifies *on, in* :—

en la mesa ; en la chimenea ; en la silla,	on the table ; on the mantel- piece ; on the chair.
en el cajon de la mesa,	in the table-drawer.
en la ciudad ; en el campo,	in the city ; in the country.
en su ausencia ; en general,	in his absence ; in general.

631. **De** primarily signifies *of*, and corresponds to the English possessive case :—

las tapias de la casa,	the (outside) walls of the house.
los árboles del paseo,	the trees of the promenade.
el palacio del rey,	the king's palace.
un amor de madre,	a mother's love.

a. It is often to be translated by *to* :—

el camino de la Corte ; — de la ciudad,	the road <i>or</i> way to the capital ; — to the city.
la guia de España,	the guide-book to Spain.

b. It often connects words which are to be translated by compound expressions, or by an adjective and a noun :—

un buzón de correos,	a post-box, letter-box (public).
un apartado de correos,	a letter-box (private).
un billete de ferro-carril,	a railway ticket.
un talón de equipage,	a luggage-check.
un carro de mudanza,	a furniture van.
la estacion del mediodía,	the southern station.
el tren del Norte,	the northern train.
una cuchara de plata,	a silver spoon.
un reloj de oro,	a gold watch.

c. It denotes cause — *for, with* :—

lloró de gozo,	he wept for joy.
brincó de contento,	he leaped about with pleasure.
tiembla de frio ; — de miedo,	he trembles with cold ; — fear.

d. After certain participles and adjectives :—

colmado de beneficios,	laden with benefits.
aborrecido de todos,	detested by all.

e. It is often superfluous in English :—

se olvida de sus amigos,	he forgets his friends.
abusa de la amistad,	he abuses friendship.
no me acuerdo de él,	I do not remember him.

f. After certain verbs — *as, in* :—

va de empleado,	he goes as a government-clerk.
va de embajador,	he goes as an ambassador.
está de luto,	he is in mourning.

Ante, Delante de, Antes de.

632. Ante signifies *in the presence of* an authority ; and, in an official sense, relating to persons, courts, deliberative bodies, nations, the world, history, the conscience, etc., viewed as judges, witnesses, or interested spectators :—

ante el juez ; — el alcalde,	before the judge ; — the mayor.
ante el gobierno ; — una comisión,	before the government ; — a committee.
ante los tribunales ; — la Cámara,	before the courts ; — the House.
ante la nación ; — la historia,	before the nation ; — history.
ante la conciencia ; ante todos,	before conscience ; before all.

a. Also, in general, *in presence of, in view of* :—

ante esta actitud del pueblo,	in view of this attitude of the people.
--------------------------------------	---

b. Likewise order and preference :—

ponen á cubierto ante todas cosas su responsabilidad,	first of all, they put their responsibility out of danger.
ante todo soy Español,	I am a Spaniard before all else.

633. Delante de denotes mere situation in front of things; location before people, but without the formality inherent in **ante**:—

delante de la casa; — del rey,	before the house; — the king.
delante del espejo; — del mundo,	before the mirror; — the world.
habló delante de mucha gente,	he spoke before many people.
lo dijo delante de testigos,	he said it before witnesses.

REMARK. — *Ante* and *delante de* may, therefore, be used interchangeably before persons, according as we attribute to them a judicial or critical attitude, or consider them as mere auditors.

634. Antes de denotes priority of time, order, and rank:—

antes de la comida; — de la reunion,	before dinner; before the meeting.
antes de la una; — de las dos,	before one — two — o'clock.
antes de un año; antes de su llegada,	before a year; before his (her, their) arrival.
V. está antes de mí,	you come before me.
un marques es antes de un duque, y éste antes de un conde,	a marquis is before a duke, and the latter before an earl.

Tras, Detrás de, Después de.

635. Tras is *after* in the sense of what immediately follows:—

tras mí viene mi amigo,	after me comes my friend.
tras la sogá viene la mula,	after the rope came the mule.
tras un mal vino otro,	after one misfortune came another.
[suerte,	[come.
tras la adversidad vendrá mejor uno tras otro,	after adversity a better time will one after another.
yo iba tras él,	I went after him.
tras esto,	(immediately) after this.

a. **Tras de** often occurs, but rather in the sense of *aside from, besides* :—

tras de venir tarde, regaña,	| besides coming late, he finds fault.
-------------------------------------	--------------------------------------

636. **Detrás de** signifies *behind, close behind*, of place, situation, and order, corresponding to **delante de**, *in front of* :—

detrás de la puerta,	| behind the door.
detrás de la tapia,	| behind the wall.
se puso detrás de mí,	| he got behind me.

637. **Después de**, *after*, corresponds to **antes de**, *before*, of time and order :—

después de mucho tiempo,	| after a long time.
llegó después de todos,	| he arrived the last of all.
el ministro es después del em- bajador,	| the minister is after the ambas- sador (in rank).
después de haber platicado largo rato, al fin se sentó,	| after having discoursed a long while, at last he sat down.

Bajo, So, Debajo de.

638. **Bajo** denotes situation close under; hence *beneath, underneath, below* :—

bajo la mano ; — la piedra,	| under the hand ; — the stone.
bajo el cielo ; bajo el sol,	| beneath the sky ; under the sun.

a. Figuratively and adverbially with the idea of protection, guarantee, subordination in rank, duty, etc. :—

bajo sobre ; — fianza ; — pro- testa,	| under cover ; — bonds ; — pro- test.
bajo llave,	| under lock and key.

bajo ciertas condiciones,	on certain conditions.
bajo palabra de honor,	upon honor.
bajo un gefe ; bajo ayos,	under a superior ; under tutors.

REMARK.—**Bajo de** is occasionally heard among the people, and frequently found in the older literature or modern quaint style.

639. So (Lat. *sub*), formerly interchangeable with *bajo* in the second sense, is now limited to a few phrases only :—

so pena de la vida, }	under {	forfeiture of life.
bajo pena de muerte, }		penalty of death.
so capa de ; so pretexto de,		under the mask — pretence — of.

640. Debajo de corresponds to **encima de**, and denotes mere material situation, *under* :—

debajo de la mesa,	under the table.
debajo de la higuera,	under the fig-tree.
el miedo de las cosas debajo de tierra,	the fear of things underground.

REMARK.—*Bajo* and *debajo*, like *ante* and *delante*, are often used interchangeably.

bajo or debajo de mis plantas, | beneath *or* under my feet.

Sobre, Encima de.

641. Sobre (Lat. *super*) and **encima de** (en cima = *on top*) both mean *on, upon*, in the sense of location ; but **encima** has an additional application to things higher than we — *up on*. It also means *over*, higher than one's head : as, *the birds fly over the house*, **encima de la casa** :—

sobre or encima de la mesa,	on the table.
sobre or encima de la silla,	on the chair.
encima del armario,	on the top of the wardrobe.
encima de la ciudad,	over the town <i>or</i> city.

a. Sobre has also the figurative sense of *over, more than, above* : —

amará Dios **sobre** todas las cosas, | to love God above all things.

b. It also signifies of, concerning, about : —

¿qué opina V. sobre esto?	| what is your opinion about this?
hablando sobre estas cosas se exaltó,	| speaking about these things, he became excited.

Con.

642. Con denotes accompaniment, means, and instrument : —

ir con alguno,	| to go (along) with some one.
con estos recursos se rehabilitan,	| by means of such expedients, they regain public favor.
le hirió con una porra,	| he struck him with a club.

a. Con makes many idiomatic expressions with verbs, especially with **dar**, *to give* : —

dió con él en la calle,	| he met him in the street.
dió con ellos por la ventana,	| he threw them out of the window.
le dió con la puerta en los ojos,	| he closed the door in his face.
dió consigo en el suelo,	| he fell down.

Desde.

643. Desde signifies *from*, as a starting-point of time and place : —

desde entónces,	| from that time, since then.
desde el principio,	| from the beginning.
desde arriba hácia abajo,	| from above, downwards.
desde la una en adelante,	| from one o'clock onwards.
desde Lóndres hasta París,	| from London to Paris.
desde muchos años,	| for many years.

Hácia.

644. Hacia denotes material direction *towards*:—

los vió venir hácia sí,	he saw them coming toward him.
la proa del buque se dirigió hácia	the ship's bow was pointed
el Mediodía,	toward the south.
miraba hácia el puerto,	he was looking toward the port.
hácia la noche,	towards night.

a. It also is popularly used in the sense of moral direction *toward* one, like **para con**:—

demuestra mucho cariño hácia	he displays a great attachment
nosotros,	for us.

Hasta.

645. Hasta signifies *as far as, to, up to, till, until*, of place, time, and degree:—

hasta la puerta; — la ciudad,	up to the door; — the town.
hasta París; hasta Londres,	up to (<i>or to</i>) Paris; to London.
hasta entónces; hasta ahora,	until then; until now.
hasta las doce; — las dos,	up to twelve — two — o'clock.
la acompañé hasta su casa,	I went with her as far as her house.
hasta no más; hasta lo último,	as far as I could; up to the very last.

Para, Por.

646. Para represents the Latin dative and the prepositions *pro* and *ad*; therefore, its meaning is *for* in the sense of destination, end, purpose; and it also denotes the relation of one thing to another — *for, to, in order to, for the purpose of*:—

esta carta no es para V.,	this letter is not for you.
no sirve para militar,	he will not do for a soldier.
se sentía más apto para la polí-	he felt that he was better fitted
tica que para las letras,	for politics than for letters.

me marchó **para** fuera,
me parece que no es **para** ménos,
para hacer eso se necesitan
tiempo y dinero,

I am going abroad, *or* out of town.
it seems to me I could not do less.
to do that time and money are
necessary.

647. Por, a confounding of the Latin *per* and *pro*, has the meanings of both — *for, in behalf of, for the sake of, by, through, along, on account of, out of, as* : —

lo hago **por** un amigo,
(lo hago **para** un amigo,)
dan dinero **por** verlo,
(dan dinero **para** poder ver,
y lo consiguen,)
lo dan **por** cosa extraña,

ó, **por** mejor decir,
por miedo de las consecuencias,
por (amor de) Dios,

I do it for (in behalf of) a friend.
(I am making it for a friend.)
they give money to see it.
(they give money to be able
to see, and they succeed.)
they represent it as a strange
thing. [rectly).
or, rather (to speak more cor-
for fear of consequences.
for Heaven's sake.

Á casa de, En casa de.

648. The prepositions **á casa de**, *to the house or shop* of any one ; **en casa de**, *at the house or shop* of any one, are respectively translated by *to* and *at* with the possessive case. The former is used with verbs of motion, and the latter with verbs of rest : —

ha ido **á casa** del Señor de
Herrera,
viene **de casa** de Lhardy,
ha ido **á su casa** ; — **á casa**,
está **en casa** de Murillo,
no vive ya más **en casa** del señor
marqués,

he has gone to Mr. Herrera's.
he comes from Lhardy's. [home.
he has gone to his house ; —
he is at Murillo's.
he does not live at the marquis's
any more.

¿á dónde va V. ? — **á casa**, *or á*
casa del señor conde,

where are you going ? — home,
or to the earl's.

¿de dónde viene V.? — de casa, or de casa del señor Moreno,	where do you come from? — from home, or from Mr. Moreno's.
¿en dónde ha estado V.? — en casa, or en casa de Lhardy,	where have you been? — home, or at Lhardy's.

649. De á (*of, at*) are employed to denote rate, denomination, or with adverbs to convert them into species of adjectives:—

un guardia civil de á caballo, los de á caballo; los de á pié, veinte sellos (de correo) de á veinte y cinco céntimos,	a mounted rural guard. the cavalry; the infantry. twenty five-cent stamps (twenty stamps at twenty-five centimes each).
dos cañones de á veinte y cuatro, una moneda de á ocho (<i>obs.</i>), el patio de á mano derecha,	two twenty-four pounders (guns). a piece of eight (coin). the right-hand court.

REMARK. — The prepositions **de**, **para**, and **por**, are idiomatically associated with other prepositions to define more closely the direction, time, or manner, expressed by the latter:—

de entre los árboles, cada uno de por sí , ántes los títulos de condes se daban de por vida, para entre amigos se deja de complimientos, pasar por delante de una casa, “ Por entre unas matas, Seguido de perros (No diré corría) Volaba un conejo,”	from among the trees. each one by himself. formerly the title of a count was given for life (only). among friends compliments are to be laid aside. to pass along by a house. “Through the thicket, Pursued by dogs, A coney flew (Not to say ran).”— <i>Iriarte</i> .
---	--

650. Para con, *to, toward*, signifies moral direction:—
su conducta **para con** sus hijos, | his behavior toward his children.

651. Many complex prepositions which contain a noun, transform their object into an adjective when that object is a personal pronoun:—

al lado de,	by the side of.
al lado mío, or á mi lado,	at my side, by me.
de parte de,	on the part of, from.
de parte suya, or de su parte,	on his part, from him.
en conformidad con esto,	in harmony with this, <i>or</i>
en esta conformidad,	in this way.

But the latter, I think, is originally dialectic, since it is largely used by *Aragonese* writers.

The Conjunction.

652. Pure conjunctions are few in number, while adverbs and prepositions temporarily employed as conjunctions, with or without *que*, are numerous. All admit the usual divisions into copulative, disjunctive, causal, concessive, conditional, temporal, adversative, etc.

653. The pure conjunctions are:—

pero, mas, sino, but.	que, that.
ni, nor.	si, if, whether, I wonder if.
ó (before another o, ú), or.	y (before i or hi, é), and.

654. **Pero** and **mas** are found at the beginning of a paragraph or a phrase, and in an adversative sentence; but **sino** only in such a sentence when the first clause contains a negation that is contrasted with an affirmation in the second:—

pero la historia dice otra cosa,	but history tells a different story.
así lo cuenta él; pero otros lo	so he relates it; but others give
refieren de distinto modo,	a different account.
el niño sabía perfectamente la	the child knew the lesson per-
lección, mas no supo decirla,	fectly, but could not recite it.

no fué él, en verdad, el único
intolerante de su siglo; **mas**
¿qué importa? [por lo serio,
no lo digo en broma, **sino** muy
no hay optimismo en lo que
digo, **sino** pura imparcialidad
y justicia,

truly he was not the only intol-
erant man of his time; but what
matters it? [all sincerity.
I do not say it jestingly, but in
there is no optimism in what I
say, but pure impartiality and
justice.

655. The conjunction **y**, *and*, assumes its ancient form **é** when a word follows beginning with the vowel *i* or the syllable *hi*:—

Fernando **é** Isabel,
padres **é** hijos,

Ferdinand and Isabella.
parents and children.

REMARK.—**Y** and **hy** were anciently adverbs meaning *there*, and the conjunction *and* was always expressed by **é** (Lat. *et*). In the latter part of the fifteenth century **y** and **é** became interchangeable, but a century later **é** had entirely disappeared:—

é murieron **y** muchos moros,
é tomaron los cuerpos delos
reyes que **y** yazien enterrados
é lleuarõ los alas Asturias,

and many Moors died there.
and they took the bodies of the
kings who lay buried there
and carried them to Asturias.

— *Chronica General*, A.D. 1260, ed. 1541; ff. 260b, 261a.

finco **hy** sus tiendas,
que nõ se partiria de **hy**,

he pitched his tents there.
that he would not go from there.

— *Chronica del Cid*, fourteenth-century, ed. 1593; pp. 87, 95.

656. Conjunctions with *que*, formed of adverbs and prepositions, are:—

á fin de que, *in order that*.
á ménos que, } *unless*.
á no ser que, }
ántes que, *before*.
así que, *so that, so*.
aunque, }
bien que, } *although*.

caso que, *in case that*.
como quiera que, *however*.
con que, *so, therefore, so then*.
con motivo que, *so that*.
con tal que, *provided that*.
cuanto más que, *the more since*.
dado que, *in case that*.

dado caso que, *supposing that*.
 de manera que, }
 de modo que, } *so that*.
 de suerte que, }
 desde que, *since*.
 despues que, *after*.
 en tanto que, *while, in case that*.
 en vez de que, *instead of*.
 entre tanto que, *while*.
 excepto que, *excepting*.
 hasta que, *until*.
 luego que, *as soon as*.
 mientras que, *while*. [*ing.*]
 no obstante que, *notwithstanding*

para que, *in order that*.
 por — que, *however*.
 porque, *because, in order that*.
 por más que, *however much*.
 por ménos que, }
 por poco que, } *however little*.
 pues que, }
 puesto que, } *since*.
 sea que, *whether, while*.
 siempre que, *whenever*.
 sin que, *without*.
 supuesto que, *since*.
 tanto que, *so that*.
 ya que, *since*.

657. The principal correlatives are :—

apénas — cuando, *scarcely — when*.
 así — como, *both — and*.
 ni — ni, *neither — nor*. [*when*.]
 no bien — cuando, *scarcely —*

no solo — sino, } *not only*
 no solamente — sino, } *— but*.
 ó — ó, *either — or*.
 sea — sea, *whether — or*.

The Interjection.

658. The interjections proper are :—

a. Exclamations denoting any strong emotion, such as surprise, pain, disgust, encouragement, remonstrance, desire, etc. :—

oh, ah, oh! *ah!*
 ay, oh! *alas! ah!*
 ha (exultation), *ha! eh!*
 hé (shock, start), *eh!*
 ea (encouragement), *come!*
 ea ea (impatience), *come now!*
 huy (pain, shock), *oh! dear me!*
 ola, or hola (recognition or discovery), *ah! oh!*

puf (aversion), *ugh!*
 uf (weariness), *oh!*
 ca and quíá (expressive of indignant negation or doubt).
 cáspita, *zounds!*
 chiton, *hist! hush!*
 ojalá, *would that! O that!*

REMARK. — Of these *ay*, *ea*, *huy*, *uf*, and *ojalá*,¹ are of Arabic origin, and consequently *un-European* and characteristic, especially *ay*, which indicates delight, as well as pain or surprise; and, popularly, is as common as the trans-Pyrenean *oh*! **Chiton** imposes silence about something forbidden, with the finger on the lips, well illustrated by the national proverb, **Inquisicion . . . chiton!** *when the Inquisition is mentioned, hold your breath!*

b. Cries addressed to domestic animals, birds, etc. :—

arre	{ (to urge forward horses, mules, etc.).	so, jo, or cho, <i>whoa</i> !
anda		ox (to frighten away birds).
alza		zape (to frighten cats).

c. Words that serve to imitate sounds :—

cataplúm, <i>crash</i>!	| tras and zas, <i>thump, thump</i> !
--------------------------	-------------------------------------

REMARK. — These are very numerous, and differ with the individual character or province. *Tras* and *zas* may be repeated to represent rapping at the door, the sound of feet tripping along the hall, and many other movements and sounds.

d. Idle or profane terms, common to all classes, with their euphemisms or evasions of the original word :—

caramba	{ and others in } ca-(expressing surprise),	egad!	cielos, Dios, por Dios, <i>heavens</i> !
carái			Dios mio, <i>dear me</i> !
caracóles			ay Dios mio, <i>Oh, dear me</i> !
canasto			Jesús, <i>O heavens</i> !
canario			válgame Dios, <i>bless me</i> !
diantre (to avoid <i>diablo</i> , demonio), <i>the deuce</i> ! by <i>Jove</i> !			vírgen santa, <i>marry</i> !

REMARKS. — “¡Jesús!” “¡Ave María!” “¡Ave María purísima!” are heard when anything heretical, exaggerated, or surprising, is told or seen; and the exclamation ¡Jesús! alone, when any one sneezes or gapes, is considered as a polite formula of exorcism, at which name evil spirits will forbear pursuing their advantage to possess the individual.

¹ From *in shâ 'llah*, “if Allah please,” written formerly *oxalá*, and pronounced anciently *oshalá*.

659. Other words used as exclamations are :—

a. Verbs in the imperative mode :—

anda (importunity, incredulity), <i>come! pshaw!</i>	quita , or quítese V. , } <i>let me alone!</i> <i>go away!</i>
calla or calle (command, incredulity), <i>keep still! nonsense!</i>	toma , <i>indeed! really!</i>
diga , <i>say!</i>	vamos , <i>come! why! well!</i>
oye and oiga , <i>say! hallo!</i>	vaya (surprise, to take leave, as- sent), <i>indeed! well! of course!</i>

b. Nouns, adjectives, and adverbs :—

al asesino , <i>murder!</i>	cómo , <i>how! why!</i>
al ladron , <i>stop thief!</i>	cuidado , <i>take care!</i>
bravo , <i>bravo! good!</i>	fuego , <i>fire!</i>
caballero (indignation), <i>sir!</i>	socorro , <i>help! murder!</i>

REMARK.—Conversation is frequently rendered emphatic by introducing the words **hombre**, *man*; **mujer**, *woman*; **as**, **sí**, **hombre**, *yes, of course*; **no**, **mujer**, *not at all, sure*.

660. Adjectives employed as interjections are accompanied by the preposition *de* when a personal pronoun follows :—

¡necio de mí!	silly me that I am (I was)!
¡pobre de mí!	alas for me!
¡desgraciados de nosotros!	unfortunate ones that we are!

a. The interjection *¡ay!* is also accompanied by *de* when a noun or pronoun follows :—

¡ay de mí!	alas for me! woe is me!
¡ay de mi Alhama!	alas for my (city) Alhama!
¡ay de tí! — de nosotros!	alas for you! — for us!
¡ay del malhechor!	woe to the transgressor!

REMARK.—With adjectives, exclamations may be introduced by *qué*: **as**, **¡qué desgraciada soy!** *how unfortunate I am!* **¡qué bueno es!** *how kind he is!*

SECTION THIRD.

THE ESSENTIALS OF SYNTAX.

The Article.

Use of the Definite Article.

661. The expression or omission of the definite article *el, la, los, las*, depends, in general, on the degree of limitation we wish to assign to the accompanying substantive. The laws that govern this article may be reduced to three, two of which correspond also with the English usage.

662. First. The definite article is expressed both in Spanish and in English, when it designates a particular individual or a specific object, thought, or class, in the singular, and several particular individuals, or objects of a class, in the plural:—

<i>el</i> hombre es soberbio,	<i>the</i> man is haughty.
<i>la</i> casa es hermosa,	<i>the</i> house is beautiful.
<i>el</i> paño es carísimo,	<i>the</i> cloth is very dear.
<i>el</i> trigo está vendido,	<i>the</i> wheat is sold.
<i>los</i> hombres son soberbios,	<i>the</i> men are haughty.
<i>los</i> caballos son fogosos, [nas,	<i>the</i> horses are fiery. [guages.
<i>el</i> estudio de las lenguas moder-	<i>the</i> study of the modern lan-
<i>la</i> enseñanza de <i>los</i> jóvenes,	<i>the</i> instruction of the young.

a. Consequently, the article is used in both languages before the epithets of sovereigns, poets, artists, and with facetious nicknames (*apodos*):—

Alfonso **el** Sabio,
 Fernando **el** Católico,
 Pedro **el** Cruel,
 Carlos tercero **el** Grande,
 Boabdil **el** Chico,
 Herrera **el** Mozo,
 Pepito **el** Ciego,

Alfonso the Wise.
 Ferdinand the Catholic.
 Peter the Cruel.
 Charles III. the Great.
 Boabdelf the Less.
 Herrera the younger.¹
 little Joe, the blind boy.

REMARK. — Under this law of particulars, the article often has the force of a demonstrative adjective, and may be translated by *that*.

663. Second. The definite article is omitted in both languages, when the noun is taken in an indeterminate sense, involving a portion of a substance or a class : —

déme V. pan ; — queso,
 tráigame V. dinero ; — vino,
 me dió oro y valores,
 ganoso de paz y tranquilidad,
 tiene casas y heredades,
 veo praderas y huertas,
 cargado con grandes paquetes,
 cubierto de riquísimos paños,

give me bread ; — cheese.
 bring me money ; — wine.
 he gave me gold and securities.
 desirous of peace and quiet.
 he possesses houses and lands.
 I see green fields and plantations.
 laden with large bundles.
 covered with rich stuffs.

REMARK 1. — This law of the partitive sense of substantives is expressed regularly in French by a special use of the definite article ; as : —

donnez-moi **du** pain,
 apportez-moi **de** l'argent, [leurs,
 il m'a donné **de** l'or et **des** va-

give me some bread.
 bring me some money.
 he gave me gold and securities.

2. — An echo of this construction is occasionally met with in Spanish : —

“ — te he dicho
 Que me des **de lo** **añejo**
 Cuando te pida vino,”

“ — I ordered you
 To give me some of the old
 When I call for wine.”

— *Cadalso, Obras, Madrid, 1818, vol. iii., p. 37.*

es *or* son **de los** **famosos**, [hay,
 son **de los** **más célebres** que

it is *or* they are famous ones.
 they are some of the best known.

¹ To distinguish him from **Herrera el viejo**, *the elder Herrera*.

3. — In Spanish, as in English, the partitive substantive may be qualified by some term like **alguno, un poco de, some, a little**, for the singular; and **algunos, unos, unos cuantos, unos pocos, some, a few**, for the plural: —

déme V. un poco de pan,	| give me a little bread.
tráe unos cuantos paquetes,	| he brings a few parcels.

a. Also in a great many adverbial expressions: —

á pié; á caballo; en coche,	| on foot; on horseback; by coach.
con alegría; con dolor,	| with joy; with sorrow.
á casa; en casa,	| home (<i>motion</i>); at home (<i>rest</i>).
llevado en triunfo,	| borne in triumph.

664. *Third.* The definite article is expressed in Spanish and omitted in English, when it designates an object, a substance, or a thought, in an universal, very general, or in an absolute sense, for the singular, and all the individuals of a class, for the plural: —

la vida es breve,	| life is short.
la juventud es pasajera,	| youth is transitory.
el oro es preciosísimo,	| gold is very precious.
el trigo es abundante,	| wheat is plentiful.
la caridad es benigna,	| charity is kind.
la muerte se acerca, [jenable,	| death draws near.
la libertad es un derecho in-	| liberty is an inalienable right.
la buena administracion conduce	| good administration leads to
á la prosperidad,	| prosperity.
el hombre piensa; — habla,	| man thinks; — talks.
los caballos son útiles,	| horses are useful.
los gobiernos son necesarios,	| governments are necessary.
los hombres piensan; — hablan,	| men think; — talk.

REMARK. — Nearly all these and similar comprehensive sentences may be turned into particular ones, when the sense requires it, or by some slight modification, such as the insertion of an adjective, an adjunct, or a relative: —

la vida del hombre es breve,	<i>the</i> life of man is short.
el mejor trigo no es siempre abundante,	<i>the</i> best wheat is not always plentiful.
el hombre que piensa,	<i>the</i> man who thinks.
los caballos que posee,	<i>the</i> horses which he owns.

a. The same law applies to the English also, in a few words, when we speak of them in general terms :—

la mente no lo alcanza,	<i>the</i> mind cannot grasp it.
el caballo es un animal sumamente fuerte y útil,	<i>the</i> horse is an exceedingly strong and useful animal.

b. Likewise, in general, the article is expressed with words that are originally adjectives, when they are used as nouns, and are taken in an universal or very comprehensive range of meaning :—

los avaros nunca están satisfechos,	misers (the avaricious) are never satisfied.
los Españoles son bastante pun-donorosos,	Spaniards (the Spanish) are very jealous of their honor.
tanto los Protestantes como los Católicos adoran á Dios,	both Protestants and Catholics worship God.

665. The definite article is furthermore expressed diversely from the English usage :—

a. With the names of the days of the week, except in dates :—

vendrá el sábado,	he will come on Saturday.
los miércoles y juéves,	Wednesdays and Thursdays.
todos los mártes y viérnes,	every Tuesday and Friday.
domingo, tres de abril,	Sunday, April 3.

b. With the names of the seasons :—

en la primavera parece que la naturaleza se despierta como de un sueño,	in spring, nature appears to rouse up as from
---	---

mi amigo pasa el verano á los baños de mar; el otoño en Madrid, y el invierno en Se- villa ó Málaga,	my friend spends summer at the seaside, autumn at Madrid, and winter in Seville or Ma- laga.
---	---

c. Before all titles of respect, dignity, or office, when the individual is spoken of, not when he is addressed:—

el señor y la señora (<i>or los se- ñores</i>) de Moreno,	Mr. and Mrs. Moreno.
las señoritas de García,	the Misses (<i>young ladies</i>) García.
el rey don Alfonso doce,	King Alfonso the Twelfth.
el general Concha,	General Concha.
el secretario Zurita,	Secretary Zurita.
el cardenal Quiroga,	Cardinal Quiroga.
el maestro Luis de Leon,	Master Louis de Leon.
el padre Ínigo (<i>een'-ye-go</i>),	Father Ignatius.
la madre Serafina,	Mother Seraphina (<i>prioress</i>).

Exceptions are: the title of **don** (before the Christian name); **fray** (of an ecclesiastical order) and **frej** (of a military order), *brother*; **san** or **santo**, *saint*; **sor** (of nuns), *sister*, but the more common word **hermana** takes the article; as, **sor Angélica**, or **la hermana Angélica**, *sister Angelica*.

d. Before the names of Italian classic writers and artists:—

el Dante, el Bocacio, el Petrarca, el Ticiano, *etc.*

So also with the names of Spanish authors when they represent their works:—

traígame V. el Garcilaso,	bring me Garcilaso's works.
no encuentro esa voz en el Co- varrubias,	I do not find that word in Covar- rubias (<i>Dictionary</i> , 1611).

The same with titles of well-known books:—

la Raquel de Vicente García de la Huerta ó la de Ullóa,	Huerta's or Ulloa's Rachel (<i>tra- gedy</i>).
estoy leyendo el Quijote,	I am reading Don Quixote.

e. With a few names of countries, provinces, and cities. Such are at present chiefly :—

el Japon ; el Brasil,	Japan ; Brazil.
el Canadá ; el Perú,	Canada ; Peru.
el Paraguay ; la Florida,	Paraguay ; Florida.
La Mancha ; La Rioja,	(<i>provinces of Spain</i>).
Castilla la Nueva ; — la Vieja,	New — Old — Castile. [vana.
la Coruña ; la Habana,	Corunna (<i>the "Groyne"</i>) ; Ha-
el Ferrol ; el Cairo ; el Havre,	Ferrol ; Cairo ; Havre.

REMARK.—With other names of countries and provinces it is not now common to use the article, save in the poetical or oratorical style, or when an adjective qualifies them.

la Europa católica,	Catholic Europe.
la España liberal,	liberal Spain.

f. With the Christian names of women in familiar style :—

la María ; la Juana,	Mary ; Jane.
la Mercêdes ; la Dolores,	Mercy ; Dolores.
me lo regaló la Pepa,	Josie gave it to me.
la Mariquita no ignoraba el contenido de la carta,	Molly was not unacquainted with the contents of the letter.

Also with surnames, but generally vulgar :—

me lo contó la Álvarez,	(the woman) Alvarez told it to me.
-------------------------	------------------------------------

g. With numerals to indicate the hour :—

es la una ; son las diez,	it is one — ten — o'clock.
á la una ; á las diez,	at one ; at ten (o'clock).
á las doce (del día),	at twelve o'clock, noon.
á la madrugada,	before sunrise, at an early hour.

h. With many adverbial and other phrases :—

á la noche ; á la ciudad,	at night ; to town.
á la escuela ; á la iglesia,	to school ; to church.
en la ciudad ; en la escuela, <i>etc.</i> ,	in town ; at school ; — church.
al cuidado de ; las mañanas,	in care of ; mornings.

666. The definite article is sometimes employed for the indefinite, in general, indeterminate, expressions and phrases : —

la fragancia de la rosa,	the fragrance of a rose.
me parece que la monarquía	it appears to me that a monarchy
tiene sus ventajas,	has its advantages. [went out.
me dió las buenas noches y salió,	he bade me (a) good night and

a. Also to denote rate, with words signifying weight, measure, and distance : —

dos duros la libra,	two dollars a pound.
cuatro reales la botella,	four reals a bottle.
á tanto la vara ; — la lëgua,	at so much a yard ; — a league.

667. The definite article is omitted in Spanish and expressed in English : —

a. Before a number indicating the order of succession of pontiffs and sovereigns : —

Pablo cuarto, <i>or</i> Pablo IV.,	Paul the Fourth, <i>or</i> Paul IV.
Cárlos quinto de Alemania y	Charles the Fifth of Germany
primero de España,	and the First of Spain. [<i>etc.</i>
Felipe segundo ; — tercero ; <i>etc.</i>	Philip the Second ; — the Third ;
Fernando séptimo,	Ferdinand the Seventh.
Alfonso doce, rey de España,	Alfonso XII., king of Spain.

Except when speaking of the ancient sovereigns in whose times the article was employed, but even with these the use is not uniform : —

Don Alfonso décimo,	Alfonso the Tenth.
Don Alfonso el oncenno,	Alfonso the Eleventh.
Don Enrique el cuarto,	Henry the Fourth (of Spain).
Don Juan segundo, <i>or</i> el s.,	John the Second (of Spain).

REMARK. — The ordinal numbers are used in such cases up to eleven ; thence onward the cardinals. See § 674.

b. With nouns in the predicate modified by an adjunct :—

es hija de un conde,	she is the daughter of an earl.
es comandante de la plaza,	he is the commander of the fort.
la necesidad es madre de la invencion,	necessity is the mother of invention.
ha sido nombrado representante de España cerca de la Santa Sede,	he has been appointed the representative of Spain near the Holy See.

c. With a word in apposition :—

Don Quijote, obra del inmortal Cervántes,	Don Quixote, the work of the immortal Cervantes.
Madrid, corte de España,	Madrid, the capital of Spain.
Boabdil, último rey moro de Granada,	Boabdellí, the last Moorish king of Granada.

d. At the head of titles of books and articles :—

Vida del arzobispo de Toledo, primado de las Españas,	The Life of the Archbishop of Toledo, the Primate of Spain.
Historia del sitio de Gibraltar,	The History of the Siege of Gibraltar.
Revista Hispano-Americana,	The Spanish-American Review.

e. In certain conventional phrases :—

á esquina de tal calle,	on the corner of such a street.
á orillas de un rio,	on the banks of a river.
á razon de cuatro millas la legua,	at the rate of four miles per league. [palace.
ir á casa de ; — á palacio,	to go to the house of ; — to the
estar en casa de ; — en palacio,	to be at the house of ; — at the palace.
tener intencion de,	to have the intention of.
dormir siesta (= horâ <i>sextá</i>),	to take the noon nap.
de parte de su padre,	on the part of his father.
en nombre de la religion,	in the name of religion.
con objeto de,	with the object of.

Use of the Indefinite Article.

668. The indefinite article **un, una**, is in general used much the same in both languages. Special divergences, however, are the following : —

669. The indefinite article is omitted in Spanish : —

a. Before substantives standing in the predicate when they denote rank, class, occupation, and characteristic, in very general terms : —

mi amigo es capitán,	my friend is a captain.
fulano es artista inglés,	such a one is an English artist.
es caballero ; es título,	he is a gentleman ; — a noble.
es sastre ; es albañil,	he is a tailor ; — a mason.
es cobarde ; es holgazán,	he is a coward ; — an idler.
se ha hecho soldado,	he has become a soldier.
la fé es don de Dios,	faith is a gift of God. [charity.
dar la limosna es obra de caridad,	to distribute alms is a work of
es católico ; es protestante,	he is a Catholic ; — a Protestant.
es judío ; es libre pensador,	he is a Jew ; — a free-thinker.

REMARK. — But if the separate existence of the predicate substantive is to be emphasized and particularized, the article may be expressed : —

es un cobarde ; — un holgazán,	he is a coward ; — an idler.
esta niña es una pobre huérfana,	this girl is a poor orphan.
es un oficial de grande mérito,	he is an officer of great merit.
su madre es una católica de las más fervorosas,	her mother is a most fervid Catholic.

b. With nouns designating title, office, or attribute, preceded by the preposition *de* : —

el empleo de secretario,	the office of (a) secretary.
va de embajador á tal parte,	he goes as an ambassador to such a place.

el título de grande de España,
el nombre de libertador de la
patria,

the title of (a) grandee of Spain.
the name of liberator of his
country.

c. With substantives that express an idea in a general, indefinite way : —

tengo motivo para afirmarlo,
tiene derecho de manifestarlo,
poner precio ; — tasa *or* coto,
poner escuela ; — tienda,
buscar vida desahogada,
llegó á pasar por jóven de espe-
ranzas,
los palaciegos lo tenían por
incomparable desgracia el ser
desterrado de la corte,
manifestó odio encarnizado con-
tra la herejía, [festar,
día vendrá en que lo he de mani-

I have a reason for affirming it.
he has a right to declare it.
to fix a price ; — a limit.
to set up a school ; — a shop.
to seek an easy life.
he came to be considered as a
young man of expectations.
palace people considered it an
unequalled calamity to be ex-
iled from the court.
he exhibited a furious hatred
towards heresy. [declare it.
a day will come in which I shall

d. After the verb *tener* with a substantive denoting some quality of the mind or heart, when combined with an adjective : —

tiene buen corazon,
tiene feliz memoria, [cerlo,
tiene grande inclinacion de ha-

he has a good heart.
he possesses a fine memory.
he has a great mind to do it.

REMARK. — So also in general after *tener* and *tener por*, as under rule c, in indefinite statements : —

tener gana de, tiempo de,
tener apetito ; — motivos,

to have a mind, time, to.
to have an appetite ; — reasons.

e. With words in apposition : —

Cádiz, ciudad de Andalucía,
Calderon, poeta insigne,
la Carta de Paracuellos, sátira
de Francisco Sánchez,
entró su hijo, muchacho vivo,

Cadiz, a city of Andalusia.
Calderon, a celebrated poet.
the Paracuellos Epistle, a satire
by Francisco Sanchez.
his son, a bright lad, came in.

f. With certain indefinite expressions, like **otro, otra vez, cierto, semejante, tal, como, gran número de, tan** :—

vino el día siguiente **otro** aviso,

otra vez no será tan torpe,
llegó á mis oídos **cierta** noticia,
no me gusta **semejante** engaño,
tal día ; **tal** noche,
obró **como** maestro,
la pintura **como** arte,
hubo **gran número de** gente,
á **tan** concluyente explicación
nadie puede replicar,

the following day another notice
came. [stupid.
another time I shall not be so
a certain item came to my ears.
I do not like such deception.
such a day ; such a night.
he proceeded like a master.
painting as an art. [people.
there was a large number of
to such a conclusive explanation
no one can reply.

g. With nouns in negative sentences :—

sin obtener respuesta,
se fué sin decir palabra,
sin que recibiese contestación,
no me ha de quedar consuelo,
no tengo genio para eso,

without obtaining an answer.
he went off without saying a word.
without his getting a reply.
no consolation will remain to me.
I have no talent for that.

h. At the head of book titles :—

Diccionario de la Lengua Cas-
tellana, [Española,
Ensayo sobre la Legislación

A Dictionary of the Castilian
Language. [tion.
An Essay on Spanish Legisla-

i. With nouns denoting weight or measure, accompanied by the fractions thereof :—

compré libra y media,
anduve legua y cuarta,
me midió dos varas y tercia,

I purchased a pound and a half.
I travelled a league and a quarter.
he measured me off two yards
and a third.

j. In exclamations after **qué** :—

¡qué ruido ! ¡qué día !
¡qué hermoso paisaje !
¡qué bobo eres !

what a noise ! what a day !
what a fine landscape !
what a dunce you are !

Use of the Neuter Article *Lo*.

670. The neuter article *lo* is only used in the singular, and turns an adjective into a substantive, for which a pure substantive may likewise be often employed (see §§ 83; 113, *a*):—

dominaba en ella el sentimiento
de *lo* maravilloso,
no dejes de mandarles algo de
lo mucho que vas á ganar,

en *lo* sucesivo; *lo* pasado,
en *lo* más escondido de un valle,

contra *lo* dispuesto por las leyes,

the sense of the marvellous was
dominant in her.

do not fail to send them some-
thing of the much you will
earn.

for the future; the past.

in the most retired (part) of a
valley. laws.

against what is provided by the

671. The substantive nature of the adjective with *lo* is especially manifest when they are accompanied by **que** with the verb *to be*, or one of its substitutes. In this case, as we have seen (§ 113, *a*), the adjective is varied anomalously, agreeing in gender and number with the noun subject to the verb. The formula then will be:—

Lo — variable adjective — **que** — verb *to be* — noun-subject; or, without *que*: noun-subject — verb *to be* — **lo** — variable adjective.

lo amena que es esta pradera,
lo caprichosa que es la imagina-
cion, [ballero,
lo pundonoroso que es este ca-
lo frescas que son estas aceitunas,
lo desatendidas que habían sido
sus súplicas,
lo honrados que se considerarían,
si, *etc.*
lo convenientes que fueron en
otros tiempos, y *lo* útiles que
pueden ser todavía,

the amenity of this green field.
the capriciousness of the imagi-
nation. [tleman.
the punctiliousness of this gen-
the freshness of these olives.
the deaf ear that had been turned
to his prayers.
the honor they would consider
done to them, if, *etc.*
the suitability of them in other
days, and their possible utility
still.

una prueba de lo satisfactorios
que le son vuestros trabajos,
el ministro se propone que la
discusion de los presupuestos
sea todo lo amplia posible,
es una de esas reformas que por
lo necesarias están fuera de
toda discusion,

a proof of his satisfaction with
your labors.
the minister proposes to give
all possible latitude to the
discussion of the budget.
it is one of those reformatory
measures, the necessity of
which is too evident for dis-
cussion.

The literal version of a few of these examples, which are all taken from modern writers, will explain this extraordinary idiom : —

The agreeable that this green field is; the fresh that these olives are; the honored that they would consider themselves, if, etc.; the suitable that they were in other times, and the useful that they may still be; a proof of the satisfactory that your labors are to him; the minister proposes that the debate on the estimates be all the broad possible; it is one of those reforms that by the necessary (on account of their necessity) are beyond all discussion.

The Use of the Numerals.

672. Order in a series is properly expressed as in English by the ordinal numbers : —

el **primer** día; el **segundo** año,
el **tercer** aniversario,
la **cuarta** fila,
el **quinto** artículo, [cima,
las lecciones **décima** y **undé-**
los siglos **décimo sexto** y **déci-**
mo séptimo,
el libro **trigésimo tercio**,

the first day; the second year.
the third anniversary.
the fourth row or file.
the fifth article.
the tenth and eleventh lessons.
the sixteenth and seventeenth
centuries.
the thirty-third book.

673. Popularly, the cardinals are more generally used than the ordinals to specify the number of a volume, book, chapter, lesson, century, or other word which, from its signification, naturally involves a series : —

capítulo **veinte y uno**,
lección **quince**,
página **ciento y una**,
el siglo **diez y nueve**,

chapter twenty-first.
lesson fifteen.
page one hundred and first.
the nineteenth century.

674. The ordinals are used up to *eleven*, to indicate the order of succession of sovereigns; but from that number, the cardinals are regularly substituted:—

Cárlos **primero** de España y
quinto de Alemania,
Henrique **cuarto**,
Fernando **séptimo**,
Leon **trece**; Alfonso **doce**,
Luis **catorce**, rey de Francia,

Charles the First of Spain and
the Fifth of Germany.
Henry the Fourth.
Ferdinand the Seventh.
Leo XIII; Alfonso XII.
Louis XIV, king of France.

675. The cardinal numbers are used instead of the ordinals, in *dates*, with the sole exception of **primero**, *first*. In this case, the month and year, when expressed, are always to be preceded by the preposition *de*:—

Madrid, **primero de Enero, de**
mil ochocientos y ochenta,
el **dos** de Mayo, **de** 1808,
el **diez y siete** de Abril,
el día **once** de Febrero,
viérnes, **cuatro** de Julio, **de** mil
setecientos sesenta,
vendrá el día **diez**,

Madrid, January first, eighteen
hundred and eighty.
the second of May, 1808.
April 17th.
February 11th.
Friday, July fourth, seventeen
hundred and sixty.
he will come on the 10th.

REMARK.—The word *día*, *day*, may be or not employed when the month is expressed; but when the number stands alone, it is more common to give it:—

el **día** quince Junio, *or* }
el **quince** de Junio, }
el **día** cuatro,
tenemos cita para el **día** doce,
falleció el día dieciseis,

the fifteenth of June.
the fourth. [twelfth.
we have an appointment for the
he died on the sixteenth.

676. The question, *What day of the month is it?* may be expressed in Spanish by *¿qué día del mes tenemos?* or by *¿á cuántos estamos del mes?* and is answered in the first case by the cardinal number (except the *first*) with the definite article; and in the second case, by the same preceded by the preposition *á*, with or without the corresponding verb:—

<i>tenemos</i>	[<i>seis,</i>	<i>estamos</i>
el primero ; el dos ; el dieci-	|	á primero ; á dos ; á diez y seis.
it is the first; — the second; — the sixteenth.		

REMARK. — Indefinite or approximate expressions are:—

á primeros de (Enero),	|	in the early part of (January).
á principios del (siglo actual),	|	at the beginning of (the present century).
á mediados del (año pasado),	|	about the middle of (last year).
á fines del (siglo pasado),	|	toward the close of (the last century).
á últimos del (mes que viene),	|	about the end of (next month).

More definite are:—

á or en primero de (mes),	|	on the first of (the month).
á or en fin de (año),	|	at the end of (the year).

677. A week is more often expressed by **ocho días**, and a fortnight by **quince días**, than by the general terms *una semana, dos semanas*:—

vendrá dentro de ocho días,	|	he will come within a week.
mañana en ocho días,	|	a week from to-morrow.
hace más de quince días que	|	I have not seen him in more than
no le veo; quince días há,	|	a fortnight; a fortnight ago.
de hoy en ocho (quince) días,	|	a week (fortnight) from to-day.

678. The hour or time of day is expressed by the cardinals with the feminine article plural *las* (except *la una, one*), agreeing with *hora, horas*, understood:—

¿qué hora es?
 es la una; la una y media,
 es la una y tres cuartos, *or* }
 son las dos menos cuarto, }
 son las once; las doce,
 son las diez y cuarto,
 á la una; á las siete,
 á las dos de la madrugada,
 á las ocho de la mañana,
 á las cuatro de la tarde,
 á las nueve de la noche,

what time is it? [o'clock.
 it is one — half-past one —
 it is quarter to two.
 it is eleven — twelve — o'clock.
 it is a quarter past ten.
 at one o'clock; at seven.
 at two o'clock in the morning.
 at eight, A.M.
 at four o'clock, P.M.
 at nine o'clock at night.

REMARK. — To *strike the hour* is *dar la hora*, used intransitively: —

las tres van á dar,
 ya van á dar las cinco,
 han dado las doce ya,
 dada la una; dadas las once,
 al dar las doce,

it is going to strike three.
 it is just going to strike five.
 it has already struck twelve.
 when it had struck one — eleven.
 as it struck twelve.

679. In stating age, the Spanish employs the verb **tener**, to *have*, with **años**, *years*, preceded by the cardinal number: —

¿cuántos años tiene V.?
 ¿qué edad tiene V.?
tengo veinticinco años,
 este joven **tendrá** unos diez y
 ocho años,
 su padre **tiene** cincuenta años,
 y su madre **cuarenta**,
 no es muy viejo,
 es todavía joven, ó más bien de
 edad mediana,
 es un viejo (*indelicate*), }
 es un anciano (*courteous*), }
 fué mi antiguo preceptor,

how old are you?
 what is your age?
 I am twenty-five years old.
 this young man must be about
 eighteen.
 his father is fifty years old, and
 his mother forty.
 he is not very old (in life).
 he is still young, or rather in
 middle life.
 he is an old man.
 he was my old teacher.

REMARK. — **Viejo** always signifies literally *old in years*; *old*, meaning “former,” is **antiguo**; *he is an old friend*, **es un antiguo**

amigo. To be "older" than another is, **tener más edad, más años, que otro**, although aged people might say of each other, **más viejo que, older than.**

680. "To be just so many years old," "to have completed so many years" is **tener — años cumplidos, cumplir — años:—**

tiene veintiseis años cumplidos,	|	he is just twenty-six years old.
al cumplir los trece años,	|	when he had completed his thirteenth year.

REMARK. — Idioms with expressions of age and time are : —

á los dos días,	|	in two days, on the second day.
á la edad de cinco años,	|	at five years of age.
á los cinco años de su edad,	|	at the age of five years.
á los veinte años de su reinado,	|	in the twentieth year of his reign.
á los cinco meses de su estancia,	|	{ after a stay of five months, <i>or</i>
	|	{ when he had stayed five months.
falleció joven de veinte años,	|	he died at the age of twenty years.

The Laws of Agreement.

The Adjective and Noun.

681. Adjectives agree in gender and number with the substantive they limit or describe : —

un hombre activo,	|	an active man.
una señora anciana,	|	an old lady.
personas emprendedoras,	|	enterprising persons.
ciertas sociedades son fomentadoras de la riqueza pública,	|	certain societies are promoters of the public wealth.

682. A plural substantive may be limited by two or three adjectives in the singular, agreeing in gender only, when they relate to distinct members of the same series : —

las lenguas castellana y francesa,	the Spanish and French languages.
los tomos primero y cuarto,	the first and fourth volumes.
los siglos segundo y tercero,	the second and third centuries.

683. When an adjective relates to two or more substantives of the same gender (whichever be the number), it stands in the plural, and the gender will be determined by that of the substantives :—

el padre y el hijo están malos,	the father and son are ill.
la madre y su hija son muy parecidas,	the mother and her daughter look very much alike. [fair.
la madre y sus hijas son bellas,	the mother and her daughters are
la aplicacion y constancia en el estudio son necesarias al que quiere adelantar,	diligence and perseverance in study are necessary to one who desires to advance.

684. When an adjective relates to two or more substantives in the singular number and of different genders, it stands in the masculine plural, provided the substantives have distinct meanings :—

el padre y la madre son ambos caritativos, [admiracion,	the father and mother are both benevolent. [of admiration.
el cielo y la tierra son dignos de la plaza y el cuartel más limpios de la ciudad,	the sky and the earth are worthy the neatest square and neighborhood in town.

REMARK.—If, however, the two nouns are synonymous, or nearly so, in meaning, whichever be their gender, the adjective agrees in the singular with the nearest noun :—

muestra una capacidad, un talento singular,	he displays singular ability and talent.
con un alborozo, una satisfaccion indescriptible,	with indescribable joy and satisfaction. [lief.
para solaz y desahogo comun,	for common consolation and re-

685. When an adjective relates to two or more substantives in the plural number and of different genders, it agrees with the nearest noun in gender and number :—

observaban ademanes y conversaciones agitadas , [v anos , sus esperanzas y temores eran	they noticed excited gestures and conversation. [vain. their hopes and their fears were
---	---

686. Adjectives of all kinds that stand before the noun they limit agree in gender and number with the nearest one :—

nuestro atraso y decadencia, poca unidad y trabazon, con singular vigor y presteza, con mu cha furia y denuedo,	our low state and decline. little unity and connection. [ness. with marked energy and prompt- with great fury and boldness.
---	---

687. With titles, the adjective agrees with the natural, not the grammatical, gender, when it stands in the predicate or as a participle past :—

su majestad está enfermo , su majestad está enferma , sus majestades, prevenidos , se levantaron,	his majesty is ill. her majesty is ill. their majesties (the king and queen) being notified, arose.
---	---

a. But adjectives that form part of the title agree regularly :—

su sagrada majestad, sus majestades católicas , vuestra señoría,	his sacred majesty (<i>Rom. Emp.</i>). their Catholic majesties. your lordship.
---	---

The Verb with its Subject.

688. The verb agrees with its subject, expressed or understood, in number and person :—

yo leo ; nosotros leemos , la hoja cae ; las hojas caen ,	I read; we read. the leaf falls; the leaves fall.
--	--

689. Collective terms in the singular number require a verb in that number whether they involve the idea of unity or plurality : —

el pueblo le escucha ,	the people listen to him.
el público se divierte ,	the public amuse themselves.
la gente lo dice ,	people say so.
el ejército avanza ,	the army moves forward.
la tropa acudió ,	the troops came up.
el congreso se reunió ,	the congress met.
la Academia lo aprueba ,	the Academy approves it.
la junta se disolvió ,	the committee was dissolved.
la multitud se impresionó ,	the throng was moved.
la poblacion queda tranquila,	the town remains quiet.
el rebaño huye ante el lobo,	the flock flees from the wolf.

690. Collective terms followed by an adjunct in the *plural*, expressed or understood, require a plural verb : —

multitud de personas le felicitaron ,	crowds of people congratulated him.
[tieron en ello,	[agree to it.
gran parte de ellos no consin-	a large number of them did not
la mayor parte lo saben ,	the greater part know it.
parte venían sin armas,	a part came without arms.
la mitad perecieron ,	one-half perished.

but

la mayor parte de la gente lo cree ,	the greater part of the people believe it.
gran parte de la poblacion ha quedado reducida á cenizas,	a large part of the town was reduced to ashes.

691. Nouns in the singular, connected by the correlative **ni** — **ni**, *neither* — *nor*, are now generally accompanied by a plural verb : —

ni el miedo ni el interés torcieron su fé,	neither fear nor interest swerved his faith.
ni un solo grito, ni un solo gesto empañaron aquella escena,	neither a single shout nor a single gesture marred that scene.

REMARK.—With **ó** — **ó**, *either* — *or*, the use of the language does not seem to be fixed, both numbers being met with:—

ó la ambicion ó la ira le movió and le movieron,	| either ambition or anger im- pelled him.
--	---

692. When there are two or more subjects in either number, the verb is regularly put in the plural; but in vehement discourse, the verb is often found to agree in the singular with the first noun of a series, before which the verb stands, as if the enumeration of characteristics were mere expansions of one thought:—

la novela y las poesías me han gustado mucho, las cartas y el prólogo me pare- cieron muy bien escritos,	| I was much pleased with the novel and the poetry. the letters and the preface ap- peared to me to be very well written.
---	---

nunca fué tan expuesto su valor y constancia, decía mi amigo, con la autoridad que le dá su palabra, su talen- to, su íntegro carácter,	| his courage and firmness were never so tested. my friend said, with all the weight that his words, talent, and integ- rity of character give him . . .
---	--

a. A singular verb may accompany a double subject when these are used synonymously, whichever be the position of the verb:—

el contento y el aplauso fué grande, el disgusto y murmuracion no dejó de hacerse sentir,	| the satisfaction and applause were great. dissatisfaction and murmurs did not fail to make themselves felt.
--	--

693. When a verb has two or more subjects of different persons, it is put in the plural and agrees with the first person rather than the second or third, and with the second person rather than the third:—

ni yo ni mi amo la hemos visto jamás, [buenos, yo espero que tú y ella estéis irémos usted y yo,	| neither I nor my master have ever seen her. I hope that you and she are well. you and I will go.
--	---

694. When the subject is a relative pronoun, the verb properly agrees in person and number with the person to whom the relative refers, that is, with the antecedent:—

yo soy quien lo digo ,	I am the one who say it.
nosotros somos los que lo hemos visto ,	we are the ones who saw it, <i>or</i> we saw it. [better than we.
[mejor que yo,	
vosotros sois los que lo sabeis	you are the ones who know it
VV. son los que hablaron con él,	you are the ones who spoke to him.

a. In ordinary language, however, and even in literature, it is not uncommon to find the verb in the third person:—

yo soy quien lo dice ,	[favor,	I am the one who say (says) it.
ahora soy yo el que pide á V. el		it is I who ask you the favor now.

695. The third person plural is often used in reference to a vague subject equivalent to the passive voice, or to the French *on* with a singular verb:—

vuelva V. mañana, nos decían	come again to-morrow, said they
en todas partes, [casino,	everywhere. [to the club.
cuando cierran el café voy al	when they close the café, I go

(that is, *I was told everywhere to call the next day.* French: *me disait-on partout; lorsqu'on ferme le café, je m'en vais au cercle.*)

The Use of the Tenses.

Indicative Mode.

696. PRESENT TENSE.

hablo ; estoy hablando ,	I speak; I am speaking.
cómo ; estoy comiendo ,	I eat; I am eating.
vivo ; estoy viviendo ,	I live; I am living.

a. Expresses what occurs at the time in which it is asserted:—

escribo una carta,	I am writing a letter.
Juan lee el diario,	John is reading the paper.

REMARK. — In this sense, the Spanish may employ equally well the simple verb or the progressive form (§ 379) :—

<p>escribo, <i>or</i> estoy escribiendo</p>	<p>} una carta.</p>	<p>| Juan lee, <i>or</i> Juan está leyendo</p>	<p>} el diario.</p>
---	---------------------	--	---------------------

b. Expresses habit, custom, and absolute fact, without regard to a determinate period :—

<p>mi tío es periodista, doy lecciones de Castellano, nos levantamos temprano, mi hermana dibuja bien, Dios da los bienes y los quita, el hombre propone, y Dios dis- pone,</p>	<p>| my uncle is a journalist. I give Spanish lessons. we get up early. my sister draws well. [away. God gives wealth and takes it. man proposes, and God dis- poses.</p>
--	---

c. Replaces the future in familiar language :—

<p>voy al instante, vuelve en seguida, en ese caso no salgo, ¿qué hago? ¿consiento? no lo firmo, ¿me hace V. el favor?</p>	<p>| I'll go at once. he'll be back directly. in that case I'll not go out. what shall I do? consent? I will not sign it. will you do me the favor?</p>
---	---

d. Replaces the past definite in lively narration :—

<p>coge su sombrero y sale, llega, saluda, y me dice,</p>	<p>| he caught up his hat and went out. he came up, greeted me, and said.</p>
--	---

e. Used idiomatically after a clause with the impersonal verb **hace**, *it is*, with expressions of time :—

<p>hace mucho tiempo que no le veo, [en esta casa, hace cuatro años que vivimos hace ocho días que rondan la calle donde vivo, ¿cuánto tiempo hace que está V. en Madrid? [rando? ¿hace mucho que está V. espe-</p>	<p>| it is a long time since I have seen him. [house. we have lived four years in this for a week they have been prowling about the street I live in. how long have you been in Madrid? have you been waiting long?</p>
---	---

697. IMPERFECT TENSE.

hablaba; estaba hablando,	I spoke; I was speaking.
comía; estaba comiendo,	I ate; I was eating.
vivía; estaba viviendo,	I lived; I was living.

a. Denotes progressive continuity in the past :—

como decía ; como andaba , me hacía señales,	as I was saying; — walking. he made signs to me.
--	---

b. Describes an action or situation that was going on or existing, when some incident, expressed by the past definite, was introduced or intervened. In this case, the progressive form must be employed in English and may be also in Spanish :—

escribía (<i>or estaba escribiendo</i>) cuando entró Juan,	I was writing when John came in.
estaba (<i>or me encontraba</i>) en mi despacho cuando oí el grito,	I was in my office (<i>or study</i>) when I heard the cry.
miéntras que nos paseábamos , empezó á llover,	while we were taking a walk, it began to rain.

c. Denotes customary action or state during some previous period. In this case, it may be translated by the absolute imperfect (*I spoke*) or by the term “used to” :—

cuando vivía en Sevilla, visitaba amenudo los jardines del duque,	when I lived in Seville, I often visited the duke's gardens.
me gustaba andar por el río entre la Torre del Oro y el Puente de Barcas,	I used to like strolling along the river, between the Gold-Tower and the Bridge of Boats.
le veía todos los días,	I used to see him daily.
los Griegos cultivaban las letras y los Romanos la guerra,	the Greeks cultivated letters, and the Romans war.

REMARK.—Custom may also be expressed by the imperfect tense of the verb *solér*, *to be wont to*:—

en aquella época solíamos ir	at that period, we used to go to
cada año á los baños,	the baths every year.
solían acompañarnos muchos	many friends of both sexes were
amigos y amigas,	wont to accompany us.

d. It is translated by the absolute past when it involves the idea of more or less duration over a series of moments or of years. In this sense, it is found in vivid descriptions and narrations, or to declare what a person or object was during a certain period in the past:—

mirábase el muchacho con	the lad gazed at him with aston-
asombro,	ishment.
me decía muchas cosas que me	he told me many things which
causaban extrañeza, [casa,	surprised me. [mentioned.
estaba de huésped en dicha	I was a boarder in the house
Ciceron era grande orador,	Cicero was a great orator.
Alejandro era rey de Grecia,	Alexander was king of Greece.

e. In the old language, especially in the ballad poetry, the imperfect occasionally takes the place of the present when the verse requires it:—

Si hallo el agua clara,	If I find the water clear,
Túrbia la bebía yo,	When I drink it it is roiled.
— Ballad beginning " <i>Fonte frida</i> ."	

Que un Cristiano dejó muerto,	I have slain a Christian,
Tras mí venía el alcalde,	The sheriff is pursuing me.
— Ballad " <i>Yo m'era mora Morayma</i> ."	

f. In familiar language, the imperfect often replaces the conditional:—

si le hubiera dicho la verdad, me	if I had told him the truth, I
exponía á un regaño,	should have risked a scolding.
era tan amigo del padre Quieto,	he was so partial to father <i>Ease</i> ,
que no le movía un terremoto,	that an earthquake would not
	disturb him.

REMARK. — The simple form of the English past tense (*I spoke, I wrote*) is expressed then, in Spanish, by two distinct tenses — the imperfect, denoting prolonged past action or custom; and by the past definite, denoting past action without continuity, a past incident: —

hablaba , <i>I spoke</i> , — that is, <i>I was speaking.</i>	|	hablé , <i>I spoke</i> , — that is, <i>on one occasion past.</i>
---	--	---

698. PAST DEFINITE TENSE.

hablé , <i>I spoke.</i>	|	comí , <i>I ate.</i>	|	viví , <i>I lived.</i>
--------------------------------	--	-----------------------------	--	-------------------------------

a. Indicates what occurred on *one* occasion in the past, whether a short time or ages before, of which no part is continued to the present, and without involving duration or extension of time. It is, therefore, the tense of absolute past time, corresponding to the Greek aorist: —

le vi hace un momento, lo dijo ayer, pero lo niega hoy,	|	I saw him a moment ago. he said so yesterday, but he denies it to-day.
Juan salió temprano, [corial, el mes pasado estuve en el Es- Alejandro murió joven, Cain mató á su hermano,	|	John went out early. last month I was at the Escorial. Alexander died young. Cain slew his brother.

b. Hence the past definite is the favorite tense for historical narration, in every case in which the action or state is devoid of the idea of repetition, custom, and prolonged duration, which distinguishes it radically from the imperfect: —

hasta la mañana del ocho no pudo el confesor enterar del edicto á Carlos III, quien sin demora mandó á su ministro despachar un correo al Inqui- sidor general,	|	until the morning of the eighth, the confessor was not able to inform the king of the edict, who immediately directed his minister to despatch a courier to the Inquisitor-general.
--	--	--

— Ferrer del Rio, *Cárlos III*, Madrid, 1856; I. 388.

la ciudad de Granada **fué** poblacion de los de Damasco, que **vinieron** con Tarif su capitán; i diez años despues que los Alárabes **echaron** á los Godos del señorío de España, la **escogieron** por habitacion,

the city of Granada was settled by people from Damascus, who came with Tarif their leader, and ten years after the Arabs drove the Goths from power in Spain, they selected it for their residence.

— Mendoza, *Guerra de Granada*, Lisbon, 1627; f. 2, b.

c. In the ancient language, the past definite was often replaced by the old pluperfect in *ra* (**hablara**, **comiera**, from the Latin *fabularam*, *comederam*), now limited mostly to the subjunctive mood:—

Él **dixera** otra razon, | He gave a different message.

— Ballad "*Rosa fresca*."

Por ahí **fuera** á pasar, | He passed that way.

— Ballad "*Fonte frida*."

Las cartas echó en el fuego, | Into the fire he threw the notes,

Y al mensajero **matara**, | And slew the messenger.

— Ballad "*Paseábase el rey moro*."

699. PAST INDEFINITE TENSE.

he hablado,

I have spoken.

he comido,

I have eaten.

he vivido,

I have lived.

he estado hablando,

I have been speaking.

he estado comiendo,

I have been eating.

he estado viviendo,

I have been living.

a. Denotes what is absolutely past, but wholly undetermined as to the specific period:—

he escrito una carta,

I have written a letter.

no digas nada á nadie de lo que

do not tell anybody anything

hemos tratado, [cion,

about what we have talked.

han cumplido con su obligacion,

they have discharged their duty.

¿habeis quedado en no ir?

have you decided not to go?

VV. **no han dicho** nada,

you have said nothing.

España **ha producido** grandes

Spain has produced great men.

hombres.

b. Indicates a determinate epoch in the past which has not entirely elapsed :—

hoy hemos escrito algunas cartas,	we have written some letters to-day.
mi hermano se marchó la semana pasada y ha vuelto hoy,	my brother went away last week, and has returned to-day.
este año ha habido mucha lluvia, [tal?	there has been a good deal of rain this year. [So?
¿cuándo ha visto V. á fulano de le he visto este mes, }	when have you seen Mr. So and { I have seen him this month.
no le vi el mes pasado, }	{ I did not see him last month.

c. This tense is often used incorrectly at the present day in imitation of the French :—

POPULAR.	CORRECT.
he ido anoche al teatro.	anoche fui al teatro.
ha venido ayer y se ha alojado en la fonda del Cisne.	vino ayer y se alojó en la fonda del Cisne.

d. The progressive form is used the same as the common one, except that it can only stand when the time during which an action or state lasted is mentioned or easily implied :—

¿qué ha hecho V. hoy? [hoy?	what have you done to-day?
¿qué ha estado V. haciendo	what have you been doing to-day?
he estado escribiendo cartas,	I have been writing letters.

700. PLUPERFECT TENSE.

había hablado,	I had spoken.
había comido,	I had eaten.
había vivido,	I had lived.
había estado hablando,	I had been speaking.
había estado comiendo,	I had been eating.
había estado viviendo,	I had been living.

a. Expresses an action or event that is absolutely completed, with reference to another which was simultaneous with or subsequent to it, expressed or implied :—

yo había leído ya un traslado del libro, ántes que saliese impreso,	I had already read a transcript of the book, before it came out in print.
él había estado durmiendo durante la conversacion,	he had been sleeping during the conversation.
le pregunté si había oído alguna cosa nueva,	I asked him if he had heard any- thing new.

701. PAST ANTERIOR.

(cuando) hube hablado ,	(when) I had spoken.
(cuando) hube comido ,	(when) I had eaten.
(cuando) hube vivido ,	(when) I had lived.

a. Expresses the same as the pluperfect, but is always preceded by some conjunction of time, such as, **cuando**, *when*; **despues que**, *after*; **luego que**, *así que*, **tan pronto como**, *as soon as*; **no bien**, *no sooner*; **apénas**, *scarcely, hardly*; etc. :—

cuando hube leído el oficio, se lo devolví,	when I had read the (official) pa- per, I handed it back to him.
luego que hube escrito la con- testacion, la entregó al mozo,	after he had written the answer, he delivered it to the waiter.
tan pronto como hubimos pe- netrado en el anden, se puso en marcha el tren,	as soon as we had reached the platform of the station, the train began to move off.

702. A simple form of the pluperfect indicative is often met with in the exalted prose, or poetical, style, a form derived from the Latin original in *-aram, -eram*, etc., and which is now chiefly confined to the imperfect subjunctive in *-ra* :—

el pendon de Castilla ondeó luego en una de las torres (de la Alhambra) donde tantos siglos tremolára el estandarte del Profeta,	soon the pennon of Castile float- ed out over one of the towers (of the Alhambra) where, for so many centuries, the Proph- et's standard <i>had waved</i> .
---	---

— Lafuente, *Hist. de España*, 1850.

divorciado del partido en cuyas aras lo sacrificára todo,	divorced from the party on whose altars he <i>had sacrificed</i> all.
— Emilio Castelar, <i>Ferdinand VII</i> , 1864.	

abominado de la teocr�cia � quien sirviera ,	detested by the fanatics whom he <i>had served</i> .	— <i>Ibid.</i>
--	---	----------------

Trayendo � nuestros pechos la dulzura	Restoring to our hearts the joys of peace
Que perdieran un tiempo a�n no olvidado,	That they <i>had lost</i> in days not yet forgotten.

— *Sonnet to King Alfonso*, 1877.

703. FUTURE TENSE.

hablar , *I shall speak*. | **comer **, *I shall eat*. | **vivir **, *I shall live*.

a. Denotes future time :—

escribir� la carta ma�ana por la ma�ana,	I shall write the letter to-morrow morning.
� har� V. en ese caso?	what will you do in that case?
la guerra acabar� pronto,	the war will close soon.
habr� una cosecha abundante este a�o,	there will be an abundant har- vest this year.
� cuando vendr� ? sabes?	when will he come, do you know?
ser� V. elegido diputado,	you will be elected to Congress.

b. It is employed in a potential sense in interrogative sentences that are undeniable in the estimation of the interrogator ; also in queries :—

� habr� desgracia mayor que la mia? [m�s ruin?	can there be a greater misfortune than mine? [light?
� podr� manifestarse infamia	can baser villainy be brought to

c. Replaces the present tense, when something is affirmed of which there is a doubt. In such case, some adverb or phrase must be inserted like *perhaps*, *I suspect*, *I wonder*; and when speaking of time or age, *about* :—

vendrá para abonarme la cantidad que me debe,	he is coming, perhaps, to pay me the amount he owes me.
no sé á qué vendrá ,	I do not know what he comes for.
¿cuántos años tendrá ?	about how old is he? [years old.
tendrá unos veinte años,	he is somewhere about twenty
¿qué hora será ?	what time is it, I wonder?
serán las diez,	it must be about ten.

d. Denotes not so much future time as *will*, moral consent or refusal :—

haré todo cuanto V. quiera,	I will do all you desire.
no lo haré de ningun modo,	I will not do it by any means.

704. Idiomatic future forms are :—

a. **Haber de**, *to have to, to be to, to will, to be about to*, denoting mild duty, intention, design, with reference to the future :—

mañana he de ir á comer con un amigo mío,	to-morrow I am to dine with a friend of mine.
ella ha de entregar el lunes por la mañana, [de ir,	she is to make her returns Monday morning.
la aseguro á V. que no hemos	I assure you that we will not go.

b. **Haber de** also signifies possible possession, *to believe that one has, must have* :—

he de tener en casa un ejemplar del libro que V. busca,	I think I have at home a copy of the book you seek.
--	---

c. **Tener que**, *to have to, must*, denotes necessity, positive obligation :—

tenemos los pobres que trabajar para ganar el pan de cada día,	we poor people have to toil to earn our daily bread.
¿qué tiene V. que hacer hoy?	what have you got to do to-day?
tenemos que hablar,	a word with you (<i>seriously</i>).

d. **Tener que** means also what remains to be said, done, or denotes expostulation :—

¿qué tiene V. que decir?	what have you to say?
él no tiene nada que ver con eso,	he has nothing to do with that.

e. Tener de, to have to, denotes provision : —

¿tenemos algo de comer?	or	have we anything to eat?
¿hay algo de comer?		is there anything to eat?

f. Ir á, with an infinitive, to be going to : —

voy á visitarle,	I am going to pay him a visit.
va á ver lo que sale,	he is going to see what will result.
van á oír misa,	they are going to attend mass.

705. FUTURE PERFECT.

habré hablado,	I shall have spoken.
habré comido,	I shall have eaten.
habré vivido,	I shall have lived.

a. This tense bears the same relation to the simple future that the pluperfect and past anterior do to the past definite : —

ya habré terminado la tarēa	I shall have finished my task
cuando llegue el verano,	when summer comes.
mañana á estas horas ya habrá	to-morrow, about this time, all
concluido todo,	will be over.

*b. The same special rules belong to this tense as to the simple form (§ 703, *b, c*) to express a conjecture in the tone of conviction or confidence : —*

¿se habrá visto cosa más enre-	could anything be more in-
dada? [chico?	volved? [have had?
¿qué vicio habrá tenido el	what bad habit could the boy
ya habrás oído decir eso	doubtless you have often heard
muchas veces, [mente,	that said. [yourself clearly.
no te habrás expresado clara-	probably you have not expressed
habrán recibido malas noti-	they must have received bad
cias,	news.

706. CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

hablaría, I should speak. | comería, I should eat. | viviría, I should live.

a. Used chiefly in conditional sentences of which it naturally forms the apodasis or conclusion, while the

clause with **si, if**, forms the *protasis* or states the condition :—

leería todo el día, si tuviese tiempo,	I should read all day, if I had time.
si no creía que me hiciese daño, comería aún más,	if I did not think it would hurt me, I should eat even more.
viviría mucho más tiempo, si se cuidase mejor,	he would live much longer, if he took better care of himself.

b. In the protasis the forms in *-se* and *-ra* are interchangeable :—

leería todo el día, si tuviera (or tuviese) libros,	I should read all day, if I had books.
--	--

c. The clauses in the protasis and apodosis may freely exchange places :—

si tuviese (or tuviera) dinero, compraría la finca, [haría ?	if I had money, I would purchase the property. [would you do?
si estuviese V. en mi lugar ¿qué	if you were in my place, what

d. The protasis may be understood or implied :—

yo no lo haría de modo alguno, dijo que vendría ,	I would not do it by any means. he said that he would come.
él consentiría en ello, yo nó , creyeron que habría una paz duradera,	he would agree to it, I would not. they believed that there would be a lasting peace.

e. To express a wish or modest request :—

desearía ver las habitaciones de este cuarto.	I would like to see the rooms of this apartment.
--	--

REMARK.—In this sense, the subjunctive form in *-ra* with the verb *querer*, *to wish*, *to like*, is more common :—

quisiera ver lo que tiene V. en telas de algodón,	I should like to see what you have in cotton goods.
--	---

f. To indicate an approximate or uncertain statement in narrations :—

sería la una de la madrugada,	it was <i>about</i> one A.M.
serían las dos de la tarde,	it was <i>about</i> two P.M.
dicha señora sería muy hermosa,	the lady you mention was very beautiful, <i>I suppose</i> .

g. To express possibility or fitness :—

¿ sería verdad eso?	could that be so?
¿ debería de hacerlo yo?	ought I to do it, forsooth?

The Use of the Subjunctive Mode.

707. The subjunctive mode expresses necessity, doubt, or emotion, and is chiefly used in a clause dependent on a verb containing one of these ideas.

708. In independent and principal sentences the subjunctive is used :—

a. In the present tense to supply the imperative mode, affirmatively in the first and third persons, and negatively in all persons :—

sea yo,	<i>let me be.</i>	no sea yo,	<i>let me not be.</i>
(<i>sé tú</i>),	(be thou).	no seas (<i>tú</i>),	<i>do not be.</i>
sea él,	<i>let him be.</i>	no sea (<i>él</i>),	<i>let him not be.</i>
sea V.,	<i>be (sing.).</i>	no sea V.,	<i>do not be (sing.).</i>
seamos nosotros,	<i>let us be.</i>	no seamos,	<i>let us not be.</i>
(<i>sed vosotros</i>),	(be ye).	no seais,	<i>do not be.</i>
sean ellos,	<i>let them be.</i>	no sean,	<i>let them not be.</i>
sean VV.,	<i>be (plur.).</i>	no sean VV.,	<i>do not be (plur.).</i>
haga yo,	<i>let me do.</i>	no haga yo,	<i>let me not do.</i>
(<i>haz</i>),	(do thou).	no hagas,	<i>do not do.</i>
haga,	<i>let him do.</i>	no haga,	<i>let him not do.</i>
haga V.,	<i>do (sing.).</i>	no haga V.,	<i>do not do (sing.).</i>
hagamos,	<i>let us do.</i>	no hagamos,	<i>let us not do.</i>
(<i>haced</i>),	(do ye).	no hagais,	<i>do not do.</i>
hagan,	<i>let them do.</i>	no hagan,	<i>let them not do.</i>
hagan VV.,	<i>do (plur.).</i>	no hagan VV.,	<i>do not do (plur.).</i>

REMARK. — Thus it will be seen that the imperative has only one proper form in each number, and that in the affirmative diction. In all the other persons, and throughout the negative inflection, the subjunctive must be used. Hence, we cannot say, *no haz, no haced; no sé, no sed*; but only *no hagas, no hagais; no seas, no seas*:—

haz lo que <i>te</i> digo,	do what I tell thee.
no hagas lo que <i>te</i> prohibo,	do not do what I forbid thee.
haced lo que <i>os</i> digo,	do what I tell you.
no hagais lo que <i>os</i> prohibo,	do not do what I forbid you.

And in polite address:—

haga V. lo que le digo,	do what I tell you (<i>sing.</i>).
no haga V. lo que le prohibo,	do not do what I forbid you.
hagan VV. lo que les digo,	do what I tell you (<i>plur.</i>).
no hagan VV. lo que les prohibo,	do not do what I forbid you.

b. To express a gentle command, exhortation, suggestion:—

séale la tierra leve,	may the ground be light over him.
alábente los cielos,	may the heavens praise thee.
hágame V. el favor,	pray do me the favor.
pidan lo que quieran,	let them ask for what they wish.
¡viva el rey!	long live the king!
sepan cuantos estas cartas vie-	know all men by these presents
ren,	(<i>let all know who shall see, etc.</i>).
pongamos fin á la plática,	let us end the discussion.
sepamos qué es esto,	let us know what this is.
ándeme yo caliente, y ríase la	let me be warm, and the people
gente (<i>Góngora, 1627</i>),	may scorn.

REMARK. — With this use of the subjunctive, *que* may be added — an ellipse to be explained by understanding some verb expressing a command or wish:—

que pase, <i>let him enter.</i>	que baile, <i>let him dance.</i> [<i>out.</i>
que salga, <i>let him come out.</i>	que no salga nadie, <i>let no one go</i>
que venga otro, <i>bring another.</i>	que se quite, <i>take him (or it) off.</i>

c. With indeterminate expressions involving indifference:—

venga lo que viniere,
 salga lo que saliere,
 sea la que fuere la contestacion,
 digan lo que quieran,
 donde quiera que **vayan**,

come what may.
 be the issue what it may.
 be the answer what it may.
 let them say what they please.
 wherever they go.

d. With correlatives that express alternative : —

que lo **sepa** ó no,
 que **llueva** ó que no **llueva**,
 que **quieras** ó no **quieras**,
quisiese ó no **quisiese**, [otro,
 ya **sea** por un motivo, ya **sea** por
alégrese ó no el pueblo,

whether he knows it or not.
 whether it rains or not.
 whether you will or no.
 whether he would or not. [other.
 whether for one reason or for another.
 whether the people rejoice or not.

e. In the present or imperfect with verbs denoting a wish : —

plegue á Dios no **salga** así,
 [allí,
pluguiese á Dios me **encontrára**
ojalá **hubiese** escuchado mis
 consejos, [obra,
permita Dios que lo **pongas** por

God grant that it may not turn
 out so !
 would God I had been there !
 would that he had listened to my
 counsels ! [practice !
 God grant that you may put it in

709. The subjunctive mode is employed in dependent sentences connected with the principal clause by the conjunction **que**, *that* : —

a. When the principal clause contains a term that denies, doubts, or questions the assertion or possibility of the assertion contained in the dependent sentence : —

no **creo** que lo **haya** hecho,
dudo que lo **hayan** dicho, [tado ?
¿es verdad que lo **hayan** inten-
no pudo ser que lo **negasen**,
ni puede sostenerse que **fuera**
 más tiránico que sus contem-
 poráneos,
no se sabe que lo **hayan** variado,

I do not believe he did it.
 I doubt whether they said so.
 is it true that they attempted it?
 they could not have denied it.
 and it cannot be maintained that
 he was more tyrannical than
 his contemporaries. [it.
 it is not known that they changed

REMARK.—If the dependent verb refers to the future, the appropriate tense is employed:—

¿cree V. que **triunfarémos**? | do you think we shall triumph?

b. When the verb in the principal clause denotes hope, expectation, fear, apprehension:—

esperemos á que salgan todos,	| let us wait for them all to go out.
temo que no haya recibido la carta,	| I fear that he has not received the letter.

c. After verbs expressive of a command, direction, caution, wish, desire, entreaty, preference, concession, permission:—

mandó que se hiciera,	| he ordered it to be done.
dispuso que el rey asistiese á la junta,	| he took measures for the king to be present at the meeting.
quiere que nos marchemos,	| he desires us to go away.
le supliqué que no se fuese,	| I begged him not to go away.
mire V. que no rompan el plato,	| see that they do not break the plate.
[pregunta,	
permítame V. que le haga una	| allow me to ask you a question.
admito que no lo haya dicho,	| I grant that he did not say so.
prefiero que no dudes,	| I prefer you should not doubt.

d. After terms denoting some strong emotion, such as joy, grief, regret, surprise, vexation:—

me alegraré que no haya sucedido desgracia alguna, [venir,	| I shall rejoice if no accident occurred. [come.
siento que no hayámos podido	| I regret that we were not able to
me admiro que no lo confieses	| I am surprised that you do not
con franqueza,	| frankly confess it.

e. After impersonal expressions, unless they imply positive certainty:—

conviene que lo sepa,	| it is proper for him to know it.
es lástima que lo niegue,	| it is a pity that he denies it.
es fácil que no venga,	| it is probable that he will not come.

es justo que **cobremos** nuestros derechos,
 es necesario que lo **haga** V. pronto,
 era preciso que la intolerancia se **personificára** en alguno,
 no es seguro que **estén** más obligados ahora que **estuviesen** en vida á satisfacer indiscretas preguntas,

it is just that we secure our rights.

you must do it soon (*it is necessary that you, etc.*).

it was necessary that intolerance should take form in some one.

it is not certain that they are more obliged now than they were in life to satisfy indiscreet inquiries.

710. The subjunctive is employed after certain conjunctions in sentences expressing possibility, uncertainty, and indefinite future time. Such are:—

antes que, *before.*

á ménos que, *unless.*

á fin de que, *to the end that.*

aunque, *although.*

bien que, *although.*

como, *when, as.*

como si, } *as if.*

cual si, } *[ing.*

como quiera que, *notwithstanding.*

con tal que, *provided that.*

cuando, *when.*

dado que, *granted that.*

en caso de que, *in case that.*

hasta que, *until.*

hasta donde, *as far as.*

luego que, *as soon as.*

miéntras, *while.*

no sea que, *lest.*

ojalá, *would that.*

para que, *in order that.*

por — que, *however.*

siempre que, *whenever.*

sin que, *without.*

supuesto que, *supposing that.*

antes que **escribiese** V. este libro, ni acaso **imaginára** escribirlo,

aunque **pierda** la herencia, no consentiré,

como si no **comprendiera**,

con tal que lo **haga**,

se lo diré cuando **pueda**,

¿que dirá tu amo cuando **vea** lo que has hecho?

hasta que **venga**,

before you wrote this book, or perhaps had an idea of writing it.

although I lose the inheritance, I will not consent.

as if he did not understand.

provided he do it.

I will tell him when I can.

what will your master say when he sees what you have done?

until I (*or* he) come.

fuego que **hayan entregado** el
dinero, venga V. á mi casa,
para que lo **crea**,
por sabio que **sea**,
sin que lo **supiésemos**,

as soon as they have delivered
the money, come to my house.
that he may believe it.
however wise he be.
without our having known it.

711. The subjunctive is used in relative sentences, when the relative pronoun refers to a negative or restrictive idea, or to an interrogation involving a negative answer :—

no hay quien lo **crea**,
no había quien le **ganase** en mal
genio,
tampoco fué el único que en su
siglo **emprendiese** guerras
religiosas,
no hay mal que cien años **dure**,
sólo dos personas hay que **sepan**
más de él que V.,
¿hay alguno que **haga** ménos
que él?

there is no one who believes it.
there was no one who exceeded
him in bad temper.
nor was he the only one who, in
his time, engaged in religious
wars.
there is no ill that lasts forever.
there are only two persons who
know more of him than you.
is there any one who does less
than he?

b. The subjunctive is further used when the relative refers to persons, things, and ideas, that are unknown, or are mentioned in a general indefinite sense :—

si cayeras en manos de personas
que te **supieran** manejar, ya
trabajarías bien,
aguardaba el paso de algun al-
deano que le **diese** buenos
informes,
si existe álguien que **haya leído**
todo lo que hemos escrito,
habrá notado, *etc.*,
deudores serán de VV. cuantos
escriban sobre Felipe II,
quien quiera que **seas**,
adonde quiera que **vaya**,
venga lo que **viniere**,

if you came into the hands of per-
sons who knew how to manage
you, you would work well.
he waited for some villager to
pass by who might give him
reliable information.
if there is any one who has read
all that we have written, he
has doubtless noted that, *etc.*
all who write on Philip II will be
your debtors.
whoever you may be.
wherever he goes.
come what will (*or may*).

Correspondence of Tenses.

712. The present subjunctive corresponds to the present and future indicative:—

quiero que venga,	I wish him to come.
no quiero que se vaya,	I do not wish him to go.
es preciso que la historia hable,	history must speak (<i>it is necessary that history speak</i>).
le rogaré que se abstenga,	I will ask him to abstain. [stay.
será preciso que se quede,	it will be necessary for him to

713. The imperfect subjunctive in either form corresponds to any past tense of the indicative:—

quería que viniese (or viniera),	I wished him to come.
no quise que se fuese (or se fuera),	I did not wish him to go.
fué preciso que hablase,	it was necessary for him to speak.
ha querido que se entendiesen (or se entendieran),	he desired that they should come to an understanding.
había exigido que no volviesen (or volvieran),	he had required that they should not return.

714. The past indefinite subjunctive corresponds to the present or future of the indicative:—

es fácil que se haya ido,	it is probable that he has gone.
no creo que haya sobrado nada,	I do not believe anything was left.

715. The pluperfect subjunctive in either form corresponds to any past tense of the indicative:—

no pensé que se hubiese ido tan pronto,	I did not suppose that he would have gone so soon.
fué preciso que se hubiera enterado cuanto ántes,	it was necessary for him to have informed himself at once.

716. The future and future perfect subjunctive are employed in sentences introduced by *si, if; cuando, when;*

miéntras, *while*, or by a relative pronoun or adverb, when reference is made to a future contingency : —

si tuviere tiempo , vendré,	if I should have time, I will come.
mientras durare la vida,	while life shall last.
cuando hubiere concluido lo que	when he has finished what he
tiene que hacer, escribirá la	has to do, he will write the
carta, [ren,	letter.
devolveré todo cuanto me die-	I shall return all they give me.

REMARK. — Instead of this tense, the present or past indefinite subjunctive may be employed : —

si tenga tiempo,	if I have time.
mientras dure la vida,	while life lasts.
todo cuanto me den ,	all they give me.
cuando haya concluido,	when he has finished.

The Use of the Infinitive Mode.

717. The infinitive, as a verbal noun (represented in English by the ending *-ing*), may be inflected precisely like any substantive in the singular : —

hablar , <i>to speak, speaking.</i>	vivir , <i>to live, living.</i>
de hablar , <i>of speaking.</i>	de vivir , <i>of living.</i>
á hablar , <i>to speaking.</i>	á vivir , <i>to living.</i>
con hablar , or } <i>by speaking.</i>	con vivir , or } <i>by living.</i>
hablando ,	viviendo ,

hablar mucho es un vicio,	to talk much is a bad habit.
el arte de bien vivir ,	the art of living correctly.
muy propenso á mentir ,	much addicted to falsifying.
con hablar } la gente se en-	by talking, people come to an
hablando } tiende,	understanding.
el apetito viene { comiendo , }	appetite comes by eating.
{ con comer , }	

718. Hence the infinitive stands after all prepositions : —

antes de **levantarse**,
después de **comer**,
sin **preguntar**,

before getting up.
after eating (*or* dinner).
without asking *or* inquiring.

REMARK. — The preposition **en**, *in*, is, however, usually accompanied by the gerund when it signifies (1) *after*, (2) *by*. In the latter case, we may substitute *con* with the infinitive, or the gerund may be used alone: —

en comiendo, salgo á dar un
paseito,
en entrando en el despacho es
inaccesible á todos, [cultad,
en pagándole se zanja la difi-

after eating, I go out and take a
short walk.
after he enters the office, he is
inaccessible to all. [ficulty.
by paying him, you heal the dif-

719. The definite article is usually employed with the infinitive as subject or predicate: —

el saber es siempre útil, [vida,
el comer es indispensable á la
á Pedro toca **el gobernar**,
sería curioso **el comparar** esta
doctrina con la otra,
el mejor medio es **el probar** que
hay un pensamiento propio
filosófico en España,

knowledge is always useful.
eating is indispensable to life.
it is Peter's duty to govern.
it would be curious to compare
this doctrine with the other.
the best way is to prove that
Spain has a philosophic idea
of her own.

but

gastar en un banquete la renta
de un año es locura,
aunque sea **repetir** lo que nadie
ignora, los Españoles estamos
atrasados,

to expend on a banquet a year's
income is folly.
although it be to repeat what no
one is ignorant of, we Span-
iards are behind the age.

720. The infinitive governs its case only when used substantively; otherwise, its apparent object is a true subject of the verbal idea: —

el dulce **lamentar** de dos pasto-
res (= el dulce **lamento**),

the sweet lament of two shep-
herds.

oigo el murmurar de las fuentes (= oigo el murmullo),	I hear the playing of the fountains.
al acabar de la vida (= al fin de la vida), [dia],	at the close of life.
al caer del dia (= á la caida del	at the close of day.

but

al alzarse el telon,	when the curtain rises (<i>or</i> rose).
al acabarse la vida,	when life closes (<i>or</i> closed).
al entrar el extranjero,	when the foreigner entered.
al asomarse al balcon,	on looking out at the balcony.
al caer el dia,	when the day declined.

721. The infinitive is used in the dative with the article to replace a finite clause introduced by a conjunction of time, as *when, after, as* ; or a preposition, as *in* : —

al hablar así,	in speaking thus.
al tocar á misa,	when the bell tolled for mass.
al verle yo tan distraído,	when I saw him thus inattentive.
al cumplir Simon los trece años perdió su último hermano,	when Simon was thirteen years old, he lost his last brother.

a. Without the article, the preposition *á*, with an infinitive, often replaces the protasis of a conditional sentence : —

á saber lo que resultaría (= si hubiese sabido),	if I had known what would come of it.
á no confesarlo , saldría peor (= si no lo confesase),	if he did not confess it, it would turn out worse.
á no ser yo el que lo pedí, no tendría inconveniente,	were it not I who asked for it, I should have no objection.

722. The infinitive is governed directly, or indirectly by a preposition, according to the regimen of the noun, adjective, or verb, on which it depends.

723. The infinitive depends directly on the verb when both have the same subject, except verbs of commanding, causing, hindering, or forbidding, which may take the infinitive *or* a subjunctive. Such verbs are:—

celebrar, *to be glad to.*
 conviene, *it is expedient to.*
 deber, *to ought, be to.*
 dejar, *to let, allow to.*
 desear, *to desire, want to.*
 determinar, *to resolve to.*
 esperar, *to hope, expect to.*
 gustar, *to like to.*
 hacer, *to make, cause to.*
 impedir, *to prevent from.*
 mandar, *to have, order.*
 más vale, *it is better to.*

celebraría **verle** á V. allí,
 no conviene **hacerlo**,
 debo **decirle** á V. que . . . ,
 no me deja **concluir**,
 deseo **hablar** con él,
 me gusta **comer** tarde,
 ¿qué me manda V. **hacer**?
 piensa **partir** pronto,
 se prohíbe **fiar** carteles,

merecer, *to deserve to.*
 necesitar, *to want to.*
 oír, *to hear.*
 osar, *to dare, venture to.*
 pensar, *to intend to.*
 poder, *to be able to, can.*
 pretender, *to claim, try to.*
 procurar, *to try to.*
 prohibir, *to forbid to.*
 querer, *to wish to.*
 saber, *to know how to, can.*
 temer, *to fear to.*

I should be glad to see you there.
 it is not wise to do it.
 I must tell you that
 he will not let me finish.
 I want to speak to him.
 I like to dine late.
 what do you direct me to do?
 he intends to go soon.
 it is forbidden to post notices.

724. The infinitive is governed by a preposition according to the signification or natural regimen of the noun, adjective, or verb, on which it depends:—

725. By the preposition *á*:—

a. With verbs of motion, and such as involve the idea of direction toward an end. Such are:—

aprender *á, to learn to.*
 aspirar *á, to aspire to.*
 comenzar *á, to commence to.*

dar *á, to give to.*
 echar *á, to begin to.*
 empezar *á, to begin to.*

enseñar á, *to teach to.*
 enviar á, *to send to.*
 ir á, *to go to, be going to.*
 obligar á, *to compel to.*

pasar á, *to go, come to.*
 salir á, *to go out to.*
 venir á, *to come to.*
 volver á, *to — again.*

Together with many reflexive verbs expressive of strong moral assertion, effort, or decision, such as :—

atreverse á, *to dare to.*
 decidirse á, *to resolve to.*
 esforzarse á, *to try to.*

negarse á, *to refuse to.*
 ponerse á, *to begin to.*
 resistirse á, *to resist.*

aprende á leer y á escribir,
 me dió á entender,
 echóse á reir,
 empieza á llover,
 voy á verle pronto,
 vamos á dar un paseo,
 viene á decirle eso que sabes,

he is learning to read and write.
 he gave me to understand.
 he began to laugh.
 it begins to rain.
 I am going to see him soon.
 let us go and take a walk.
 he comes to tell you that you
 know of.

vuelve á salir,
 no nos volverá á ver,
 se niega á aceptarlo,
 no se atrevió á decirselo,

he goes out again.
 he will not see us again.
 he refuses to accept it.
 he did not dare tell it to him.

b. In certain elliptical phrases, such as :—

á saber ; á decir la verdad, | namely ; to speak truly.

726. By the preposition *de* :—

a. With nouns and adjectives which are followed by a genitive :—

tiene el atrevimiento *de* decir-
 melo á la cara,
 no tengo costumbre *de* mentir,
 tiene ganas *de* comer,
 no me da la gana *de* hacerlo,
 hágame V. el favor *de* decirme
 eso,
 tengo vergüenza *de* pedirlo,

he has the impudence to say it
 to my face. [falsehoods.
 I am not in the habit of telling
 he has a desire to eat.
 I don't choose to do it.
 do me the favor to tell me that.
 I am ashamed to ask it.

no tengo el gusto de conocer	I have not the pleasure of know-
á V.,	ing you.
es difícil de conseguir,	it is difficult to attain.
soy deseoso de aprender,	I am desirous to learn.

b. With verbs represented by the following :—

acabar de , <i>to have just.</i>	desistir de , <i>to cease from.</i>
acordarse de , <i>to remember to.</i>	haber de , <i>to be about to.</i> [<i>with.</i>
alegrarse de , <i>to be glad to.</i>	ocuparse de , <i>to busy one's self</i>
arrepentirse de , <i>to repent of.</i>	olvidarse, <i>to forget to.</i>
dejar de , <i>to fail to, leave off.</i>	tratar de , <i>to try to.</i>
acaba de salir,	he has just gone out.
me acuerdo de haber dicho,	I remember to have said.
se alegra de vernos,	he is glad to see us.
no deja de escribir,	he does not cease writing.
hemos de vivir,	we must live.
se me olvidó de decirlo,	I forgot to say so.
trataré de venderlos,	I shall try to sell them.

c. After the verb *to be*, used impersonally :—

es de desear que no venga,	it is desirable that he do not
	come. [soon.
es de esperar que sea pronto,	it is to be hoped that it will be

727. By the preposition *en* :—

se empeñó en querer ir á verle,	he persisted in his desire to go
	and see him.
no tardará en venir,	he will not be long coming.

728. By the preposition *con*, or the gerund with or without *en* :—

con hablar (en hablando , hab-	by talking thus, he thought that
lando) así, creía sacar algun	he would derive some advan-
provecho,	tage.

729. By the preposition *para*, *in order to*, *to*, *for the purpose of*, *about to*, expressing purpose, result, use, situation :—

se abriga uno **para** no tener frío,
tiene bastante dinero **para** com-
prar la casa, [**para** comer,
se come **para** vivir, no se vive
el hombre nace **para** morir,
quien tiene oídos **para** oír, oiga,
no sirve **para** aprender,
estoy **para** marcharme,

one wraps up so as not to be cold.
he has money enough to buy the
house. [eat.
we eat to live, we do not live to
man is born to die. [hear.
he who hath ears to hear, let him
he is not fit to learn.
I am about to set out.

730. By the preposition **por**, *for the sake of, on account of, to*, expressing motive, result, reason, willingness, or anticipation :—

trabaja **por** confundir á su con-
trario,
habla sólo **por** hablar,
no me lo dijo ántes, **por** no faltar
á un compromiso,
me regañó **por** no haber hecho
lo que él quería,
llevaba la cara embozada **por** no
darse á conocer,
estuve **por** escribirle,
la casa está **por** acabar,

he labors to silence his adver-
sary. [talking.
he only talks for the sake of
he did not tell me before, so as
not to break a promise.
he scolded me for not having
done as he wished me to do.
he kept his face muffled, so as
not to be known.
I was willing to write him.
the house is yet to be finished.

731. The infinitive may stand in sudden exclamations as an imperative, or as an interrogation of surprise :—
¡callar! ; no correr! ; negarlo yo? | hush! don't run! I deny it?

732. The transitive verbs **oir**, *to hear*, and **ver**, *to see*, are followed by the infinitive, and not by the gerund as in English :—

me vió **venir**,
le ví **acercarse**,

he saw me coming.
I saw him approaching.

REMARK. — With intransitive verbs, the gerund is used as in English :—

vino **corriendo**,
se fué **murmurando**,

he came running.
he went off grumbling.

The Gerund.

733. The gerund partakes of the nature of the verb from which it is derived, and has the same regimen. It is, therefore, invariable in gender and number :—

viéndole acercarse le saludé,
[do una promesa,
no quiso decírmelo, **pretextan-**
los caballeros le recibieron con
amables sonrisas, **recono-**
ciéndole el mérito de haber
conquistado el corazón de la
dama,
su doncella entró en el comedor,
y **acercándose** á su oído, le
dijo secretamente algunas pa-
labras,
volviéndose á uno de los que
servían la mesa, añadió,

seeing him approach, I saluted
him. [promise.
he would not tell me, pleading a
the gentlemen received him with
pleasant smiles, recognizing in
him the merit of having won
the heart of the lady.

her maid came into the dining-
room, and, approaching her,
she whispered in her ear pri-
vately a few words.

turning to one of those who
served the table, he added.

734. The gerund is freely used with certain verbs to form the idea of progression, of something going on in succession :—

los que **se iban reuniendo**,
se fueron presentando los con-
vidados,
estaban comiendo cuando vino,

those who were gathering.
the guests came one after an-
other.
they were eating when he came.

735. The gerund is often equivalent to the English present participle, or finite verb, introduced by *while*, *by*, *in* :—

pero la que vive en delicias, **vivi-**
endo está muerta,
creyó engañarles **aparentando**
estar dormido, [dad,
haciendo esto muestra su cari-

but she that liveth in pleasure is
dead while she liveth.
he thought to deceive them by
feigning sleep. [charity.
in doing this, he displays his

736. The gerund may have a definite or indefinite subject :—

pudiendo más con él la fuerza de la sangre que el atractivo de la corona, [cosa, no siendo posible hacer otra no habiendo tiempo para discu- tir la medida, se suspendió la sesion,	the force of blood having more power over him than the lure of a crown. [thing else. it not being possible to do any- there not being time to discuss the measure, the session was suspended.
---	---

737. The gerund, with or without the preposition *en*, may have an indefinite personal subject, and is translated by *when, if one has, is*, etc. :—

en habiendo dinero en el bol- sillo, se gasta sin miseria,	when one has money in his pocket, he spends it freely.
---	---

738. The gerund has the same regimen as the verb from which it is derived :—

gozando de buena salud, olvidándose de lo pasado, me iba aficionando á estas cosas, [yerno, queriendo dar á conocer á su	enjoying good health. forgetting the past. I came to grow fond of these things. [known. desiring to make his son-in-law
--	---

The Use of the Past Participle.

739. The past participle of all verbs is invariable in the compound tenses formed by the auxiliary *haber* :—

los hombres han comido, habíamos vivido allí,	the men have eaten. we had lived there.
--	--

a. The verbs **llevar** and **tener**, when used as substitutes of *haber*, require the past participles that accompany them to agree in gender and number with their object :—

llevan escritas tres cartas,	| they have three letters written.
las cartas que tengo escritas,	| the letters that I have written.

b. In the tenses of the passive voice, the past participle of the verb conjugated passively is inflected, while those of *ser*, *estar*, and their substitutes, remain unchanged because dependent on *haber*:—

hemos sido engañados,	| we have been deceived.
han quedado satisfechos,	| they have remained satisfied.

740. Separated from the auxiliary, the past participle agrees, in gender and number, with the noun or pronoun qualified, like any adjective:—

á la hora convenida , ella se presentó apoyada en el brazo de su padre, cubierta con un vestido blanco,	| at the hour agreed on, she came forward leaning on her father's arm, dressed in a white robe.
el gabinete forrado de raso blanco y vestido de guirnaldas de flores sirvió de capilla,	| the sitting-room, lined with white satin and decked with garlands of flowers, served for a chapel.

741. The past participle may be used absolutely:—

firmado el contrato quedaba aún por legitimar la voluntad de los cónyuges,	| the (civil) contract having been signed, the will of the pair yet remained to be legalized.
disuelta la asamblea se retiraron todos,	| the assembly dissolved, all withdrew.
reunidas las Cortes se empezó á discutir el proyecto de ley,	| the Cortes having come together again, they began to discuss the bill.

742. Relation of time in the absolute participial construction may be expressed by the preposition *después de*, placed before it:—

después de firmada la paz ambas partes se felicitaron,	| after peace was signed, both parties congratulated each other.
---	--

<p>despues de cerradas todas las puertas y ventanas se entregaron las llaves al portero de al lado,</p>	<p>after all the doors and windows were locked, the keys were delivered to the porter of the next house.</p>
--	--

743. The past participle with the preposition **para**, *for*, is used to express capability or necessity after the verb *to be*, with a negative:—

<p>no es asunto para satisfecho en corto número de renglones, estas providencias no son para propuestas, las artes de la política tampoco son tan para vistas por dentro como las de la guerra,</p>	<p>it is not a subject to be exhausted in a few short lines. these measures are not to be proposed. nor are the arts of state polity so transparent (easy to be scrutinized) as those of war.</p>
--	---

744. Past participles may be used as nouns:—

<p>el convidado, <i>the guest</i>. los desposados, <i>the espoused</i>.</p>	<p>los convidados, <i>the guests</i>. los desgraciados, <i>the unfortunate</i>.</p>
<p>muchos son los llamados y pocos los escogidos,</p>	<p>many are the called, and few the chosen.</p>

745. The Latin future passive participle in *-ndus* is still preserved in a few substantives only:—

<p>los educandos, los bautizandos, los libros expurgandos,</p>	<p>the pupils. the candidates for baptism. books to be expurgated.</p>
---	--

REMARK. — In substitution, the Spaniards employ the verb *haber de* with the passive or reflexive:—

<p>los libros que han de ser expurgados, [pacharse, los asuntos que han de deste negocio no se ha de terminar tan fácilmente como se cree,</p>	<p>the books that are to be expurgated. [posed of. the matters that are to be this business will not be brought to a close so easily as they think.</p>
--	---

746. The *present* participle, as such, has wholly disappeared from the Spanish, being replaced by the gerund. The few remaining forms are used as adjectives or substantives:—

amante de la patria,	fond of one's country.
un caballero andante ,	a knight-errant.
un hijo obediente ,	an obedient child.
un traslado fehaciente ,	an authentic copy.
las Córtes constituyentes ,	the constituent assembly.
los enseres pertenecientes al	the fixtures belonging to the
almacen, [los creyentes ,	warehouse. [the believers.
los participantes ; los oyentes ;	the participants; the hearers;

Regimen of Verbs.

747. The object of a transitive verb regularly stands in the accusative case without a preposition, when it designates *things* or objects not endowed with life (*Impersonal Accusative*):—

edificó la casa ,	he built the house.
alcanzaron una victoria ,	they gained a victory.
Cárlos lee los diarios ,	Charles reads the newspapers.
el hombre digno ama la virtud	the worthy man loves virtue and
y aborrece el vicio ,	hates vice.

748. The object of a transitive verb regularly stands with the preposition *á*, when it designates *persons* or *animals* (*Personal Accusative*):—

Juan sigue á su hermano ,	John follows his brother.
conozco á este hombre ,	I know this man.
hemos visto á los reyes ,	we have seen the king and queen.
debemos amar á Dios y á nues-	we ought to love God and our
tros semejantes,	fellow-men.
el espada mata al toro,	the swordsman slays the bull.
el niño acaricia al gato ,	the child fondles the cat.

¿ á quién buscas?	whom do you seek?
se debe recompensar á los que	we ought to reward those who
nos sirven fielmente,	serve us faithfully.
los hombres le acogieron como	the men congratulated him as a
á un sér afortunado,	lucky person.

749. Hence the personal accusative is found :—

a. To indicate definite, determinate, known personality :—

busco á un criado mio,	I am seeking a servant of mine.
aguardo á mis amigos,	I am waiting for my friends.
fueron á llamar á un médico	they went to call a physician well
muy conocido por su habilidad,	known for his skill.

b. With pronouns in the redundant construction, and in antithesis :—

créeme á mí,	believe <i>me</i> .
os veré á vosotros,	I shall see you.
á mí de todo se me pegó,	a little of everything clung to me.
deja á mí triste por alegrar á él,	he leaves me sad to cheer him.
se miraron uno á otro,	they looked at each other.
se engañan unos á otros,	they deceive one another.

c. With words that explain a personal pronoun :—

nos abrazó á todos,	he embraced us all.
los vió á todos,	he saw them all.
nos acogieron muy bien á mi	they received my sister and me
hermana y á mí,	very well.

d. After a predicate adjective or past participle :—

la prosperidad hizo orgulloso á	prosperity made my master
mi amo, [hechor,	proud.
vimos muerto á nuestro bien-	we saw our benefactor lie dead.

e. When the object is the proper name of a person or animal, or of a place without the definite article :—

leo á Cervantes,	I read Cervantes.
conozco á Sevilla; — á Cádiz,	I know Seville; — Cadiz.
los Moros conquistaron á España en el siglo octavo,	the Moors conquered Spain in the eighth century.
sin esperar más respuesta picó á Rocinante,	without waiting for a reply, he put spurs to Rocinante.
but	

Pizarro conquistó el Perú,	Pizarro conquered Peru.
he visitado la Coruña,	I have visited Corunna.

750. The personal accusative stands with the names of things :—

a. When they are considered as personified :—

defiende á la patria,	he defends his country.
llamó á la muerte,	he invoked death.
las aves saludan á la aurora,	the birds salute the dawn.
recompensan al mérito,	they reward merit.
temía á su propia sombra,	he feared his own shadow.

REMARK.— This principle is especially applied to animals, birds, and insects in fables :—

Éste á la Hormiga alaba, aquél al Perro,	This one praises the Ant, that one the Dog,
Quién á la Abeja, quién al Papagayo,	One the Bee, another the Parrot.
— <i>Fábulas de Iriarte</i> , Madrid, 1787, vol. i., p. 54.	

b. To distinguish the object from the subject :—

el invierno sigue al otoño,	winter follows autumn.
la noche precede al día,	night precedes day.
el verbo rige al nombre, y el nombre al verbo,	the verb governs the noun, and the noun the verb.

c. To distinguish the object of the verb from its predicate :—

llamà carácter á su capricho,	he calls his caprice character.
trae unos anteojos que le hacen parecer riqueza á la pobreza,	he wears glasses that make poverty appear to him riches.

751. The impersonal accusative stands even with a personal object :—

a. When that object is indeterminate, unknown, or taken partitively :—

busco un criado ,	I am looking for a servant.
fueron á buscar un médico que fuese experimentado,	they went to look for an experi- enced physician.
en mi vida he visto hombre que sea más orgulloso, [gos,	I have never seen anybody who is prouder.
hemos convidado algunos ami- conozco señoras más amables	we have invited a few friends.
que ella, [capitanes,	I know ladies more amiable than she. [tains.
España ha producido grandes	Spain has produced great cap-

b. When the object is qualified by a numeral :—

veo cuatro personas , [des,	I see four persons. [alcaldes.
el gobernador citó veinte alcal-	the governor summoned twenty

c. After the verb **tener**, when it means *to have*, *to possess* :—

tengo un buen padre ,	I have a good father.
es preciso que el ejército tenga oficiales ,	the army must have officers.

REMARK. — But when **tener** means *to hold a person fast*, or when it is put for *estar* in definite sentences, the personal accusative follows :—

¿ á quién tengo? — tengo á V. ,	whom have I? — I have you.
tengo á mi madre enferma,	my mother is ill.
tenemos á nuestro hermano en el extranjero,	our brother is abroad (<i>we have our brother abroad</i>).

but

tengo una madre muy indul- gente, [trangero,	I have a very indulgent mother.
tenemos un hermano en el ex-	we have a brother abroad.

d. After the verb **perder**, *to lose*, since **perder á** signifies *to ruin*:—

perdió su único hijo,	|	he lost his only son.
he perdido mi madre,	|	I have lost my mother.

REMARK.—Some modern writers, however, offend this rule:—

perdió á su último hermano,	|	he lost his last brother.
-------------------------------------	--	---------------------------

— José Selgas, *Escenas Fantásticas*, p. 80, ed. 1876.

e. After the verb **querer**, in the meaning *to wish*, *to want*, since **querer á** signifies *to love*, *to like*:—

yo quiero un hombre honrado	|	I want an honest man to serve
que me sirva,		me.
quiere muchísimo á su hijo,	|	he loves his child very much.

f. After words of naming, appointing:—

el rey nombró los gobernadores,	|	the king appointed the governors.
el papa elige los cardenales,	|	the pope elects the cardinals.

g. When the same verb governs an indirect object with *á*, or a personal pronoun without *á*:—

prefiero el discreto al valiente,	|	I prefer the prudent (man) to the
Cervántes á Quevedo, Cádiz		brave, Cervantes to Quevedo,
á Valencia,		Cadiz to Valencia.
envia el jardinero á la plaza,	|	he sends the gardener to the
		market. [the lady.
presentaron el señor á la dama,	|	they presented the gentleman to
ha sido forzoso dejar el conde	|	it has been necessary to leave the
en rehenes al enemigo,		count as a hostage with the foe.
me recomendó el general,	|	he recommended the general to
		me.
enviaron el hijo á su padre,	|	they sent the child to his father.
abandōnan el hombre á su des-	|	they deliver the man over to his
esperacion,		despair.

For euphony, before the letter *á* very often, but not uniformly:—

busco amigos; — **algun amigo**,
 ¿conoce V. **á este** caballero? }
 ¿conoce V. **aquel** caballero? }

I seek friends; — some friend.
 do you know that gentleman?

752. Many transitive verbs admit two objects, — an indirect of the person and a direct of the thing: —

dí al mozo una propina,
 envió á fulano una esquila,
 le presté cinco duros,
 dijo al juez la verdad,

I gave the lad a gratuity.
 he sent so and so a note.
 I lent him five dollars.
 he told the judge the truth.

753. Verbs that involve the notion of taking away, winning, asking, paying, thanking, praising, take in Spanish the dative of the person and the accusative of the thing, while in English the object is governed by some preposition other than *to*: —

quitó al pobre todos sus ahorros,
 le quitó su hacienda,
 se la quitó,
 robó al obrero su jornal,
 se lo robó,
 ganó á su contrincante la apuesta,
 el ganó la apuesta,
 el pobre pidió al caballero una limosna,
 se la pidió,
 pagó al sastre el gaban,
 le pagó al sastre,
 se lo pagó,
 le agradecí su buena voluntad,
 se la agradecí,
 alabaron al capitán su valor,
 se lo alabaron,
 alabo á V. su aplicacion,
 se la alabo á V.,
 se lo pido á V. encarecidamente,

he took from the poor man all his savings.
 he took from him his property.
 he took it from him. [wages.
 he robbed the mechanic of his
 he robbed him of them. [ponent.
 he won the wager from his op-
 he won the wager from him.
 the beggar asked the gentleman for an alms.
 he asked him for one.
 he paid the tailor for the coat.
 he paid the tailor for it.
 he paid him for it.
 I thanked him for his good will.
 I thanked him for it. [courage.
 they praised the captain for his
 they praised him for it.
 I praise you for your industry.
 I praise you for it.
 I earnestly beg you to.

REMARK. — **Merecer**, in the sense of *to receive as a reward of merit*, is similarly construed : —

merecer al rey un nombramiento á un alto cargo,	| to receive from the king a high appointment.
--	--

754. Some verbs require the same construction with personal pronouns only : —

persuadió á su hijo que lo hiciese, <i>but</i>	| he persuaded his son to do it, <i>but</i>
se lo persuadió,	| he persuaded him to.
impidió que lo hiciésemos, <i>but</i>	| he prevented us from doing so, <i>but</i>
nos lo impidió,	| he prevented us from it.
preguntaron al muchacho si fué verdad, <i>but</i>	| they asked the lad if it was true, <i>but</i>
se lo preguntaron,	| they asked him about it.
se lo prohibo á V.,	| I forbid you to.

REMARK. — “To give any one anything,” in the sense of a *present*, is expressed by **regalar alguna cosa á alguien**; otherwise **dar** is used : —

me regaló un reloj nuevo,	| he presented me with a new watch. [watch.
me dió un reloj nuevo,	| he gave (handed) me a new

755. In English, a verb often governs its object by means of a preposition, when, in Spanish, it is direct : —

to look <i>for</i> anything,	| buscar alguna cosa, <i>or</i> algo.
to listen <i>to</i> advice,	| escuchar los consejos.
to wait <i>for</i> the arrival of a train.	| esperar la llegada de un tren.

756. Verbs which express the notion of perceiving, often take with the accusative of the thing a dative of the personal pronoun rendered into English by means of the preposition *in* or *from* : —

trae V. una cara que no le he visto jamás,	| you wear a countenance that I never saw in you.
--	---

confieso que no **le** hallo ni chispa
ni sentido,
cuando **me** oyó la respuesta se
puso furioso,

I confess that I do not find any
wit or sense in it.
when he heard the reply from
me, he became very angry.

757. Many verbs signifying to rejoice, to boast, to be sorry, to pity, to remember, to forget, to trust, to distrust, to be ashamed, to laugh at, to want, to need, to deprive, to use, govern their object by means of the preposition **de**, *of*, *for*, *at*. Such verbs are:—

abusar de, *to abuse*.
acordarse de, *to remember*.
admirarse de, *to wonder at*.
alegrarse de, *to rejoice at*.
aprovecharse de, *to avail one's
self of, to use*. [of.
avergonzarse de, *to be ashamed*
burlarse de, *to laugh at*.
carecer de, *to want, to be without*.
compadecerse de, *to pity*.
condolerse de, *to pity*.
desconfiar de, *to distrust*
dudar de, *to doubt*.
fiarse de, *to trust*.
gozar de, *to enjoy*.
jactarse de, *to boast*.

se acuerda **de** su juventud,
gozamos **de** buena salud,
se olvidan **de** sus amigos,
usa **de** medios ilícitos,
se sirve **de** los talentos ajenos,
no dudo **de** ello,
prescindiendo **de** eso,
carecen **de** pan,

lamentarse de, *to lament*.
mofarse de, *to scoff at*.
necesitar de, *to need*.
olvidarse de, *to forget*.
preciarse de, *to boast*.
prescindir de, *to do without, to
leave out of the account*.
privarse de, *to deprive of*.
reirse de, *to laugh at*.
renegar de, *to abominate*.
servirse de, *to use*.
tener lástima de, *to pity*. [of.
tener vergüenza de, *to be ashamed*
usar de, *to use*.
valerse de, *to avail one's self of*.
zafarse de, *to get rid of*.

he remembers his youth.
we enjoy good health.
they forget their friends.
he uses unlawful means. [others.
he avails himself of the talents of
I do not doubt it.
leaving that out of the account.
they are without bread.

APPENDIX TO PART SECOND.

Diminutives and Augmentatives.

758. These consist of various endings applied chiefly to substantives to express different modes of characterizing persons, things, and qualities, as being *small* or *large*, together with certain other subordinate circumstances, involving attractiveness, burlesque, irony, and aversion. In view of the nice distinctions and shades of feeling they often suggest, it is scarcely possible for the learner to employ them appropriately; and they are, in fact, for the most part, a silent element in the northern tongues, unless rendered by some circumlocution adapted to the context. They abound in domestic and popular language, and in humorous, poetical, and satirical writings, but seldom suit the grave style of history or serious compositions of any kind. Among the uneducated classes, they very commonly appear as a makeshift for a limited vocabulary, or to emphasize passionate utterances.

DIMINUTIVES.

759. The leading diminutives end in :—

a. Ito, cito, ecito ; fem. ita, cita, ecita, applied to substantives, adjectives, and a few adverbs, to express smallness of size, quality, or degree, in connection with fondness, caresses, admiration, good humor, true sympathy, modest demand, respect (by servants), and irony stated without vituperation. Therefore this ending

cannot be used with words having in themselves an unlovely, repulsive signification, save in satire or ridicule. The translation may be expressed with substantives, by *little, pretty little, dear little*; with adjectives and adverbs, by *quite, very*, or all may be given by circumlocutions suited to the context :—

papaito; **madre**cita,
mi **herman**ito; mi **herman**ita,
son **amig**uitos,
mis **primit**os y **primit**as,
la **cotor**rita tiene dos **pat**itas,
¿qué **cas**ita tan **guap**ita!
agradezco á V. su **regal**ito,
¿pobre **hij**ita mía!
¿me hace V. el favor de un **vas**ito
de agua fresca?

voy, **señor**ito; — **señor**ita,
con que ¿**cuidad**ito!
es **jovenc**ito y buen mozo,
agua **fresqu**ita ¿quien pide?
¿**buñuel**os **calent**itos!

á este caballero no le gustan las
bromitas, [titos,
yo aseguro que no faltarían **azo**-
¿**angel**itos! qué pronto os aveza-
ban á los sacrificios de la carne
humana!

Alfonsito; **Manol**ito,
Carlitos; **Merced**itas,
Dolorcitas; **Juan**ita,
Paquito; **Pep**ito; **Peri**quito,

vive por ahí **cerqu**ita,
se quedó algo **lej**itos,
arrímate junto, **junt**ito,
tome V. un **poqu**ito,
andaba **pas**ito á paso,

papa, do; come, mother.
my little brother; — sister.
they are dear friends (of children).
my little cousins.
the little parrot has two little feet.
what a pretty little house!
I thank you for your nice gift.
my poor child!
will you give me a glass of cool
water?

yes, sir; — ma'am (of service).
so then, take care now!
he is young and good-looking.
nice, cool water, who will buy?
fritters, nice and hot!

this gentleman is not fond of
jokes. [forgotten.
I'll warrant the stripes were not
angelic spirits! how quickly they
habituated you to sacrifices of
human flesh!

little Alfonso; — Manuel.
Charley; little Mercy.
little Dolores; Jennie.
Frank; Josy; Peter.

he lives near here.
he kept some distance off.
move up, close up.
take a little, pray.
he was going very slowly.

b. Ilo, cillo, ecillo ; fem. illa, cilla, ecilla, applied likewise to substantives and adjectives, to express smallness of size, quantity, or degree, either stated indifferently without reference to fondness, etc., or in a tone of depreciation, roguishness, ridicule, with or without good humor, and pity for an unfortunate person. It may be translated by *little, somewhat, that* (in contempt), or as the context suggests :—

un **chiquillo** me guió,
 un **ladroncillo** es,
 vaya V. á comprar un **panecillo**,
 estoy algo **malillo**,
 déme V. un **poquillo**,
 écheme V. un **traguillo**,
 tiene un **gustillo** desagradable,

hubo un **olorcillo** de ajos,
 habla con el **tonillo** de un Cata-
 lan,

es un pobre **viejecillo**,
 una **mujercilla** que no tiene
 vergüenza,

Julianillo el jorobado,
Francesillo el gracioso,
Sebastianillo el enano,
 el libro trae no pocos **cuenta-
 cillos**,

la Juliana es una **loquilla**,
 como me quiere tanto el ama,
 teme que mi madre le robe ese
 cariño ; **pobrecilla** !

a youngster directed me.
 he is a little thief.
 go and buy a loaf of bread.
 I am somewhat ailing.
 give me a very little (a trifle).
 pour me out a little (swallow).
 it has a somewhat unpleasant
 taste.

there was a slight odor of garlic.
 he speaks with the (dialectic) ac-
 cent of a Catalanian.

he is a poor old man.
 a woman who has no sense of
 shame.

Julian, the hunchback.
 Frank, the (court) jester.
 Sebastian, the (court) dwarf.
 the book contains quite a number
 of short stories.

Julia is a giddy girl.
 as nurse loves me so much, she is
 afraid my mother will rob her
 of that affection, poor thing !

c. Uelo, zuelo, ezuelo ; fem. uela, zuela, ezuela, applied to substantives and less frequently to adjectives, to express smallness in a depreciative sense, involving inferiority, lowness, ridicule, and disdain ; and also in

a humorous, roguish, bantering style. Occasionally it replaces *illo* in its natural meaning of smallness without regard to other qualities :—

chicuelo ; rapazuelo ,	urchin ; youngster.
mozuelo ; pequeñuelo ,	lad ; little one.
cojuelo ; tontuelo ,	limping ; silly person.
cazuela ; tinajuela ,	skillet ; jar.
plazuela ; callejuela ,	little square ; poor street.
pajuelas ; pedazuelo ,	matches ; a petty morsel.
arroyuelo ; riachuelo ,	brooklet ; streamlet.
hombrezuelo ; mujerzuela ,	little man ; low woman.
autorzuelo ; pilluelo ,	poor author ; little thief.
jovenzuelo ; salonzuelo ,	vile youth ; little parlor.

REMARK. — If a polysyllabic stem ends in a vowel, the letter *h* or *g* is inserted with this ending :—

aldea ,	} a wretched hamlet.
aldehuela , or aldeguela ,	
judío ,	} a despised Jew.
judihuelo , or judigüelo ,	

d. Ete, cete ; fem. eta, ceta, applied to substantives in a diminutive and depreciative sense :—

un mocete ; un pobrete ,	a small boy ; a poor fellow.
un librete ; un galancete ,	a small book ; a ladies' man.
una aleta ; una lengueta ,	a little wing ; — tongue.

e. Ejo, fem. eja, is applied most commonly to words ending in *l* or *n*, and denotes decided contempt ; occasionally, however, it merely indicates smallness of size, quality, degree :—

animalejo ,	any troublesome insect.
el alguacilejo ,	that constable (in disdain).
un librejo ,	a worthless book.
no cobro más que doce realejos	I only get a pittance of twelve
diarios, [papelejo ,	reals a day. [once said.
como dijo el autor de cierto	as the author of a certain scrawl

doña Juana la Beltraneja , ¹	lady Jane, she of Beltran.
un arbolejo ; una canaleja ,	a small tree; a drinking-trough.
amarillejo , <i>yellowish</i> .	

REMARK. — This ending is occasionally found with Arabic words hispanicized, to denote simple smallness or to distinguish the less from the greater: —

The little *square* by the Roman aqueduct at Segovia in Spain is called **El Azoguejo** from the Arabic *as-soq*, "the market," "square," and the Spanish diminutive ending. **Almadenejo** means "the lesser mine," to distinguish it from **Almaden**, Arab. *al-ma'din*, "the mine."

760. Other diminutives are formed by means of the endings **ico**, **in**, **ino**, and **ño**, all of which are local or dialectic, to wit: —

a. **Ico**, **cico**, **ecico**; *fem.* **ica**, **cica**, **ecica**, usually given as the synonym of *ito*, was originally a local variation proceeding from Aragon, and domesticated in the Castiles, to add a vein of sprightly humor impossible to characterize. It should not, therefore, be used indiscriminately for *ito*, but be held in reserve to season a choice diminutive wittily and warily: —

mocico ; jovencico ,	little lad; little youngster.
avecico ; perrico ,	little bird; little dog.
Juanico ; Alfonsico ; ² Perico ,	Johnny; Alfonso; Peter.
el Emperador y Felipico , ³	the Emperor and little Philip.

¹ The princess doña Juana, daughter of the queen doña Juana, wife of Henry IV (1462), by the courtier don Beltran de la Cueva, was popularly called *par mépris* la **Beltraneja**, and because of her notorious illegitimacy, was set aside from the succession, at Henry's death, for the famous Isabella of Castile (1474).

² For example, when the present king of Spain succeeded to the throne in 1875, the Madrid people often spoke of him as **Alfonsico**, with a distinct mixture of irony and resignation; "Alfonsito" would have been a grave political error, because of the *adhesion* it implies.

³ Actually said of Charles V and Philip, his son, about 1535, by the court-jester, Francesillo de Zúñiga, in his *Burlesque Chronicle*.

REMARK. — The Aragonese still use **ico** in the natural sense. Even in the old local ballad which first appeared in print in the *Cancionero General* of Valencia, 1511, we find the proper use:—

Fonte frida, ¹ fonte frida,	Fountain cool, fountain cool,
Fonte frida y con amor,	Fountain cool and winsome, too,
Do todas las avecicas	Where the little birdlings all
Van tomar ² consolacion,	Gather 'round their mates to woo,
Sino es la tortolica	Save the little turtle-dove
Qu' está viuda y con dolor,	That is widowed of its love.

b. In, fem. ina, peculiar to the *Bable* or Asturian dialect; *ino, fem. ina*, common in the province of Estremadura; and *iño, fem. iña*, in the dialect of Galicia, are all more or less used in Castilian to denote smallness merely:—

un niño chiquitin ,	} a wee little child.
una niña chiquitina ,	
calcetin ; calcetines ,	sock; socks.
peluca ; peluquin ,	wig; little wig.
baldosa ; baldosin ,	flooring-tile; fine flooring-tile.
bolsa ; bolsin ,	exchange; evening exchange.
padrino ; madrina ,	godfather; godmother.
paloma ; palomino ,	dove; pigeon.
recuérdome que era muy aficionado á los langostinos , ³	I remember that he was very fond of shrimps.
cuerpo, corpíño , <i>body of a dress.</i>	

Form.

761. All these endings are attached to the *stem* of a word found by rejecting the terminal vowel, unless *accented*, even in diphthongs:—

abeja, abejita , <i>little bee.</i>	cuchara, cucharita , <i>teaspoon.</i>
pájaro, pajarete , <i>mean bird.</i>	libro, librillo , <i>little book.</i>
mozo, mozuelo , <i>young lad.</i>	jovenzuelo, <i>a youngster.</i>
rubio, a, rubito, a , <i>of light complexion.</i>	

¹ In Castilian, *Fuente fria*.

² A Gallicism for *van & tomar*.

³ A sense not found in the Spanish-English dictionaries; Fr. *écrevisses*.

762. The final radicals *c*, *g* (*gu*), *z*, become respectively *qu*, *gu* (*gü*), *c*, when the ending is introduced by one of the vowels *e* or *i* :—

frac, **fracu-ecito**, *dress-coat*.
fresco, **fresquito**, *quite cool*.
amigo, **amiguillo**, *little friend*.
ciego, **cieguezuelo**, *blind boy*.

lengua, **lengu-ecita**, *little tongue*.
pez, **pececillo**, *little fish*.
cruz, **crucecita**, *little cross*.
pedazo, **pedacillo**, *little piece*.

a. With regard to radical diphthongs that are movable (*ie*, *ue*), usage generally requires them to be retained at the present day, except in primitives of more than two syllables :—

huevo, **huevo-ecito**, *little egg*.
caliente, **calentito**, *nice and hot*.

nieto, **niet-ecillo**, *little grandson*.
valiente, **valenton**, *a swaggerer*.

Still we say : *puerta*, **portezuela**, *door (of a carriage)*.

763. The second forms of the diminutives, namely, **cito** (**cico**), **cillo**, **zuelo**, **cete**, are required with words of more than one syllable ending in *n* or *r* :—

salon-cillo, *a small parlor*.
gratificacioncita, *small gratuity*.
ladroncillo, *little pilferer*.
jovencete, *a youth (contempt)*.

amor-cillo, *slight affection*.
autorcico, *boy-author*.
mujerzuela, *silly woman*.
Dolorcitas, *little Dolores*.

Jardin makes **jardinito** and **jardincito**, *small garden*.

764. The third forms of the diminutives, namely, **ecito** (**ecico**), **ecillo**, **ezuelo**, are to be used :—

a. With monosyllables :—

sol-ecillo, *little sun*.
flor-ecita, *little flower*.
pan-ecillo, *loaf of bread*.
fracu-ezuelo, *dress-coat*.

red-ecilla, *net (for the hair)*.
nuez, **nuececica**, *little walnut*.
cruz, **crucecita**, *little cross*.
pez, **pececillo**, *little fish*.

Pié makes **piececito**, *a charming little foot*; and *mano*, **hand**, **manita** or **manecita**.

b. With words ending in *e* or *y* :—

fraila, **frail-ecico**, *little friar*.
ave, **avecilla**, *little bird*.
alegre, **alegrecito**, *jolly*.
amable, **amablecillo**, *kind*.

viaje, **viaj-ecito**, *short trip*.
rey, **reyezuelo**, *petty sovereign*.
grande, **grandecito**, *rather tall*.
pobre, **pobrezuelo**, *sadly poor*.

But proper names in *e* are excepted :—

Pepe, **Pepito**, *Joseph*.

| Felipe, **Felipico**, *Philip*.

c. With words ending in *a* or *o*, only when they have a diphthong in the stem :—

piedra, **piedrecilla**, *little stone*.
cuerpo, **cuerpezuelo**, *little body*.
ciego, **cieguecillo**, *blind*.
nuevo, **nuevecico**, *new*.

pleito, **pleitecillo**, *law-suit*.
viento, **vientecito**, *slight breeze*.
quieto, **quietecillo**, *still*.
viejo, **viejezuelo**, *old*.

Except abuelo, **a, abuelito**, *a, grandfather*, -*mother*, and perhaps others.

AUGMENTATIVES.

765. The leading augmentatives are :—

a. **On, fem. ona**, denoting large size, grotesqueness, and in general an extraordinary degree of what is contained in the primitive. Feminine nouns usually become masculine in assuming this ending, unless natural gender is indicated :—

calavera, **calaveron**, *rascal*.
ala, **alon**, *wing (of a fowl, served)*.
cuchara, **cucharon**, *ladle*.
jarra, **jarron**, *large vase*.
barba, **barbon**, *thick beard*.
migaja, **migajon**, *large crumb*.
mujer-ona, *big woman*.

cigarro, **cigarron**, *big cigar*.
encuentro, **encontron**, *shock*.
pícaro, **picaron**, *great rogue*.
señor, **señoron**, *great gentleman*.
tunante, **tunanton**, *scoundrel*.
autor, **autoron**, *big author*.
valiente, **valenton**, *a brave*.

tan de **sopeton**, *so suddenly, unexpectedly*.

b. **Azo, fem. aza**, has a similar meaning applied according to the gender of the primitive :—

boca, **bocaza**, *big mouth*.

| hereje, **herejazo**, *great heretic*.

REMARK 1.—The ending **azo** invariable, is oftenest used to represent a blow or discharge of something indicated in the primitive :—

abanico, abanicazo ,	a blow with a fan.
baston, bastonazo ,	a blow with a cane.
bombo, bombazo ,	a beating of drums.
porra, porrazo ,	a cudgelling.
navaja, navajazo ,	a thrust with the clasp-knife.
cañon, cañonazo ,	report of a cannon, cannon-shot.
fusil, fusilazo ,	a rifle-shot.

REMARK 2.—The ending **ada** has a similar meaning; often a thrust with a sharp weapon :—

una lanzada (lanza),	thrust with a lance.
una pufialada (puñal),	a stab with the short dirk.
una estocada (estoque),	thrust with a long, thin sword.
una andanada ,	a broadside.
dar manotadas ,	to throw up the hands as in falling.
una bufonada ,	a piece of buffoonery.
una campanada ,	stroke of a bell.

c. **Ote**, *fem.* **ota**, has a depreciative sense sometimes, and others only the augmentative :—

amigo, amigote , <i>old friend</i> .	hereje, herejote , <i>great heretic</i> .
un librote de á folio,	an old folio volume.
rico, ricote , ricota ,	rich and pretentious.
grandote , feote , feota ,	pompous, ugly old person.

d. **Acho** and **ucho** have the more definite sense of disdain, contempt :—

el populacho , <i>the masses</i> .	animalucho , <i>an insect</i> .
una casucha , <i>a poor house</i> .	

766. Combinations of diminutives and augmentatives are very frequent to lend an accumulative force to words. Such are :—

a. **Ito** with **ito** and **in** : —

chico, *small*; chiquito, **chiquitito**, **chiquitin**.
los piés **chiquirrititos**, *little mites of feet*.

b. **Illo** with **on** : —

grande, *large*; **grandillon**, *rather biggish*.

c. **Ete** with **on** : —

mozo, *lad*; mocete, **moceton**, *quite a tall lad*.
pobre, *poor*; pobrete, **pobreton**, *a poor old fellow*.

d. **Ejo** with **on** : —

calle, *street*; calleja, **callejon**, *a lane, alley*.

e. **Acho** with **uelo** : —

rio, *river*; riacho, **riachuelo**, *rivulet*.

f. **Acho** with **on** : —

bueno, *good*; bonacho, **bonachon**, *easy-going, "clever."*

g. **On** with **azo** : —

pícaro, *rogue*; picaron, **picaronazo**, *piece of knavery*.
encuentro, *meeting*; encontron, **encontronazo**, *crash*.

767. Occasional forms are : —

nube; **nubarron**,
bobo; **bobarron**,
bobalñas; **bobalicon**,
lámpara; **lampion**,
nariz; **narigon**,
raiz; **raigon**,
vivo; **vivaracho**,
mamarracho,
ave; **avechucho**,
pillo; **pillastro**,
gente; **gentuza**,
migaja (pop. *mieja*),
latin, **latinajo**,

cloud; threatening cloud.
stupid; great dunce.
dolt; great blockhead.
lamp; large lantern.
nose; big nose; big-nosed.
root; snag.
lively; sprightly.
grotesque ornament, botch.
bird; bird of ill-omen.
rogue; great rogue.
people; rabble.
crumb, grain. [ous].
Latin; Latin quotation (*humor-*

768. Diminutive and augmentative endings often express independent ideas:—

señora, (*married*) *lady*;
paño, *cloth*;
pan, *bread*;
manta, *blanket, wrap*;
azúcar, *sugar*;
calzas, *knee-breeches*;
calle, *street*;

señorita, *young lady*.
pañuelo, *handkerchief*.
panecillo, *loaf of bread*.
mantilla, *Spanish veil*.
azucarillo (*a confection*).
calzoncillos, *drawers*.
callejon, *lane*.

769. Many words have endings that are only apparently diminutive and augmentative:—

varon, *a man, male*.
tornillo, *screw*.
sencillo, *simple, plain*.
pantorrilla, *calf of the leg*.
vajilla (vasilia), *plate (collect.)*.
ladrillo, *brick*.
bosquejo, *sketch*.
cotejo, *collation of a book*.
azulejo, *Dutch tile*.

conejo, *rabbit*.
guedeja, *lock of hair*.
madeja, *skein*.
oveja, *sheep*.
anzuelo, *fish-hook*.
cazuela, *skillet (earthen)*.
billete, *ticket*.
bigotes, *mustachios*.
escondrijo, *lurking-place*.

escondite, *hiding-place*.

SECTION FOURTH.

DRILL-BOOK.

Pronunciation.

[The accentuated syllable that should not bear the graphic accent is here noted by a long mark placed over the vowel that has the principal stress; thus, *papēl*, but *ánimo*.]

Simple Vowels.

Ama, ala, amára, amígo, amistād (31), almenāra, ánima, andēn, abalōrios, amapōla. Era, época, epístola, escāla, escalēra, mandadēro, embarcadēro, sombrero, sombrerēro, es, está, escuēla, eslabōn, alfilēr, elemento, elefānte, ébano, inglés, cordobés. Libro, fila, tira, timbre, tinta, cortina, triste, visita (40), baladf, papelito, tilin, bailarín, motin. Olór, opāco, reló, autór, mediadór, corredór, con (never *kōn*), conmígo, contento, confiādo, consonānte, narigōn, pasiōn. Pluma, uso, ustēd, gusto, busto, susto, busca, bulto, duda, burla, gula, nulo, único, ambígú, abuso, adulaciōn (28).

Diphthongs.

Āire, airōso (40), bāile, caigo, traigo, fraile, vaivēn, maitīnes. Āuto, aula, bautismo, āun (*even*), caudāl, caudalōso, raudāl (39), autór, fautór, auditório. Aureo, áurea, empíreo, línea. Pēine, vēinte, treinta, afeite, deleite, aceite (28), reino, reinādo, ley, rey. Fēudo, neutro, deudo, leudo, Euro, Eurōpa. Fēria, āmplio, āmplia, līmpio, līmpia, nimio, nimia, indio, india, vicio, ciēncia, servicio, paciēncia, codicia, albrícias.

Hiēlo, griēta, niēto, viene, consiente, doliente, teniente, biēn, tambiēn, siēnes, bienes, siempre, tiēntan, siēnten, viēntos. Ciudadāno, viūdo; cōima, oīgo, estóico, heróico. Cuāndo, cuanto, guārdia, agua, estatúa, contīnua. Fuēgo, duelo, vuelo, suelo, fuero, agüero, nuevo, muero, trueno, grueso. Cuidadōso, ruidōso, arruinado, huiréis; ambíguo, tortuōso, virtuoso.

Improper Diphthongs.

Cãe, trãe, caïda, traïdo, cáí; baül, ataüd *or* atahüd, aün (*yet, still*); galantêa, alancêa, hebrêa, marêa; crêe, lêe, alancêe, galantêe; ref, creïmos, creïdo, leïdo; torêo, hebrêo, licêo, galantêo; galería, alegría, tropelía, tontería, hería, comíamos, vivían; rie, avíe; rio, varío; oïdo, oïd; huïda, imbuïdo; continúa, falúa.

Consonants.

Biênes, viênes, bota, voto, bebe, vive, bata, vate, tubo, tuvo, bacía, vacía, balïdo, valïdo, barôn, varôn, hombre, nombre, bribôn. Casa, caldo, caridad; queso, quema, querella, palenque, alcornôque, albaricôque; quiên, quïso, quieto, química, alquïla, tranquïlo; cosïta, coro, corôna; curioso, cubo, alcuza; escuálido, cuantioso, cuasi; cuestiôn, cuela, cuero, Cuenca; cuita, cuidãdo; cuôta, infcúo. Muchacho, leche, Elche, noche; cuchillo, chico, marchito; ocho, ducho, chorro, dicho, ricachôn, cachorro; chucho, higo-chumbo, chulo, chusma.

Gato, galgo, ganga; guerra, sigue, albergue, droguería, guedêja, Águeda; guia, guïon, guitarra, erguido, águila, guisãntes, segúia, borceguí; hidalgo, gozo, hago, sirgo, higo, consïgo; gula, gusto, argüyo, regulär. Guapo, guarïda, água, frágua, averïgua; fräguie, desäguie, averigüie, antigüedad; argüir; antiguo, averïguo, santïguo. Hallazgo, ahora, habêis, halagüeno, tahür, desahücio, haba, héroe, hilo, horadado, hule, huso. Jäula, alhāja, baraja, jalêo; mujër, generäl, ajeno, rige, aflige, gesto, genio, ingenio; giro, gitano, dijiste, registro; tasajo, atajo, trabajo, influjo, trujo; juzgo, enjuto, jura; Juän, enjuague; juego, majuelo, tejuelo, juêz; juicio.

Halla, batalla, llama, llanto; calle, valle, Ballêcas, calleja; allí, cepillïto; huello, murmullo, grulla, orgullo; llüvia, velludo. Niña, riña, seña, viña, engaña; enseña, engañe; reñir, ceñir, teñido; señor, engaño, año, baño, daño; sañudo, ñudo. Vara, toro, moro; hablär, comêr, decír, llegär, placêr, dolôr; arte, tarde, hurto, guärdia; rota, rueda, ruego, rasgo. rindo; chorro, torre, burra, ahorrär; enredo, es regulär, irregulär, corro. Santo, eso, pasa, pasado, lloroso, odioso, Toboso, cosa, musa. Yema, yedra, yeso, yugo, tuyo, suyo, argüyo. Raza, taza, caza, haz, feliz, desliz; hice, cena, dice, alanceär; cita, civíl, ciudad, lícito; mozo, gozo, zozobra; panzüdo, zumbär, azül, azucêna.

Faccioso, colecciōn, dictionário, accionista. Desdicha, dardo, humilde, muerdo, ardiendo; dedo, hablado, arbolēda, comida, soldado, embudo, greda; maldād, caridād, verdād, hablād, comēd, ustēd, mercēd, red, ved, acudid, Madrīd, sacudid, ardīd, virtūd, ataūd, almūd; odre, pudrīr, vendrá, tendrá, albedrío. Inmenso, inmortal, inmarcesible. Sexo, exacto, máxime, próximo, exhortar, exultar. Naranja, lisonja, gengibre.

Geographical Names.

Álava, Albacēte, Alcalá, Alcántara, Alcázar, Almería, Álora, Alsásua, Aranjuēz, Arévalo, Ávila. Badajóz, Barcelona, Baztān, Beasoāin, Būrgos. Castellējos, Cēuta, Ciudadreāl, Cuenca. Darincharinēa. Elizondo, Escoriāl. Fuenterrabía. Gijōn, Granada, Granja, Guadalajāra, Guadalaviār, Guadalhorce, Guadalquivir, Guipúzcoa. Hellin. Irūn, Jabalquinto, Jaēn, Játiva, Jerēz. Medellin, Menjíbar, Mérida, Montilla, Múrcia. Pamplona. Quintanapalla. Santandēr, Santipōnce, Sevilla, Socuéllamos. Tánjer, Teruēl, Trujillo. Valencia, Valladolid, Villalba, Vitória, Vizcāya. Zaragōza.

Proper Adjectives.

Asturiāno, Valenciāno, Murciāno, Guipuzcoāno, Toledano, Sevillano, Jerezano, Gaditano, Vallisoletano, Zaragozano, Castellano; Alicanteño, Granadino, Vizcaíno, Alcalaíno, Bilbaíno; Madrilēño, Estremefio, Malagueño; Matritense, Conquense, Tudense, Vascuence; Catalān, Alemān; Gallēgo, Manchēgo; Alavés, Aragonés, Leonés, Cartaginés, Cordobés, Tudés, Francés, Inglés, Irlandés, Escocés; Navarro; Españōl, Andalūz, Flamenco, Maragato.

Family Names.

Álvaro, Álvarez, Arderfús, Benítez, Bermúdez, Carvajāl, Cervantes, Díaz, Díez, Domínguez, Eguílaz, Estébanez, Fernández, García, Garcés, Gómez, González, Gutiérrez, Hervás, Ibáñez, Íñigo, Íñiguez, Jiménez, Loáisía, Núñez, Pérez, Ramírez, Rodríguez, Sánchez, Sanchíz, Téllez, Velásquez.

FIRST SERIES.

Essentials of Form and Inflection.

[The words will be found in the vocabulary at the end of the book. Words in parentheses are to be expressed in Spanish. Hyphens connect English terms which are to be given in Spanish by one word. The small figures at the top of the line indicate the order of the words in Spanish. Words to be left untranslated are placed between brackets.]

Exercise First.

Learn and Recite §§ 79, 81, 82, 84, 85, 101-104, 107-110.

1. The friend of the king, *or* the king's friend. 2. The queen's room. 3. The captain's ships. 4. The boy's pens. 5. The estates of the gentlemen, *or* the gentlemen's estates. 6. The ladies' presents. 7. The leaves of the trees. 8. The palaces of the king-and-queen (106). 9. The houses of the prince-and-princess. 10. The master-and-mistress of the servants.

11. A tree of the garden. 12. A door of the house. 13. The verdict of a judge. 14. The counsels of a mother. 15. The water of the sea. 16. The child's hunger. 17. The stir of a town. 18. The girl's needle. 19. The birds of the air (Span. *sky*). 20. The flight of the eagle.

21. The joy of the house. 22. The judge speaks to the prisoner. 23. The captain gives (to) the sailor the command of a vessel. 24. The lady lends a book to the girl. 25. A gentleman gave money to the errand-boys. 26. The queen gave the jewels to the ladies. 27. The souls of (the) men. 28. The laws of the commonwealth. 29. The crosses of the generals. 30. The servants of the judges. 31. (The) trees have leaves. 32. (The) vessels have sails. 33. Charles has money. 34. Agnes has sisters. 35. Lewis' father has houses and lands. 36. A town has streets. 37. A house has doors and windows. 38. A man has friends and enemies. 39. (The) nations have government and laws. 40. (The) wild boars live in the mountains. 41. The ministers wear crosses. 42. (The) part-ridges and quails live in the woods.

Exercise Second.

Learn and Recite §§ 112-118.

1. The rose is a beautiful flower. 2. (The) roses are beautiful flowers. 3. The garden has high² walls.¹ 4. (The) benevolent² ladies¹ are always beautiful. 5. The water is (*está*) cool; it-comes from a living² spring.¹ 6. My friend lives in a white² house.¹ 7. The Spanish language is rich and harmonious. 8. The [ladies] of-Cadiz are beautiful. 9. The boys and girls have roguish² eyes.¹ 10. The streets of the city are broad.

11. The German² literature¹ is modern, the Castilian is ancient. 12. (The) wise² men¹ are good companions. 13. The French² rail-ways¹ are (*están*) well made. 14. (The) Spanish² laws¹ are very ancient. 15. (The) Andalusian² customs¹ are very graceful and picturesque. 16. The houses in Spain are generally low, but spacious. 17. Madrid has the characteristics of a French² town.¹ 18. The men wear tall² hats,¹ and the young-men caps of curious² shape.¹

19. You will-find English² and French³ goods¹ in the Spanish² shops.¹ 20. A good memory is necessary in-order-to learn a language. 21. The Andalusian² wit-and-humor¹ is known everywhere. 22. The young-man directed treacherous² glances¹ toward his opponent. 23. The highland-women of Spain serve as (*de*) nurses in the capital. 24. They wear tall² head-dresses¹ and picturesque² costumes¹ with much jewelry and bright² colors.¹ 25. Charles gave (to) his sister a new² book¹ illustrated with many engravings.

Exercise Third.

Learn and Recite §§ 119-122.

1. An easy² lesson.¹ 2. Spain has many religious² festivals,¹ and few national [ones]. 3. (The) parents are faithful² friends.¹ 4. We spent many happy² hours¹ at (*en*) his house. 5. (The) rainy days are dull, but useful. 6. There-are noble² men¹ and vile² men.¹ 7. A common² interest¹ unites² them.¹ 8. Agnes gave (to) her sister a blue² ribbon.¹ 9. (The) young-men are capable of doing (to do) many things which are impossible to the old. 10. The customs of-Morocco are very different from those (*las*)

of-Europe. 11. All his remarks were courteous. 12. Spain is a wine-growing² country.¹

13. (The) Spanish² villages¹ generally² have¹ one broad² street.¹ 14. A large² house¹ has many rooms of different sizes. 15. A palace has public² and private³ apartments.¹ 16. The sweet² orange¹ is for Mary, and the sour² lemon¹ is for John. 17. The gentlemen understand many different languages. 18. The official² buildings¹ of a capital where¹ the government³ resides² are usually large and magnificent. 19. The Catalanian² manufacturers¹ furnish all Spain with (*de*) common² fabrics.¹ 20. All (the) wars are serious, and are contrary to the spirit of (the) Christianity.

Exercise Fourth.

Learn and Recite §§ 123-127.

1. A good man always has good friends. 2. Lewis wants a good pen, the-one that (*la que*) he has is poor. 3. (The) good books are good companions, and much more convenient than (the) living [ones]. 4. One bad² boy¹ can do much harm. 5. This³ has³ been⁴ [a] bad¹ year² for the farmers. 6. One bad thought may engender a bad habit. 7. A poor book is [a] poor companion. 8. The bad² boys¹ cherish bad designs. 9. The last moment of (the) life. 10. The last day of the fair. 11. The first month of-the year. 12. My friend lives in the first white² house¹ on the right. 13. In the three first centuries the Latin² language¹ was spoken (*fem.*) over all Spain. 14. The campaign began in the third month of-the third year of the emperor's reign.

15. The third man. 16. The third week. 17. The first and third row. 18. One book read with care is-worth more than many read (*m. pl.*) carelessly. 19. One day a friend² came¹ to our house. 20. One week has seven days. 21. Some day we-shall-go to Spain. 22. Some time after he-read the newspaper. 23. I-saw the (§ 76) man some weeks before. 24. Some oranges are sour. 25. No occasion is better than the present (*fem.*). 26. No day is free from cares. 27. No friends are so faithful as those (the) of our own household. 28. A great danger threatened² him.¹ 29. In a great house there-are many servants. 30. A great man has many friends. 31. A great general is often [a] guarantee of (the) peace.

32. The blow may fall any day. 33. Better is no book than any book. 34. The father gave (to) his son [one] hundred dollars. 35. I-saw [one] hundred soldiers drawn-up in the public-square. 36. [One] hundred and one is [an] odd² number.¹

Exercise Fifth.

Learn and Recite §§ 128-131.

1. He-brings an important piece-of-news. 2. He-is an influential man. 3. The parable of-the prodigal son. 4. The poem of (the) Paradise Lost. 5. The young-man's threatening looks. 6. The measures of (the) foreign governments. 7. The iron-clad ships of the French and English (§ 653). 8. Madrid society (the society of-Madrid) is gay in (the) winter. 9. He-speaks the Spanish language. 10. Cabrera was [a] Carlist chieftain. 11. Espartero was the principal general of the Constitutional party.

12. The definite decision of-the government. 13. The innocent lambs. 14. (The) entangling alliances. 15. The producing classes. 16. The active and passive service, that is, the employed and pensioned officers. 17. The second and third chapters. 18. (The) books first and fifth. 19. He-gives good advice (*pl.*). 20. He-undergoes a just² punishment.¹ 21. He-writes with a bad pen. 22. He-leads (*lleva*) a bad life. 23. In (the) ancient times the selectmen represented (*representaban*) the (*al*) third estate, that is to say (*it-is to say*), the (*al*) people. 24. He-has a great defect, which (*que*) is almost a vice. 25. My father has a large house. 26. The doctor lives in the new street. 27. The poor man has the sympathies of all (the) charitable persons. 28. He-placed several volumes on the table. 29. I-found that poem in a volume of miscellaneous papers. 30. The messenger brought reliable news (*pl.*).

Exercise Sixth.

Learn and Recite §§ 132-139.

1. The building is as large as a palace. 2. The window is as high as the ceiling. 3. The toys are as amusing as the books. 4. The pens are as poor as the paper and the ink. 5. The women are as tall as the men. 6. The house is as white as (the) snow. 7. John is as small as his brother. 8. Agnes is as gentle as a lamb.

9. The merchant is as rich as the banker. 10. The paper is² not¹ so fine as the envelopes. 11. The house is not² so¹ large as the palace. 12. The streets of Toledo are not so broad as those (the) of Madrid.

13. Paul has as-much courage as Peter. 14. Mary has as-much diligence as her sister. 15. The boys have as-many projects as the men. 16. The tables have as-many legs as the chairs. 17. Julia has as-many pens as her friend Louisa. 18. The merchant has² not¹ so-much money as the banker. 19. The horse has not so-much patience as the ox. 20. John has not so-many friends as Peter. 21. The farmer has not so-many houses as the judge. 22. The cat is not so useful as the dog.

23. The horse is more useful than the ox. 24. (The) gold and (the) silver are more precious (684) than (the) iron or (the) lead. 25. The houses of-the king are more spacious than those (the) of (the) citizens. 26. The merchants are richer than the scholars. 27. The wise are happier than the ignorant. 28. The tables are taller than the chairs. 29. John is less amiable than his sister. 30. The laborer has fewer books than the mechanic. 31. The farmer has less money than the shop-keeper, but *he-is* more contented than the-latter (*éste*). 32. We-have more than (§ 137, *d*) [one] hundred acquaintances in this town. 33. The royal palace is larger than any (125) of the houses in (of) the capital. 34. It-is difficult to say which is (*sea*) better, (the) riches or (the) wisdom; both are-im-portant to the state and to (the) society.

Exercise Seventh.

Learn and Recite §§ 140-148.

1. The count's palace is the largest² building¹ in (147) the city. 2. This is the widest² street¹ in the capital. 3. He-gave the wisest² counsel¹ of all. 4. He-is the best friend (that) I have. 5. A dulled conscience is our worst enemy. 6. He-took the smallest² coin¹ that I had (*tenta*). 7. The wisest [men] err sometimes. 8. The love-liest² women¹ are² not¹ always the most beautiful. 9. The best schools in (the) town are the public [ones]. 10. The most enter-taining² books¹ for (the) children are those (the) which have pictures. 11. He-gave² me¹ [some] of his poorest (*peores*) pens. 12. The fleece of the lamb was of the whitest² color.¹

13. The justest judgments are always the wisest. 14. The shortest² road¹ is² not¹ always the best. 15. (The) Spanish proverbs are full of the profoundest² truths.¹ 16. The earliest collection is of-the marquis of Santillana. 17. The Broad² Street¹ of St. Bernard is one of the longest *in* the Spanish capital. 18. The street of Alcalá is the most beautiful *in* Madrid. 19. The Gate of the Sun is the most spacious² square¹ *in* that town. 20. The¹ shortest² street,² or³ rather⁴ lane,⁵ is that (the) of Seville. 21. The city of Cadiz is the most ancient *in* Europe. 22. Seen (*fem.*) from the sea, it-appears [to be] a mass of [the] whitest clouds (*superl. abs.*).

Exercise Eighth.

Learn and Recite §§ 149-159.

1. The day is very fine. 2. The night was (*estuvo*) very dark. 3. He-is a most² congenial³ person¹ (with *muy*). 4. His arrival was most-timely (in-*tsimo*). 5. The benches are very-low (or *very low*). 6. The review *was* most-brilliant. 7. We-have very-many friends in this town. 8. There-is very-much fruit this year. 9. The houses of Cadiz are very-white. 10. The Phœnicians were a very-ancient people (151). 11. This is a most-beautiful bird. 12. The boy is exceedingly diligent. 13. The ring is of [the] finest² gold¹ (*absol.*). 14. The lecture was (*estuvo*) very-well-attended.

15. He-is a very-learned² man.¹ 16. His manners were very-mild. 17. Some of the streets of London are very-long. 18. His conduct was (*ful*) most-shocking. 19. The occasion was most-happy. 20. Last-night occurred a most-shocking² attempt¹ against the king's life. 21. This afternoon the attendance at the Córtes *was* very-slim. 22. The way is very-long and the night very dark. 23. The countess is a very-amiable lady. 24. Our neighbor's father-and-mother are very-old. 25. The envelopes are very-poor. 26. The question is [a] very-difficult [one]. 27. The news is quite certain.

28. The dog is a very-faithful² friend.¹ 29. It-was a very-devout action (reg. of *piadoso*). 30. The inside room is more quiet than the front [one]. 31. This gentleman is my most intimate friend. 32. He-is quite young, but he-has considerable experience. 33. He

has a very² pretty³ hotel¹ on the "Castellana."* 34. He-is very [much of a] gentleman.

Exercise Ninth.

Learn and Recite §§ 160-165.

1. Two men and three boys. 2. Four books and five pencils. 3. Seven churches and six schools. 4. Nine windows and eight doors. 5. Ten oranges and twelve pears. 6. Eighteen ships and three-hundred men. 7. Fifteen trees and thirteen statues. 8. Twenty horses and fifty sheep. 9. Five-hundred houses and twelve thousand residents. 10. Ninety-nine cents and nine mills.

11. Eight and six are fourteen. 12. A year has twelve months. 13. A month has thirty or thirty-one days. 14. A year has three-hundred [and] sixty-five days. 15. A Spanish real is-worth about five cents, and a Cuban [one] ten cents. 16. There-are nineteen ships and twenty-six steamers in the port. 17. A set of twelve chairs, two sofas, and three or four easy-chairs form a *sillerta*. 18. The permanent² army¹ of Spain in time of peace consists of more *than* seventy-five thousand men. 19. They-have fifty thousand men in the Basque provinces since the peace of 1876. 20. The year (of) 1492 was [a] very notable [one]. 21. The capture of Constantinople in the year (of) 1453 was coetaneous with the invention of (the) printing in Europe.

Exercise Tenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 166, 168-170.

1. The first day of the week. 2. The second month of the year. 3. The third Saturday of the month. 4. Three is the fourth part of twelve. 5. The seventh exercise is easier than the eighth. 6. The first lessons of a new language are more difficult than the last. 7. The second half of the nineteenth² century.¹ 8. The twenty-third² chapter¹ of the book. 9. The thirtieth² volume¹ of the history of Spain.

10. The Arabs entered (into) Spain in the eighth century. 11. Alfonso the Tenth was a wise and enlightened king. 12. A

* The name of a fashionable drive in Madrid, the extension of the *Prado* and *Recoletos*.

Spanish real is the twentieth part of a dollar. 13. He-spends one (the) half of his time in the streets. 14. He-lost three fourths (the three quarter parts) of his income. 15. Nine tenths of them were favorable to the project. 16. He-gave (to) his son one fifteenth (the fifteenth part) of his receipts. 17. (The) four fifths of the soldiers were raw-recruits.

18. The servant bought a quarter of flour, a quarter of wine, a little beef, and [some] lettuce for the salad. 19. The farmer gave (to) the parish-priest his tithe of wheat. 20. Last-night the conscripts disturbed the neighborhood with their shouts and songs. 21. At the introduction of printing into Spain at the close (*á últimos*) of the fifteenth² century,¹ all (the) books were printed in folio or in quarto. 22. (The) ancient² Spanish³ books¹ in 8vo are usually of the size of our books in 16mo, or smaller still.

Exercise Eleventh.

Learn and Recite §§ 171-175.

1. Five and three are * eight and ten are eighteen, and seven are twenty-five. 2. Three times nine are twenty-seven. 3. Four times eight are thirty-two. 4. Twelve times twelve [are a] hundred and forty-four. 5. Twice thirteen are twenty-six and nine are thirty-five. 6. A day and [a] half. 7. An hour and [a] quarter. 8. He-gave one (the) half of his goods to the poor. 9. He-worked half [a] day. 10. He-will-wait half [an] hour.

11. I-spent a couple of days in the country. 12. He-bought half [a] dozen (of) oranges. 13. He sold a dozen and [a] half (of) boxes of raisins. 14. He-has a score of acquaintances. 15. He-lived there a score-and-a-half of years. 16. He spoke once or twice (two). 17. He-plays sometimes. 18. (The) children cry many times *or* often. 19. (The) thoughtful² men¹ jest seldom. 20. Some (*unas*) times he-wrote, other [times] he-read.

21. He-plays every day. 22. He-goes to the country twice a (*al*) year. 23. He-writes every month. 24. He-visits (to) his parents every two months. 25. He attends (to) the church every week. 26. He studies (at) every moment; he-is very diligent. 27. Every three months I-go to (the) town.

* *Are* is usually omitted in ordinary calculations.

28. $6 + 3 + 9 - 8 = 10$. 29. $\frac{8}{5}$ and $\frac{3}{15}$ are how-many? 30. In a couple of hours he-will-be here. 31. I have visited the palace of the Alhambra a score of times. 32. Sometimes he-comes in (*por*) the morning, and others in (*por*) the afternoon. 33. Every day I write three or four letters. 34. Every time that I-see² him¹ he-pleases² me¹ less.

Exercise Twelfth.

Learn and Recite p. 90; *Read* pp. 91-93; and *Learn Pres. Ind.* of § 536, p. 254.

tengo, or } *I have.*
yo tengo }
V. tiene, or } *you have.*
tiene V. }

{ tengo yo? or } *have I?*
{ tengo? }
{ tiene V.? or } *have you?*
{ V. tiene? }

no tengo, or } *I have not, or*
yo no tengo } *I have no.*
V. no tiene, or } *you have not, or*
no tiene V. } *you have no.*

{ no tengo yo? or } *have I not? or*
{ no tengo? } *have I no?*
{ no tiene V.? or } *have you not? or*
{ V. no tiene? } *have you no?*

So all the persons in all the tenses throughout the verb.

1. I have a book and a pencil. 2. Thou hast more knives than I. 3. He has many houses, and she has many [lady] friends. 4. You have fewer oranges than I. 5. I have better presents than you. 6. We boys (189, *a*) have more time than you girls. 7. Agnes' sisters have prettier dresses than she. 8. They have also bracelets and necklaces. 9. Mary and Jane have rings; we have no ornaments. 10. Charles and Peter have no rings. 11. John has new² shoes¹ and a new² hat.¹ 12. Ye (*2d pl.*) have a good father and a good mother. 13. Children, have ye no toys? 14. Peter and Manuel have a top and a drum; but they haven't [any] hoops.

15. We have good friends; they have no friends. 16. Have you no needles, Julia? 17. What have we? 18. You have kind² parents and relatives.¹ 19. Has² the poor boy³ no¹ kite⁴? 20. Have¹ the boys³ [any] friends²? 21. What have you (*pl.*)? 22. We have a ball and a hoop. 23. Who has my brother's slate? 24. We have his slate. 25. You have my sister's paper and pens.

26. Have I a pen? 27. You have not [an] inkstand. 28. Have you a sister? 29. We have cousins, but we have not [an] uncle and [an] aunt (§ 106). 30. Have we no paper? 31. Have² the children³ no¹ toys⁴? 32. Have they [any] letters? 33. Hast thou a pencil and a rule? 34. Here is (have you) a pencil, but I have no rule.

Exercise Thirteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 184-186, 205, and Pres. Ind. of § 362, p. 171.

le hablo, <i>or</i> }	<i>I speak to</i> {	<i>him.</i>	¿lo hallo yo?	} <i>do I find it?</i>
yo le hablo }		<i>her.</i>	¿lo hallo?	
V. le habla }	<i>you speak to</i> {	<i>him.</i>	¿lo halla V.?	} <i>do you find it?</i>
le habla V. }		<i>her.</i>	¿V. lo halla?	
no le hablo, <i>or</i> }	<i>I do not speak to</i> {	<i>him.</i>	¿no lo hallo yo?	} <i>do I not find it?</i>
yo no le hablo }		<i>her.</i>	¿no lo hallo?	
V. no le habla }	<i>you do not speak to</i> {	<i>him.</i>	¿no lo halla V.?	} <i>do you not find it?</i>
no le habla V. }		<i>her.</i>	¿V. no lo halla?	

So all the persons in all the tenses throughout the verb.

Like **hablar**, conjugate: **buscar**, to look for, to seek; **hallar**, to find; **alabar**, to praise; **engañar**, to deceive.

1. I-am-looking-for something (379). 2. What are-you-looking-for? 3. I-am-looking-for a needle, but I do not find it (*fem.*). 4. Do you not find it? 5. You deceive yourself (398), you have it in your (the) hand. 6. Does he speak to thee? 7. He does not speak to me. 8. You deceive him. 9. I do not deceive *him*; he deceives *me* (*pleon.*, 185). 10. We praise them because they are (*son*) diligent. 11. Do they praise us? 12. Do they praise *us*? 13. Do *they*³ praise² us¹? 14. You deceive yourself. 15. You deceive yourselves. 16. They find what (*lo que*) they-are-looking-for. 17. Do you find what [you] are-looking-for (218)? 18. We do not find what we-are-looking-for.

19. The boys deceive themselves (176, a). 20. Do the boys³ deceive² themselves¹? 21. Does he not speak to us? 22. [He] speaks to *them*, not³ to¹ us.² 23. Why does he not speak to us? 24. Because we do not praise him. 25. Does *he* praise us? 26. He does not praise us, he deceives us. 27. Have you the boy's top?

28. I haven't it, his brother has it. 29. Who has Jane's bracelet?
 30. Her sister has it. 31. She is-looking-for it everywhere. 32. Her
 sister deceives her. 33. Do (the) brothers-and-sisters³ deceive²
 each-other¹? 34. They praise each-other, but they do not deceive
 each-other.

Exercise Fourteenth.

Read pp. 96-105; *Learn and Recite* §§ 217-224, and Pres. Ind. of
 §§ 363, 364.

Like *comer*, conjugate: *aprender*, to learn; *le-er*, to read; *temer*,
 to fear, to be afraid of.

Like *vivir*, conjugate: *escribir*, to write; *cumplir con*, to fulfil, to
 discharge (a duty, etc.); *permitir*, to allow, permit.

1. Are you learning a new language? 2. What are you reading?
 3. Are you not afraid to talk to him (*con él*).^{*} 4. I do not fear him.
 5. He is reading the newspaper. 6. Where do you live? 7. Are
 you writing a letter? 8. At what o'clock do you dine? 9. [We]
 usually¹ dine² late. 10. We discharge (*con*) our obligations as well
 as (the) time³ and (the) strength⁴ permit² (*it to-us*¹). 11. Do you
 allow it? 12. I do not allow it. 13. We have a house in the
 country, and we live there during the summer.

14. In the winter they live in the city, because the weather does
 not permit (to) them to live in the country. 15. I am writing a
 letter to my cousin who (*que*) lives at (in) Rome. 16. The children
 do not allow us to write; they are learning to (*d*) read with their
 blocks of wood. 17. If you discharge your duties faithfully up-to
 the measure of your capacity, you will have (*tendrá*) your reward.

18. We do not live (in-order) to eat, but (*sino*) we eat in-order-to
 live. 19. We are reading in a most amusing book. 20. You are
 writing with a pencil, and I am writing with a pen. 21. My brother
 writes more than (*de*) fifteen letters a (*al*) day. 22. The weather
 does not allow us to go-out. 23. The good do not fear their
 fellow-men (§ 76). 24. He does not allow me to write with his pen.

* **Hablar** followed by the dative signifies to address a person, to speak to
 him; to talk with a person, involving conversation, is **hablar con** una persona.

Exercise Fifteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 233-238, and Pres. Ind. of §§ 539, 543.

1. He gives it to me. 2. He says it to him. 3. He writes them (*fem.* and *m.*) to us. 4. They permit him to (it to him). 5. I tell you; I tell it to you; I tell it to you (*pleon.*). 6. I give you; I give it to you; I give it to you (*pleon.*). 7. John has three oranges and he-gives³ them² all⁴ to-me.¹ 8. The children give us their play-things; they give them to us. 9. Agnes has a story, and she is reading it to us.

10. The old-people (*ancianos*) have a letter from their children, and a lady is reading it to them. 11. The boys and girls are looking-for their toys, but their parents do not allow them to (it to them). 12. If I find them, I [shall] give them to you. 13. They tell it to them. 14. They give them to them. 15. I do not say so (it) to him. 16. We do not say so to them.

Exercise Sixteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 243-254, and the past definite of *hablar*, *comer*, and *vivir* (pp. 171, 175, 178).

1. My father spoke to him. 2. My brothers found a treasure. 3. Thy friend deceived us. 4. His servants feared his anger. 5. Your friends praised the artist (§ 76). 6. Their pens were (*fuéron*) poor. 7. He did not learn his exercises. 8. They did not look-for their money. 9. Did you not fear (the) punishment? 10. He fulfilled his duties.

11. They allowed us to see our (§ 76) friends. 12. We did not write our letters. 13. You did not learn your lessons. 14. Did I not praise (§ 76) my teachers? 15. They deceived their friends. 16. Didst thou find thy knife, my son? 17. A friend of mine found it, and gave (*dió*) it to me. 18. Did you write the letter to your uncle? 19. John did not allow me to (it to me). 20. Did you speak to me? 21. Who allowed them to go-out? 22. We did not deceive you. 23. Where did they dine last-night? 24. We lived in his house many years.

Exercise Seventeenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 254-258, and the past indefinite indic. of **hablar**, **comer**, and **vivir** (pp. 173, 176, 180).

The past participle of **escribir** is *escrito* (§ 561).

1. Have you found your book? 2. I have not found mine, but I have found my sister's (*the* of). 3. My friend and yours. 4. Thy house and mine. 5. His pictures and ours. 6. Their parents and mine. 7. My sister and thine. 8. Our cousins and yours. 9. Your houses and ours. 10. Their hats and mine.

11. I have spoken to my friend, but not to yours. 12. Thou hast not deceived (§ 76) thy friend, but (*sino*) mine. 13. He has not found my slate, but his-own. 14. We have written letters to our parents and to his. 15. You have looked-for your paper, and not [for] ours. 16. They have feared my anger, and not thine. 17. I have read their letters and yours.

Exercise Eighteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 259-269, and the imperative of the three conjugations.

SINGULAR.

háblale (familiar)	} <i> speak to him.</i>	no le hables (fam.)	} <i> do not speak to him.</i>
háblele V. (polite)		no le hable V. (pol.)	

PLURAL.

hablémosle, <i>let us speak to him.</i>	} <i> speak to him.</i>	no le hablemos, <i>let us not speak to him.</i>	} <i> do not speak to him.</i>
habládle (fam.)		no le hableis (fam.)	
háblenle VV. (pol.)		no le hablen VV. (pol.)	

SINGULAR.

cómelo (fam.)	} <i> eat it.</i>	no lo comas (fam.)	} <i> do not eat it.</i>
cómalo V. (pol.)		no lo coma V. (pol.)	

PLURAL.

comámoslo, <i>let us eat it.</i>	} <i> eat it.</i>	no lo comamos, <i>let us not eat it.</i>	} <i> do not eat it.</i>
comédlo (fam.)		no lo comais (fam.)	
cómanlo VV. (pol.)		no lo coman VV. (pol.)	

The third conjugation take *-íd* instead of *-ed*, otherwise the same as the second, — **vivid**, **vivan** VV., etc.

1. Speak to this man (fam. and pol.). 2. Speak to him. 3. Permit (to) this lady. 4. Permit (to) her. 5. Praise these boys (§ 76). 6. Praise them. 7. Read this letter; read it. 8. Read these letters; read them. 9. Fear this punishment; fear it. 10. Fear these penalties; fear them.

11. Do not speak to that man; do not speak to him. 12. Do not praise that girl; do not praise her. 13. Do not deceive (§ 76) these gentlemen; do not deceive them. 14. Do not learn those lessons; do not learn them. 15. Do not write that letter so badly. 16. Do not write it so badly. 17. Do not look-for (§ 371) those books; do not look-for them.

18. Let us speak to these gentlemen. 19. Let us not deceive these children. 20. Let us not fear them. 21. Let us praise them. 22. Let us not live in this house. 23. Let us fear God (§ 76), and keep his commandments. 24. Let us not deceive our (§ 76) parents, because they are (*son*) our best friends. 25. Let us live in peace with all (the) men. 26. Let us not live (in-order-) to eat, but (*sino*) let us eat (in-order-) to live.

Exercise Nineteenth.

Learn and Recite §§ 271-276, and the present indicative of *ser* and *estar* (pp. 190, 193).

ser is absolute being; *estar*, accidental being or state.

1. This is the boy who lives in my house. 2. These are the persons who deceive (§ 76) their friends. 3. The book which I have read *is* on the table. 4. The inkstands which I have bought are not good. 5. The papers of which I spoke *are* in the table-drawer. 6. The ladies whom I seek *are* not here. 7. The friends with whom I live wrote me a long² letter.¹ 8. The boys to whom I read the exercise are diligent.

9. The days on (in) which he writes are (the) Tuesdays and Fridays. 10. The books of which he speaks are² unknown to-me.¹ 11. The rule with which he makes the lines belongs to (is of) my brother. 12. The exercises that we write are more difficult to-day than those (the) of yesterday. 13. You are my friend. 14. *Are* you tired? 15. Where *is* the inkstand? 16. Do you know (*sabe V.*)

where¹ my pens *are*? 17. I have not seen them. 18. I am the person (whom) you deceived. 19. We are the artists whom they praised. 20. Thou art the boy to whom I spoke yesterday.

Exercise Twentieth.

Learn and Recite §§ 277-282, and the past def. of *estar* and *ser*.

1. The table near which he *was*. 2. The balcony from which he spoke to-me. 3. The charge with which he honored me. 4. The judge before whom he *stood*. 5. The books about which they deceived us. 6. The conditions on (*bajo*) which they wrote. 7. The limits beyond which he did not wish (*quiso*) to go. 8. The measures against which we spoke. 9. The individuals among whom we *were*. 10. The city toward which he-was-going (*iba*). 11. The roofs upon which the birds² alighted.¹

12. He says what he thinks. 13. He writes what he wishes. 14. I praise what pleases me. 15. They find what they seek. 16. They fulfil what they promise. 17. They read what they find. 18. We eat what we like (pleases us). 19. We praise what we read. 20. We know what we write. 21. He finds all that he looks-for. 22. He praises all that *I* do (*hago*). 23. He does not fulfil all that he promises. 24. He does not praise all that you do (*hace*). 25. He allows me to do all that I like (*quiero*).

Exercise Twenty-First.

Learn and Recite §§ 284-287, and the imperfect indicative of *estar*, *ser*, *hablar*, *comer*, and *vivir*.

1. That is the gentleman in whose house *I* was-living. 2. The young-man whose father *is* ill was-looking-for a physician. 3. This is the teacher (*é*) whose scholars we-were-praising so-much. 4. *He* is the-one-who was-writing when we-came-in. 5. *She* is the-one who found what we-were-looking-for. 6. You are the one who deceived us about what we-were-asking. 7. They are the ones who were-reading while we were-speaking to them.

8. He who seeks finds, and he who asks receives. 9. Those who study, learn. 10. They do not praise him who deceives (*Al que engaña no le alaban*). 11. They do not always believe him who

praises. 12. Him who fears they do not honor (him). 13. Him who discharges his duties they honor. 14. He who wrote the letter which we have received lives in London. 15. They who deserve rewards are those who have written¹ their exercises well.² 16. She who deceived her sister is worthy of blame.

Exercise Twenty-Second.

Learn and Recite §§ 288–292, and the future indicative of **hablar, comer, vivir, estar, and ser.**

1. Who is-looking-for a book? 2. Whose pen is this? 3. Whose toys are these that *are* [lying] on the floor? 4. Whom will-you-deceive? 5. What will he fear? 6. Whom will-they-praise? 7. What shall I learn? 8. What wilt-thou-write? 9. What shall-we-find? 10. To what [purpose] will-they-write? 11. To whom shall I speak? 12. What will-it-be?

13. What house is that? 14. What is the number of this house? 15. What day of the week is-it? 16. What is the object of the visit? 17. What measures have you taken? 18. What are the lessons that he-is-learning? 19. Which of these houses is yours? 20. With which of these pens will you write the letter? 21. What day will you dine with us? 22. How proud they are! 23. What a misfortune [it is]! 24. Where will you live in Paris? 25. They will praise what pleases (to) them. 26. Thou wilt arrive to-morrow night (*m. por la n.*). 27. When shall we dine? 28. I do not know when it will be.

Exercise Twenty-Third.

Learn and Recite §§ 293–308, and conjugate all the simple forms of the verb **hablar.**

1. The true master praises another's work, but not his-own. 2. The thief seeks the treasures of others. 3. The unjust [man] speaks freely of others' lives, and does not consider his own. 4. Somebody is calling us; do you not hear a voice? 5. I hear

(*siento*) steps; some-one is-coming (*viene*). 6. Somebody will praise the master (§ 76) whose works deserve it (*merecan*). 7. Has¹ anybody³ found² what I lost? 8. Somebody wrote him a letter which gave him (a) great offense.

9. Some-one of our acquaintances spoke ill of him. 10. Some of these trees do not grow. 11. Are you looking for anything? 12. Is-there (*hay*) anything more troublesome than to listen-to the twaddle of the vain? 13. Every day has its duties. 14. Every country has its language and its customs. 15. Every year we go to the baths. 16. The Spaniards go to the drive every day. 17. I-met² so-and-so³ yesterday,¹ and he-told (*dijo*) me that you were-looking-for [a] house. 18. When he had (*hubo*) spoken he sat down. 19. He would not speak² to me if I were not (*estuviese*) with influential friends. 20. They spoke of the grand dinner at (*en*) [the] palace.

Exercise Twenty-Fourth.

Recite §§ 309-321, and *Learn* the compound forms of the verb **hablar**.

1. He told me nothing. 2. I had not eaten anything. 3. He would not learn anything. 4. He-who knows² nothing¹ fears² nothing.¹ 5. He has found nothing. 6. Nobody has written more than the great dramatic author, Lope de Vega. 7. He praises no one. 8. No one will deceive him. 9. He was-looking-for no one. 10. [Let] no one deceive you (*subj.*). 11. No one would find it (*cond.*) even if he-should-search (*subj.*) all the year.

12. In no house do-they-do (*hacen*) this. 13. None of these things moves me. 14. None of these things move me. 15. None of the trees grows more than this [one]. 16. He has deceived none of them. 17. They have looked-for [a] house, but have found none. 18. We have not received any news from our friends. 19. No house in (of) the city is as large and beautiful as the royal² palace.¹ 20. None of these ladies is as amiable as the marchioness. 21. I cannot (*no puedo*) write with any (*neg.*) of these pens. 22. No paper is so good as (the) hand-laid paper.

Exercise Twenty-Fifth.

Recite §§ 323-335, and conjugate all the simple forms of the verb **comer**.

1. Have² you no¹ time? 2. The poor people have (has) no home. 3. We eat no meat [on] (the) Fridays. 4. They have no friends. 5. Others toil in-order-that I may-eat (*subj.*). 6. I shall write the letter another day. 7. That (*eso*) is another thing. 8. The other day I dined with a friend. 9. In Spain some dine at (*á las*) two in (of) the afternoon, and others at (*á las*) six. 10. Do you want these books or the others? 11. I will take these and you may (*puede*) have the rest.

12. Some went (*fueron*) to the country, others to the baths, and the rest staid home (*refl.*). 13. I shall dine with any one who invites (*subj.*) me. 14. Give me (*déme V.*) any book. 15. I cannot (*no puedo*) write with any pen. 16. I-am-looking-for any house that is (*sea*) comfortable and convenient. 17. Such-a thing might (*podría*) happen to any [one]. 18. Such men are-not-accustomed (*no suelen*) to be idle. 19. The history of such-a period is full of interest. 20. Such books are very useful to (*para*) the young (youth).

Exercise Twenty-Sixth.

Recite §§ 336-349, and *Learn* the compound forms of the verb **comer**.

1. I have been-reading all (the) day. 2. We had been-watching all night. 3. He has been (*estado*) in the National² Library¹ all the morning. 4. Have you² ever³ travelled¹ over all Andalusia? 5. I had been-waiting-for him all that afternoon. 6. All (the) days are alike (*iguales*) to (*para*) him (*or dat. pron.*). 7. All classes praise him. 8. The whole battalion entered into the fight. 9. This is that Light that lightens every man who comes into (*á*) this world. 10. We see the same [thing] everywhere. 11. They arrested them all (§ 76). 12. He had eaten it all. 13. They had read it all before.

14. Every one who learns Spanish must (*ha de*) begin with (*por*) the grammar. 15. All those who do (*hacen*) such things receive their reward. 16. All that we learned was profitable to us (during)

all [our] (the) life. 17. All that the best men approve is good. 18. In the school the teacher gave (some¹) very³ severe⁴ lessons.² 19. Having dined he went to the gardens with some friends. 20. We have two houses, one (of) stone, and the other (of) wood. 21. He was looking-for a number of good paintings with which he wished to adorn the walls of his drawing-room.

Exercise Twenty-Seventh.

Recite the conjugation of the entire verbs **vivir**, **haber** (p. 162), and §§ 354-355.

1. Living in (*de*) this way we spent little money. 2. Having written a¹ very³ long⁴ letter,² he went-out to take (*á dar*) a walk in the gardens. 3. (In-order) to have friends, it-is necessary to be friendly. 5. (The) to have lived soberly in our youth is a pleasant reflection for our old-age. 6. We-used-to-live (p. 346, *c*) in the country, but now we reside in (the) town. 7. In-order that we may discharge (with) all our obligations, it-is necessary to have principles of honor. 8. He was-fearing that I should write to his parents. 9. He does not wish *me to live* (*that I may live*) in the capital, surrounded by (*del*) pageant and luxury, until my moral forces and my judgment are (*subj.*) more³ developed.¹ 10. I-feared (*imperf.*) that he would not find what he-was-looking-for. 11. I wrote him in-order that he might permit me to-do what I-wished.

12. There-are days in which one cares (not) neither to read nor to write. 13. There-were more than three hundred persons at the dinner. 14. There-will-be no school to-morrow. 15. There is no one who does not know (*sepa*) what is just. 16. There-has been much rain this year. 17. There have been occasions of great interest and profit during this season. 18. In the Castiles there are no trees, and therefore there are no birds. 19. There would have been much less danger, if every one had remained (*hubiese permanecido*) in his place (*sitio*). 20. Will there be [*a*] war, or will there be none (§ 197)? 21. There were (*sing.*) people whom I did not know (*imperf.*). 22. There was nobody in the sitting-room. 23. There would be no remedy if a fire² should-break-out.¹ 24. There was a moment of the deepest silence, and then¹ the conversation³ went-on.²

Exercise Twenty-Eighth.

El Barómetro.

COMEDIA EN UN ACTO

*La Condesa.*¹ ¡Dios mio²! ¡Dios mio! esto³ es insoportable. Hace⁴ tres meses y medio⁵ que llegué⁶ á esta quinta, y ni un solo día ha dejado⁷ de llover. Yo⁸ no tengo⁹ resignacion para¹⁰ sufrir este tiempo, que me aburre, me desespera y me mata. Vamos á¹¹ ver si el barómetro me da alguna esperanza. ¡Nada!¹² Ayer marcaba¹³ lluvia, y hoy indica tempestad. ¡Esto³ es horroroso! Pues bien, voy¹¹ á acabar de una vez¹⁴ con¹⁵ el cómplice de esta lluvia eterna. (Descuelga¹⁶ el barómetro y le arroja al suelo,¹⁷ haciéndole pedazos¹⁸ con estrépito.) Ya¹⁹ no me mortificará más con sus presagios. (*Vése.*²⁰)

In this passage the following verbs are *regular*: 1st conj., **acabar**, **arrojar**, **dejar**, **desesperar**, **matar**; 2d conj., none; 3d conj., **sufrir**, **aburrir** (used in the 3d pers. sing. and plur. only; otherwise in the reflexive form, *aburrirse*). The following make *orthographic changes*: **indicar**, **marcar**, **mortificar**, **llegar** (§ 371). The following are *irregular*: 1st conj., **dar** (§ 543), **descolgar** (like *rogar*, §§ 483, 371); 2d conj., **hacer** (§ 530), **llover** (§ 418, impers.), **ser** (§ 385), **tener** (§ 536), **ver** (§ 548); 3d conj., **ir** (§ 552), **irse** (§ 552, a). All these verbs must be learned or reviewed before the lesson is passed.

1. The countess *is* in her summer-house in the south of Spain, in that ancient province that is called (calls itself) Andalusia. 2. It has rained incessantly during all the time that she has *been* there, and she has become-impatient at (*de*) so much bad weather. 3. In the capital of Spain, where she lives, it scarcely ever rains (*no ll. casi nunca*). 4. Seeking some victim of her anger, she hits on the

¹ 97, d. ² 249 and a. ³ 266. ⁴ 426, b. ⁵ 172. ⁶ 371 and b. ⁷ 415 and 726, b. ⁸ 187, a. ⁹ 322. ¹⁰ 729. ¹¹ 552 and 725, a: **vamos á ver** is much more energetic than **veámos**, which a calm person would use, *let us see*. ¹² 313. ¹³ 697, a. ¹⁴ **De una vez**, adverbial phrase, "of one time," *at once, once for all*. ¹⁵ **Con**, *with*, is the regimen of **acabar**, *to finish with (con)*, we say, "to put an end to." ¹⁶ From **descolgar**: *descuelgo*, *gas*, *ga*, like **rogar**, § 483. ¹⁷ *On the floor*, lit. *to the floor*. ¹⁸ **Hacer pedazos**, with the direct obj., lit. *to make a thing pieces*, i.e. *to break it in pieces*. ¹⁹ 607. ²⁰ 552, a.

barometer, which does not cease to point to [a] storm. 5. She takes it down from the nail on (*de*) which it-was-hanging (*pendía*), and she throws it violently on-the floor. 6. Thus² triumphant¹ over (*de*) her foe, and leaving the field strewn with the evidences of the fray, she retires from the scene.

Exercise Twenty-Ninth.

ESCENA SEGUNDA.

Anselmo, criado; *Victorina*, criada.

Vict. ¿Qué ruido es este? ¡Jesús! El barómetro hecho añicos²!

Ans. ¡Qué lástima³! Después que le⁵ costó mil quinientos reales⁴ al⁵ señor⁶ conde, ha tenido el pobre chisme un fin muy desgraciado. Todavía me acuerdo⁷ de la tarde que fui con el amo⁸ á la tienda del óptico⁹ de la calle de la Montera, y . . .

— *Vict.* Vámos,¹⁰ no empiece¹¹ usted ya con los discursos de siempre,¹² y recoja¹³ usted esos pedazos ántes que vuelva¹⁴ la señora. (Lee un periódico.)

Ans. Mejor sería que usted me ayudára,¹⁵ para¹⁶ acabar más pronto. ¿No oye¹⁷ usted? (Se hace¹⁸ la sorda y sigue¹⁹ leyendo²⁰ sin hacer²¹ caso!) ¿Trae alguna noticia interesante ese²² periódico?

Vict. Muy interesante. Han preso²³ á Vargas.²⁴

Ans. ¡Eso²⁵ es imposible, imposible!

— *Vict.* ¿Imposible? Oiga²⁶ usted: “Al fin se ha conseguido²⁷ capturar al célebre bandido, que por espacio de un año ha sido el azote de los pueblos de Andalucía.”

¹ 658, *d. Rem.* ² añicos, stronger than pedazos, and popular; hecho a., broken into a thousand fragments. ³ 291, *a.* ⁴ i.e. \$75. ⁵ 215. ⁶ señor and señora are used with titles, and words denoting relatives, to indicate respect; omit in English. ⁷ From acordarse, 474, 396, 757. ⁸ el amo, for mi amo, as being sufficiently explicit in common language. ⁹ á casa de, to so and so's (house); á la tienda de, to so and so's (shop, store); translate to the optician's in Montera Street. ¹⁰ 659, *a.* imperat. of ir, lit. let us go, here used as an exclam. like the French allons, voyons, “come now!” ¹¹ From empezar, 371, 469, 367, *a. d.* ¹² Speeches of always = the old story. ¹³ 375. ¹⁴ volver, 491, 710. ¹⁵ 713, 709, *e.* ¹⁶ 729. ¹⁷ From oír. ¹⁸ hacerse la s., to pretend not to hear (to be deaf). ¹⁹ From seguir. ²⁰ From leer. ²¹ 718; *h. caso*, to take notice, to pay attention. ²² 263. ²³ 569, 410. ²⁴ 748. ²⁵ 266. ²⁶ From oír, 553. ²⁷ 410.

Ans. Y ¿dónde han atrapado á ese tunante?

Vict. En Mairëna.

Ans. ¡Caramba! y qué cerca estaba de²⁸ nosotros.

Vict. Á media lëgua²⁹ de esta casa. No he acabado de³⁰ leer todavía. Oiga usted: "Várgas es un hombre muy original, y podemos dar algunos pormenores de su persona. Su mirada es terrible, pero llena de inteligencia; su boca perfecta, aunque contraida por una sonrisa irónica; de frente sombría, adornada de una magnífica cabellera negra. Con los hombres es implacable, pero tan galante con las señoras que jamás las despoja de sus sortijas sin besar³¹ caballerosamente la mano." Como que³² es hijo de una buena familia, segun dicen.

Ans. ¡Ya! Y le ha quedado esa costumbre de cuando gastaba levita.³³

Conjugate the *regular* verbs: 1st conj., *atrapar*, *ayudar*, *besar*, *capturar*, *despojar*, *gastar*, *quedar*; 2d conj., *leer* (549, *b*), *prender* (569), *recoger* (375). Conjugate the *irregular* verbs: 1st conj., *acordarse* (474), *costar* (473), *empezar* (469, 371), *estar* (382); 2d conj., *poder* (532), *traer* (537), *volver* (491); 3d conj., *decir* (539), *oir* (553), *seguir* and *conseguir* (516).

1. Do you hear a noise? 2. It is the barometer falling (that falls). 3. It has been broken into (*se ha hecho*) fragments. 4. How much did it cost our (to the) master? 5. He purchased it at the optician's (*en la t.*, etc.). 6. Do you know the optician? 7. I have often² *been*¹ in his shop. 8. I have bought¹ opera-glasses there.² 9. His shop *is* near the Gate of the Sun, [a] famous square in (of) Madrid. 10. Do you not remember it? 11. I think I do (that yes). 12. Will you pick-up the pieces? 13. I will (yes), if you will help me (*fut.*). 14. The lady will come-back soon. 15. What are you doing (do you)? 16. I am reading the newspaper. 17. What news is there? 18. They have caught a famous marauder. 19. Who (*cuál*)? 20. A highway-robber who has been the terror of this region.

²⁸ 627. ²⁹ 629, *f.* ³⁰ *Finished reading*, 726, *b.* ³¹ "Without saluting them politely;" ancient Spanish salutation was by *kissing the hand* of the person saluted: see also § 253, *a.* ³² *como que no*, an ellipse for ¿cómo no? *puesto que*, *why not?* *since*, etc. ³³ *levita*, the gentleman's afternoon or Prince Albert coat; hence *gastar l.*, *to be dressed like a gentleman* (to wear a levita), *to be a respectable citizen*.

Exercise Thirtieth.

ESCENA TERCERA.

La Condesa. Mayo, llüvia; Junio, lluvia; Julio, grandes lluvias, y Agosto, tempestades. (Ve á los criados.) ¿Qué haceis¹ aquí?

Ans. Señora, estábamos recogiendo² los restos mortales del barómetro que fué.³ (Vase.)

La Cond. (á Vict.) ¿Qué papel es ese que tienes en la mano?

Vict. Es un periódico de Sevilla, con una noticia que de seguro la⁴ agradará.

La Cond. ¿Qué noticia?

Vict. La de que⁵ el famoso bandido Vargas ha sido preso al fin.

La Cond. ¡Oh! ¡cuánto me alegro⁶! Te aseguro que su recuerdo⁷ me ha hecho pasar noches terribles. Todavía le veo en mis sueños.

Vict. Y además dice el periódico que desde Sevilla lo llevarán á Madrid con una cadena de hierro muy gruesa para que no se escape.⁸

La Cond. No tendría yo⁹ necesidad de cadena para que me llevarán allá.

Conjugate or review the following verbs: 1st conj. (*regular*), **agradar**, **asegurar**, **llevar**, **pasar**; (*refl.*, 399), **alegrarse**, **escaparse**; (*prog.*, 380, 382), **estar recogiendo**; (*pass.*, 386), **ser preso**; 2d conj. (*irreg.*), **hacer**, **tener**, **ver**; 3d conj., **decir**.

1. It has rained the whole month of May. 2. What *are* the servants doing (*progress.*)? 3. They *are* busy at (*en*) (the) work. They are working. 4. The news pleases me. 5. Does the news please you? 6. I do not wish anybody (§ 317) to be (*subj.*) unfortunate. 7. You cannot be (*no se puede ser*) kind to some people (certain people). 8. Do you remember him? 9. I do not remember him. 10. I have a vivid recollection (*recuerdo*) of what took

¹ 180 (*d*), 182. ² 380. ³ **que fué**, *that was*, i.e. *the late barometer*; so: **el ministro que fué**, (if dead) *the late minister*; **el m. que ha sido** (if alive, but out of office), *the late m.* ⁴ 220. ⁵ **La de que** is an ellipse = **la noticia de**, *the news of*, namely (**que**) *the*, etc. We would say simply: *that the famous*, etc. ⁶ *How I rejoice* = *how glad I am!* ⁷ Lit. *his memory* = *the thought of him*. ⁸ 710. ⁹ 365, 190.

place that night. 11. What does the paper say further? 12. Read it, madam. 13. You read (*famil.*) it for me (*léemelo tú*). 14. Are you glad? 15. I am very glad (I rejoice much). 16. What are you glad of (of what)? 17. That he has been arrested and carried-off (*de que ha sido*, etc.). 18. *He* is-going (*not prog.*) where I should-like (*quisiera*) to go. 19. Where would you like to go? 20. Home; I do not like¹ the country any more (*ya no*²). 21. When it rains the town is more agreeable than the country. 22. To (*para*) me it-is the (*lo*) same.

Exercise Thirty-First.

ESCENA CUARTA.

La Condesa. (sola. Sin dejar su asiento mira á la campiña á través de los cristales de las ventanas.) Nada, no escampa. Esto es peor que el diluvio universal, que no duró más que cuarenta días, y ahora hace¹ ciento que llueve sin descanso en este país que dicen es un rincón del cielo. ¡Me gusta el tal rincón²! Y yo que creía reunir aquí una tertulia de más de³ treinta personas, me veo sola. Lo único⁴ que me consuela es, que hoy llegará la familia del marqués de la Peña, que es numerosa y de excelente humor sobre todo, especialmente la buena marquesa, que me ha pedido permiso⁵ para traer á su sobrino Carlos, con⁶ quien tiene el proyecto de casarme. Difícil me parece que lo consiga.⁷ He sido tan dichosa en mi matrimonio, que la segunda prueba no será nunca como la primera. (Dan⁸ las doce.) ¡Las doce! Ya debe estar el tren de Sevilla en la estación inmediata. ¡Si no hubiese llegado! No quiero pensarlo. ¡Si pasará todavía un mes en esta soledad! ¡Imposible! Prefiero morirme.⁹

Conjugate the following verbs: (*Regular*), *casarse*, *durar*, *gustar*, *mirar*; *creer* (549, *b*), *deber*, *verse* (548); *reunir*; (*Irreg.*), *consolar* (476), *pensar* (457); *parecer* (374, *a*), *querer* (534); *decir* (539), *morir* (509), *pedir* (512), *preferir* (500).

¹ 696, *e*. ² 759, *a*; lit. "I like such a little nook, indeed," said in irony; we would say, *a pretty nook, indeed, this!* ³ 137, *b*. ⁴ 83. ⁵ 753. ⁶ Regimen of *casarse*; we say, *to whom*. ⁷ *That she will succeed in it*; subj. after *difícil* with impers. verb. ⁸ 678, *Rem.* ⁹ 395.

IDIOMS.

1. **Gustarle á uno, to like** (lit. *to please any one*).

me gusta el libro,	I like the book.
me gustan los libros,	I like (the) books.
la casa que me gusta,	the house that I like.
las casas que nos gustan,	the houses that we like.
no me gusta — gustan,	I do not like it — them.
¿le gusta á V.?	do you like it?
¿no le gusta á V.? [aquello?	don't you like it? [(thing).
¿qué le gusta á V. más, esto ó	what do you like better, this or that
á mi amigo le gusta charlar,	my friend likes to talk.

2. **Casarse con álguien, to marry somebody.**

¿con quién se casa?	whom does he (she) marry.
se casa con su primo,	she marries her cousin.
se casó ya,	he is got already married.

3. **Pedirle á uno alguna cosa, to ask any one for anything.**

le pido á V. permiso para,	I ask your permission to . . .
qué me pide V.?	what do you ask me for?
no me pidió nada,	he did not ask me for anything.
pide al caballero dinero,	he asks the gentleman for money.

1. Without getting-up the lady looks out of (*se asoma á la*) the window. 2. The countess does not like the rain. 3. All the country round-about is impassable on account of the 'bad weather. 4. The weather will never clear-up. 5. The friend of the countess wants to marry her to (*con*) a gentleman whose name is (who calls himself) Charles. 6. She does not wish to marry the (*por*) second time. 7. He has asked me for my (the) hand. 8. We expect some friends by (*con*) the Seville train. 9. The train has already² left¹ the station of Mairena, and presently it-will-arrive at this [one]. 10. The train carries two engines, because the weather *is* so bad. 11. What-if (*si*) our friends should not arrive! 12. They would have to (*que*) pass the night in the cars. 13. They might (*podrían*) return to Seville.

Exercise Thirty-Second.

ESCENA QUINTA.

La Condesa. ¿Ha llegado el tren de Sevilla?

Anselmo. No, señora Condesa, las aguas han destrozado la vía, y por un milagro han podido salvarse los viajeros. No se sabe¹ cuándo podrá² estar expedito el camino.

La Cond. Haz³ que enganchen⁴ en seguida.

Ans. Pero ¿qué piensa V. hacer, señora?

La Cond. Irme con Victorina y contigo á Sevilla, aunque sea⁵ nadando, y desde allí á Madrid.

Ans. ¿Á Madrid á nado?

La Cond. Sí, á Madrid; ¿y eso te espanta? Vamos ¿qué esperas? Corre.

Ans. Pero, señora, si⁶ no se puede⁷ dar un paso,⁸ ni á pié ni en coche, por la campiña, y además la casa de Madrid está en obra, aprovechando el verano, y luego tienen que arreglarla los pintores y los tapiceros. De modo que hasta dentro de un mes lo menos⁹ . .

La Cond. Tienes razon,¹⁰ véte,¹¹ no quiero ver á nadie. (Váse el criado.)

ESCENA SEXTA.

La Cond. (sola). Es decir,¹² que me veo¹³ obligada á permanecer aquí como un prisionero. Dicen que los prisioneros¹⁴ se resignan; me resignaré. Voy á leer. (Toma un libro y lee.) "EL LAGO." ¡Jesús! me horroriza todo lo que¹⁵ es agua. (Arroja el libro y se levanta.) ¿En qué me ocuparé, cielo santo? Voy á dibujar. Sí, el dibujo es una gran distraccion, y divierte al mismo tiempo.

¹ 409. ² can be cleared, lit. "will be able to be cleared." See 532, a. ³ 530; **hacer** is causal, signifying that *another* is to carry out the action expressed by the principal verb. We generally omit it: "*Solomon built him an house*"; Span., "*Salomon hizo edificar una casa,*" caused a house to be built. ⁴ 709, c. ⁵ 710. ⁶ 601. ⁷ 408. ⁸ **dar**, to give, has many other meanings, here to take; so, **dar un paseo**, to take a walk. ⁹ 83 and 610. ¹⁰ **tener razon**, to have reason = to be right. ¹¹ Imperative of *irse*. See 552, a. ¹² **eso** understood, but never expressed in this phrase: *that is to say, that means.* ¹³ 389, a. ¹⁴ 664. ¹⁵ 343.

Copiaré la iglesia de ese pueblo inmediato, y el campanario gótico que tambien se distingue desde aquí. (Toma un álbum, y se coloca frente á la ventana en actitud de dibujar; pero en seguida vuelve á llover¹⁶ con furia.) ¡Otro aguacero! Ya no veo¹⁷ ni el campanario, ni la iglesia, ni las casas, ni el horizonte, ni nada. Todo¹⁸ ha desaparecido detrás de esa catarata. ¡Qué espectáculo tan¹⁹ horrible! Ni un sér viviente se ve²⁰ en el camino. Pero ¡calla! me parece que aquel es un viajero. Sí, no hay duda. Ha ido á ampararse debajo de un árbol. ¿Porqué no se refugiará en mi casa? Si supiese²¹ cómo me fastidio de estar sola. ¡Oh, qué idēa! Quizás venga²² de Madrid. Traerá noticias, y frescas; eso es indudable. (Tira del²³ cordon de la campanilla.)

Conjugate the following verbs: **enganchar**, **refugiarse**; **horrorizar** (§ 371, *c*), **colocar** (§ 371, *a*); **desaparecer** (§ 374, *a*), **permanecer** (*id.*); **saber** (§ 535), **poder** (§ 532); **distinguir** (§ 376, *a*); **divertir** (502), **venir** (§ 541).

IDIOMS.

1. **Acabar de** (infin.), *to finish* (pres. part.), or *to have just* (past part.).

acaba de escribir la carta,

acabábamos de salir, }
acabámos de salir, }

acabo de recibir una carta,

{ he finishes *writing* the letter.

{ he has just *written* the letter.

we had just *gone* out.

I have just *received* a letter.

2. **Volver á** (infin.), *to* (second verb) *again*.

vuelve á salir,

no le he vuelto á ver,

cuando vuelven VV. á escribirles, dēn-
les muchas memorias de mi parte,

acababa V. de escribir la carta, y
ahora la vuelve á escribir de
nuevo,

he goes out again.

I have not seen him again.

when you (*pl.*) write them again,
give them my kindest regards.

you had just written the letter, and
now you are writing it over
again.

1. The train has just arrived, and it will not go-out again to-day.

2. I-shall-learn this lesson so well that¹ it-will⁴ not² be necessary³

¹⁶ 608; 725, *a.* ¹⁷ 607. ¹⁸ 341, *a.* ¹⁹ 291, *Rem.* ²⁰ 408. ²¹ From *saber*.

²² 710. ²³ **Tirar** means *to throw away*: **tirar de**, *to pull at*.

for-me³ (to-me) to learn it again (*volverla á ap.*). 3. The lady persists in returning (*infín.*) to the city. 4. The carriage cannot go (*andar*) over the country on account of the inundation. 5. A gentleman has just come-in who says that the roads *are* impassable. 6. It-is necessary to resign one's self to one's (the) fate, and to have patience. 7. A Spanish-woman out-of-patience goes and comes, jumps-up and sits-down, skips-about again, and runs (*corre que corre*) over (*por*) the² whole¹ house. 8. An English [woman] or an American [woman] in like circumstances sits-down calmly and busies herself with (*en*) something useful (*of profit*).

Exercise Thirty-Third.

ESCENA SÉPTIMA.

La Condesa. (al criado.) ¿Ves á un viajero debajo de aquel árbol tan corpulento?

Anselmo. Sí, señora.

La Cond. Corre á él¹ y díle² que venga.³

Ans. La señora Condesa le conoce sin duda.

La Cond. Corre, te digo. (Váse.) ¡Ah! es atrevido, es temerario lo que acabo de hacer, pero lo primero es vivir, y yo no puedo vivir de esta manera. Sin embargo, abrir las puertas de mi casa á un hombre que no conozco, es más que rareza, es una verdadera locura — es . . . ¡Victorina-a-a! ¡Victorina-a-a!

ESCENA OCTAVA.

La Cond. (á la doncella.) Llama en seguida á Anselmo, que⁴ venga al momento.

Victorina. Es imposible, señora, ya va⁵ muy lejos.

La Cond. No importa, vé á buscarle.⁶

Vict. Pero, señora ¿cómo voy á hacerlo? Mire usted, ya vuelve.

La Cond. ¿Solo quizás? . . . ¡Qué miro! Viene con el otro. ¡Qué es lo que he hecho! ¡Ah! Ya estoy arrepentida. Oigo que suben.⁷

¹ 210. ² 212, from *decir*. ³ 709, c. ⁴ 708, b, *Rem.* ⁵ Substitute for *estar*, 389, a. ⁶ *ir á buscar*, to go after a. o. ⁷ *I hear them coming up-stairs*; *los* is understood.

Vict. (aparte.) ¿Quién será?⁸ . . . La señora no está satisfecha con nada. Continúa la tormenta; me voy ántes que empiecen⁹ los truenos.

Conjugate the verbs **llamar**, **correr**, **abrir** (§ 561); **conocer** (§ 374, c), **oir** (§ 553). **Continuar** is regular, but notice accent: *continúo*, *continúas*; *continúe*, *continúes*, etc.

IDIOMS.

Tener razon (*reason*),
no tener razon,
tener vergüenza (*shame*),
 “ **miedo** (*fear*),
 “ **sueño** (*sleep*),
 “ **hambre** (*hunger*),
 “ **sed** (*thirst*),
 “ **frio** (*cold*),
 “ **calor** (*warmth*),

to be right.
 not to be right, to be wrong.
 to be ashamed.
 “ afraid.
 “ sleepy.
 “ hungry.
 “ thirsty.
 “ cold.
 “ warm.

tiene razon, no tiene razon,
 ¿tengo yo razon, ó no?
 no tenemos miedo de nadie,
 tendrán hambre y frio,
 el que bebiere del agua que yo
 le daré, no volverá á tener sed
 jamás.

he is right, he is wrong.
 am I right or wrong.
 we are afraid of no one.
 they will be hungry and cold.
 he who drinketh of the water that I
 shall give him will never thirst
 again.

1. The traveller stood under a large² tree¹ to (*para*) shelter himself from the rain. 2. The lady, who found in (the) society her only resource, saw him and sent for him. 3. (The) reflection, which always comes late to the impatient, suggested to-her her folly, when the step that she-had taken (*given*) could not be recalled (*no se podía revocar*). 4. In her selfish vanity she rejects blindly the humiliating reproof of a servant couched in these words: “Madam knows the gentleman, of course.” 5. She has more confidence in (the) man than respect for herself (*si misma*). 6. The great qualities that once shone-forth (*imperf.*) in the nations of the South have survived only in the impetus of the senses.

Exercise Thirty-Fourth.

ESCENA NONA.

La Condesa. Caballero . . . dispense V. si le¹ he hecho entrar casi á la fuerza, pero . . . pero . . . (¿Qué le digo² á este hombre³?) Pero anoche hubo⁴ una tempestad horrorosa; el viento sopla con furor, y como se han roto⁵ todos los cristales de la casa, y el tiempo está tan malo, hay necesidad absoluta de⁶ volverlos á poner.

El Desconocido. De modo que V. me ha tomado por un vidriero. (Pues me gusta la ocurrencia.)

La Cond. Sí, eso es, por un vidriero . . . (No sé lo que digo.) Ya comprenderá V. que á cierta distancia . . .⁷ creí que . . . Ahora veo que me he equivocado.⁸

Descon. En efecto, un poco, señora, porque soy militar.⁹

La Cond. ¡Ah! Conque usted . . .

Descon. Siento de todo corazon no ser vidriero⁹ en estos momentos.

La Cond. En verdad, caballero, que estoy confusa y avergonzada de mi error. Quisiera darle¹⁰ una satisfaccion completa, y no sé . . .

Descon. Ninguna reparacion me debe V., señora. Lo único que le¹⁰ suplico es, que tenga¹¹ la bondad de⁶ prestarme un paraguas para ir á la estacion, y en ese caso, yo seré el que la dé¹² un millon de gracias.¹³

La Cond. (Acaba de entrar, y ya piensa irse.) ¡Cómo! ¿No esperará V. siquiera¹⁴ que pase¹⁵ este aguacero? Es imposible transitar por esos¹⁶ caminos llenos de barro.

Descon. Cuando se han pasado⁵ cuatro meses en los campos de África, el andar¹⁷ media hora sobre la tierra un poco húmeda de Andalucía, es bien poca cosa. Por tanto, si tuviera¹⁸ V. la bondad de prestarme un paraguas . . .

La Cond. ¡Ah! Conque ¿V. ha estado¹⁹ en África? ¡Brillante campaña! *

Descon. Un poquito penosa.

La Cond. ¿V. sirvió²⁰ en infantería? Es un arma que me gusta mucho.

¹ 219. ² 696, c. ³ 215. ⁴ 354. ⁵ 408 and 571. ⁶ 724; 726, a. ⁷ 629, f. ⁸ 397. ⁹ 669, a. ¹⁰ 219, 220. ¹¹ 709, c. ¹² From dar, 711. ¹³ 163. ¹⁴ 605. ¹⁵ 709, b. ¹⁶ 265. ¹⁷ 719. ¹⁸ 708, b. ¹⁹ 391, b. ²⁰ 513.

* General O'Donnell's unjustifiable war against Morocco in 1859-60.

Descon. No, señora.

La Cond. Entónces sería²¹ en caballería. Todavía me gusta más.

Descon. He servido en ingenieros, señora.

La Cond. ¡En ingenieros! Á mí me²² agradan infinito los ingenieros.

Descon. Señora ¿tendría V.²³ la bondad de mandar que me trajesen²⁴ un paráguas?

La Cond. (Vuelta al tema del paráguas.) De modo que ha tenido V. la gloria de encontrarse²⁵ en la famosa batalla de que tanto se habló...²⁶

Descon. ¿En la batalla del cuatro de febrero,²⁷ ó en la²⁸ de Vad-Ras?

La Cond. Eso es,²⁹ en la de Vad-Ras.

Descon. Sí, señora, he tenido esa honra. — Aunque el paráguas sea³⁰ malo, no importa.³¹

The student cannot review the conjugations too frequently. It is the basis of thoroughness in the handling of the spoken language. Henceforward, however, he need give only the first person singular of each tense, conjugating any specially irregular or peculiar parts of the verb. Give the outline, then, of the following, conjugating the necessary tenses of those in *italics*: *entrar*, *mandar*, *importar* (§ 415); *suplicar*, (§ 371), *andar* (§ 528), *dar* (§ 543), *encontrar* (§ 477), *pensar* (§ 457); *comprender*, *creer* (§ 549, *b*), *deber*, *haber* (§ 354); *hacer* (§ 530), *querer* (§ 534), *romper* (§ 571), *saber* (§ 535); *tener* (§ 536), *traer* (§ 537), *ver* (§ 548); *decir* (§ 539), *ir* and *irse* (§ 552), *sentir* (§ 499), *servir* (§ 513).

(*Imperative — polite form.*)

1. Excuse me, madam. 2. Excuse me, ladies. 3. Come in (*sing.* and *pl.*). 4. Go-out (*sing.* and *pl.*). 5. Come-up. 6. Go-down.
7. Come-out. 8. Go-in. 9. Don't come-in. 10. Don't go-out.
11. Don't come-up. 12. Don't go-down. 13. Don't come-out.
14. Don't go-in. 15. Do it (*hágalo V.*). 16. Don't do it (*no lo h. V.*). 17. Try it; don't try it. 18. Ask-for it; don't ask-for it.
19. Give it to-me; don't give it to-him. 20. Look-for it; don't look-for it. 21. Forgive him; don't forgive him. 22. Hang it up;

²¹ 706, *f.* ²² 214. ²³ 706, *e.* ²⁴ 709, *c*; 713. ²⁵ 389, *a.* ²⁶ 409. ²⁷ 675, date of the battle of Tetuan. ²⁸ 267. ²⁹ *That's it.* ³⁰ 710. ³¹ 415.

don't hang it up. 23. Come-near; don't come-near. 24. Go-away; don't go (away). 25. Do him the favor; don't do him the favor. 26. Have the goodness to . . . ; don't refuse to . . . 27. Turn-around; don't turn-around.

Tema Trigésimo-Quinto.

ESCENA NONA — CONTINUACION.

La Condesa. (llamando al criado.) ¡Anselmo! ¡Anselmo! (aparece.) Ya que este caballero quiere absolutamente ponerse en camino, vé á buscar un paraguas, y tráelo al instante. (Que no haya¹ ni un solo paraguas en la casa ¿entiendes?) (Váse el criado.) Pero siéntese V., caballero.

Descon. Señora, tengo prisa por marcharme, y agradezco² la invitacion de V. Me esperan algunos amigos en la estacion, y ademias, prolongando³ mi presencia en esta casa, temo⁴ ser indiscreto, cuando⁵ no me es posible ni aún componer los cristales que se han roto.

La Cond. Puede V. estar tranquilo, porque el tren no sale hasta dentro de⁶ tres horas. Conque decía V. que en África . . . Y ¿fué V. herido⁷ en campaña?

Descon. Sí, señora, dos veces, y muy gravemente por cierto, miéntras tratábamos de establecer una paralela.

La Cond. Conque ¿V. ha tratado de establecer una paralela? No sabe V. lo que⁸ yo he deseado siempre saber lo que es una paralela.

Descon. Voy á satisfacer entónces la curiosidad de V. miéntras traen el paraguas.

La Cond. Pero siéntese V., yo se lo⁹ ruego.

Descon. Gracias. La paralela, señora, consiste en una linea de ataque y de defensa trazada sobre el terreno que ocupan los sitiadores, con objeto de avanzar por zanjias ó caminos cubiertos hácia la plaza ó el punto sitiado.

La Cond. Comprendo perfectamente.

Descon. Esas zanjias se construyen en tres líneas unidas entre sí

¹ 708, *b*, *Rem.* ² agradecer (§ 374, *a*). ³ 735. ⁴ 723, "that I shall be."
⁵ *since*. ⁶ hasta dentro de = *before, in*, with a negative verb. ⁷ 390.
⁸ 282, *a*. ⁹ 754.

por otras en forma de zig-zags. La profundidad de cada zanja es la de un metro, y su longitud varía desde uno hasta tres metros próximamente. Hay seis modos de construir las zanjas: de zapa sencilla, de zapa volante, llena, medio-llena, doble y semi-doble. ¿Comprende V.?

La Cond. ¡Vaya¹⁰ si comprendo! Es muy interesante todo eso. Decía V. que hay cincuenta y seis maneras de construir las zanjas...

Descon. ¡Cincuenta y seis! ¡Ave María Purísima¹¹! seis, señora, seis.

La Cond. Es verdad, perdone V., me he equivocado. Como nosotras no tenemos obligación de saber esos trabajos de zapa...

Descon. ¡Pues ya lo creo! Como que los hacemos nosotros.¹² Vamos ahora á¹³ definir claramente lo que es zapa sencilla.

La Cond. Vamos á ver.

Descon. Se llama zapa sencilla... (Sale¹⁴ el criado.)

Conjugate *desear*, *variar*; *avanzar* (§ 371, c); *rogar* (§ 483), *sentarse* (§ 459); *agradecer* (§ 374); *entender* (§ 471), *componer* (§ 533); *construir* (§ 522), *salir* (§ 554); *ser herido* (§ 386).

IDIOM.

tratar de (inf.), *to try to* (inf.).

tratemos de averiguarlo,
trataré de encontrarle,

let us try to ferret it out.
I shall try to find him.

1. I wish you [a] good journey. 2. He has changed his (*de*) opinion. 3. The ship changed her (*de*) course. 4. He-came-forward boldly. 5. Let him come-forward. 6. I came-forward to (*d*) salute him. 7. I begged him to (*it to-him*). 8. He begged us to. 9. I beg you not to go-out (*subj.*). 10. He begged me not to go-out. 11. We beg you to sit-down (*que se siente*). 12. I thank you for it (*it to you*). 13. I shall be infinitely obliged to you for it. 14. He does not understand me. 15. Don't you understand me?

16. Nobody understands him; he speaks badly. 17. He who makes shoes is called [a] shoemaker; he who mends them is called [a] cobbler. 18. He who draws up plans of houses or property is

¹⁰ 659, a, "Of course I do." ¹¹ 658, d, *Rem.* ¹² "Oh! of course, since *we* are the ones to construct them"; **zapa** has the two meanings here. ¹³ "Now let us explain" ... ¹⁴ **Salir**, in plays, means "to enter."

called a draughtsman. 19. He is trying to construct a tramway from (*desde*) his village to the city. 20. When do you start for Seville? 21. The train will leave in (within) two hours. 22. Will you leave by the mail-train or by the accommodation? 23. There-are excursion-trains almost every day during the bathing-season.

Tema Trigésimo-Sexto.

ESCENA DÉCIMA.

Anselmo. (á su ama.) Señora, he revuelto toda la casa, y no he podido encontrar más que esto. (Saca de la funda el armazon de un paraguas viejo y muy grande y le abre.)

La Condesa. (al Desconocido.) Ya ve V., caballero, que no le falta más que la tela.¹ Creímos que haría² buen tiempo y no hemos pensado en traer paraguas (*plur.*) de Madrid.

Ans. Y además, será inútil dentro de pocos minutos. La lluvia ha cesado, y cualquiera diría que el sol va á salir.

La Cond. (corriendo hácia la ventana.) ¿Será³ posible? Va á salir el sol. ¡Qué alegría! Hará buen tiempo y vendrán los amigos que espero con tanta ansiedad.⁴ Anselmo, sube al momento á la azotëa y cada cinco minutos baja á decirme cuál⁵ es el estado del cielo.

Ans. (Pues, señor,⁶ vamos arriba á desempeñar las funciones del barómetro que se hizo pedazos esta mañana.) (Váse.)

Conjugate *bajar*, *sacar* (§ 371); *revolver* (§ 491); *venir* (§ 541).

IDIOMS.

Hacer, to be (of the temperature and weather).

hace buen (mal) tiempo,
¿qué tal tiempo hará mañana?

hacía mucho frio, calor,
hizo un tiempo muy templado,

it is good (bad) weather.
what kind of weather will it be to-morrow?
it was very cold, warm.
it was quite moderate weather.

¹ lit. *it does not lack to it more than the cloth*, i.e. "it lacks only the cover." ² *It would be.* ³ 703, *b.* ⁴ 624. ⁵ 292. ⁶ Addressed to himself in good humor.

1. What kind [of] weather is-it-going to be (*va á h.*) to-morrow?
 2. The sun set (has set) clear; I fancy (that) it will be fair weather.
 3. It-was very cold that night, do you remember?
 4. It-has not been very hot this summer.
 5. It-is hotter in Madrid than in Boston, but one does not feel it (*no se siente*) so-much there, because the atmosphere is very dry in the centre of Spain.
 6. One never perspires there, and they (*se*) do not wear¹ straw-hats or (*nor*) white clothes much.²
 7. Spaniards only want good government and (the) material³ prosperity.¹

Tema Trigésimo-Séptimo.

ESCENA UNDÉCIMA.

Desconocido. Como decíamos, la zapa sencilla . . .

La Condesa. Caballero, V. me permitirá que le diga¹ que es una imprudencia por mi parte detenerle más tiempo, y que estoy abusando de² su amabilidad.

Descon. Al contrario, señora.

La Cond. Sé bien lo que es un viaje. Falta el tiempo para todo; los momentos son preciosos.

Descon. Pero ¿no me ha dicho V., hace un momento, que tengo tres horas disponibles? Ahora soy yo el que pide³ á V. el favor de no abandonar tan pronto esta casa.

La Cond. Si es así . . . caballero . . . (de mal humor.)

Descon. Vuelvo á mi narracion. La zapa sencilla . . .

La Cond. ¡Dios mio! ¡Dios mio!

Descon. ¿Se pone V. mala⁴?

La Cond. No, no es nada.

Descon. En la zapa sencilla sólo se emplean gaviones y faginas, que consisten . . .

ESCENA DUODÉCIMA.

Anselmo. ¡Señora Condesa, señora Condesa!

La Cond. ¿Qué ocurre?

Ans. El sol que apareció un instante se ha retirado bruscamente. El cielo está cubierto de unos nubarrones⁵ negros que asustan . . . y oiga V., señora, la lluvia cae á torrentes.

La Cond. ¡Horrible contrariedad! La marquesa y su familia no podrán venir, y voy á continuar sola en este infierno.

¹ 709, c. ² 757. ³ 694, a. ⁴ Idiom.: *are you ill?* ⁵ 767.

Ans. (Se ha puesto furiosa. Me voy á escape, porque como ahora soy yo el barómetro, no tendría nada de extraño⁶ que hiciera conmigo⁷ lo que hizo con mi antecesor).

Conjugate *aparecer* (§ 374) and *caer* (§ 544).

IDIOM.

Ponerse, to place or put one's self; (of dress) to put on; (of the sun) to set; (of physical or moral state) to get, to become, to be.

1. He has been wounded by (*de*) a ball (§ 765, *Rem.* I.). 2. We have been wounded in our self-respect. 3. The sun appears through (*por entre*) the clouds. 4. The sun sets, had set, went-down. 5. A friend put himself between the two combatants. 6. When the sun² goes-down¹ among clouds it is [*a*] sign that (*de que*) the following day will be overcast or stormy. 7. They know (*conocer*) the signs of the sky, but they do not discern the signs of the times. 8. He put on *his* (frock-)coat and went-out to (*d*) make some calls. 9. (The) excursion tickets are called in Spain tickets of out and back (go and return). 10. The machine or engine that draws the train is called there "locomotora," and in (the) Spanish America "locomotiva" from-the English. 11. He-has got well (good) again. 12. If he should go to Malaga he would get well (good). 13. I should become very angry if he said that *to-me*. 14. He is ill; he is getting* better.

Tema Trigésimo-Octavo.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-TÉRCIA.

La Condesa (al desconocido, con dulzura). Cuando V. guste,¹ mi querido amigo, puede continuar esa deliciosa descripción de los trabajos de zapa.

Descon. Al momento, señora. Toda vez que V. lo desea, pasaremos á la zapa volante.

La Cond. Ya escucho. (Y es buen mozo.)

Descon. La zapa volante se comienza á practicar casi siempre de noche, y se hace salir² de la trinchera un destacamento de trabajadores; cada uno lleva una pala, una espiocha y un fusil.

La Cond. Una pala, una espiocha y un fu . . .

⁶ "It would not be at all strange if" (*que*). ⁷ 203; *con* here = to. * *he goes getting better*, se va poniendo m. ¹ 710. ² Literally: a detachment is made to come forth; we say: they take from the trinchera a detachment of.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA.

Anselmo. ¡Victoria! ¡Victoria! El sol ha triunfado de la lluvia, y el cielo, casi despejado, presenta un aspecto magnífico.

La Cond. ¡Oh! qué alegría! Vé á prepararlo todo, Anselmo, para recibir á mis amigos, que vendrán hoy fijamente en el primer tren. (Al Desconocido.) Caballero, retener á V. un momento más en esta quinta sería un abuso, una inconveniencia. Y ántes de marchar reciba V. un millon de gracias por la paciencia y la amabilidad con que me ha hecho compañía por espacio de una hora. Crea V. que jamás olvidaré su conducta.

Descon. Adios, señora Condesa, y gracias por la hospitalidad que he encontrado en su casa de V.

La Cond. Y yo ruego á V., caballero, que olvide la manera especial y violenta que he tenido de hacerle entrar en ella.

Descon. Dichosa violencia, señora, que me ha permitido conocerla.

La Cond. Tampoco olvidaré que V. me ha hecho pasar una de las horas más deliciosas que he disfrutado en tres meses.

Descon. Esa hora pasada cerca de V. va á hacer muy largas las³ que faltan para que salga el tren. Adios, Señora.

La Cond. ¿Quiere V. seguir mi consejo? Ese tiempo lo puede V.⁴ emplear en visitar los alrededores, que son deliciosos. Ahora no hay peligro ninguno de caer en manos de los bandidos y ser degollado por el famoso Vargas.

Indicate all the verbs that are in the subjunctive mode, — *guste, olvide, salga*, — and apply the principle regulating each. Give the imperative in the *familiar* form, and change it into the imperative with the *polite* form. Give all those in the *polite* form, and change them to the *familiar* form, affirmative and negative, with and without a pronoun. As: *haz, hágzlo, no hagas, no lo hagas; haga V., hágalo V., no haga V., no lo haga V.*

1. The treaty of the United States with Spain was signed at (*en*) St. Lawrence, that is, at the Escorial, near Madrid, by the famous Manuel Godoy, called [the] Prince of the Peace, and Thomas Pinckney on (*de*) [the] part of the United States, the twenty-seventh of October,* (of) one thousand seven hundred [and] ninety-five. 2. The

³ Will make those that remain before the train starts very long. ⁴ The object comes first for *emphasis*, and is repeated in a pronoun substitute (*lo*) superfluous in English. Unemphatic is: *Puede V. emp. ese tiempo en.* * 675.

king, Charles [the] Fourth,* ratified it at the palace of Aranjuez, April 25, 1796, and George (George) Washington ratified the same by-the (de) advice and with the consent of the Senate, at (en) Philadelphia, March 7, 1796, Timothy⁵ Pickering⁶ being¹ then² Secretary of State.⁴ 3. The Treaty, with all its documents, was then² printed¹ (*se imprimió*) at Madrid in a small 4to volume of fifty pages, with this title: Treaty | of Friendship, Limits and Navigation | concluded | between the King our Lord | and the United States of America: | Signed at (en) St. Lawrence the Royal | October 27th † (of) 1795. | By (de) order of the King. | Madrid, in the Royal Press, | year of 1796. 4. This volume is (*está*) in two columns, the one for the Spanish text and the other for the English, with the powers (*poderes*) and ratifications at-the end, running across the page (*á renglon seguido*), and with two engraved plans of passports or sailing patents (*patentes de mar*). The draft of the treaty is said to have been made (was made, as it is said,) by the celebrated Count de Aranda, one of Spain's ablest statesmen.

Tema Trigésimo-Nono.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA — CONTINUACION.

Desconocido. ¿Vargas?

La Condesa. Sí, un bandido que ha sido el terror de este país, y que me ha hecho pasar noches terribles. Sólo con nombrarle me echo á¹ temblar como una azogada.²

Descon. (Voy á vengarme de tí.) En efecto, ahora recuerdo que ayer arrestaron á ese célebre bandido y que hoy le he visto en el camino de hierro.

La Cond. Gracias á Dios que nos vemos libres de ese hombre.

Descon. No tan libres como V. cree.

La Cond. ¡Cómo! Pues ¿qué ha sucedido?

Descon. Hombre de una destreza y de una fuerza increíbles, ha logrado romper los hierros que le aprisionaban; ha herido á cuatro guardias que le custodiaban, y echó á correr por esos³ campos sin que fuera⁴ posible darle alcance.

* 674. † *d veinte y siete de O.* ¹ *echarse á, to begin*; "at the bare mention of his name I begin to." ² An *azogado* (from *azogue, quicksilver*) is one who has destroyed his nervous system by labor in the quicksilver mines.

We say, "to tremble like a leaf." ³ 265, translate "the open fields." ⁴ 710.

La Cond. ¡Eso es horrible! Van á empezar otra vez los robos y los crímenes, y yo vuelvo á mis noches de insomnio y de angustia. Dicen que ese hombre es un mónstruo de fealdad.

Descon. Se exagera mucho, señora.

La Cond. ¿V. lo conoce? Ahora recuerdo que acaba V. de decir que esta mañana . . .

Descon. No es tan feo como se asegura. Figúrese V. el color de mis cabellos.

La Cond. ¿Es posible?

Descon. Frente igual á la mía.

La Cond. ¿De véras?

Descon. La nariz, la boca y la barba de una semejanza perfecta.

La Cond. Pero ¡eso es raro! ¿Y su estatura? (inquieta.)

Descon. Como la mía; ni más alta ni más baja.

La Cond. Y ¿qué edad representa?

Descon. La misma que yo.

La Cond. ¡Dios mio! Empiezo á sospechar. (El jóven cierra por dentro todas las puertas y se guarda⁵ las llaves en el bolsillo.) ¿Qué está V. haciendo, caballero?

Descon. Señora, el famoso bandido que tanto la aterra, soy yo.

La Cond. ¡Socor . . . !⁶

Descon. No dé V. un solo grito si quiere V. conservar la vida.

La Cond. ¡Estoy perdida!

Descon. V. misma me ha hecho entrar en su casa y por fuerza.

La Cond. ¿Qué quiere V.? ¿Dinero? Le daré todo el que me pida.

Descon. ¿Por quién me toma V.? por un vidriero al principio, y ahora por un cambiante de monedas!

La Cond. ¡Quién lo creyera! Un hombre que me parecía de modales tan distinguidos!

1. The stranger made her tremble, feigning himself [to be] the robber of whom¹ the morning⁴ paper³ spoke.² 2. It would seem to be a very ungallant vengeance to take on a lady,* but we must remember that her behavior toward a stranger had been quite extraordinary. 3. The lady began to cry (to the) help, but the

⁵ guardar, to keep, also to lay aside, as a book; here to put (away). For the se, see §§ 231 and 253. ⁶ ¡Socorro! help! * It seems little gallant to avenge one's self thus of a lady, but one must, etc.

pretended robber, seeing the gravity of the situation, sought to (*procurar*) moderate the terror of his victim [by] giving her an account of his life. 4. Knowing the character of (the) ladies, he sought to excite her sympathy even in [the] midst of the danger that seemed to surround her. 5. While² the narration⁴ went-on,³ however,¹ the lady found means to (*para*) notify the servants of her position. 6. The-latter³ having¹ come² to (*en*) her aid, the stranger was obliged to acknowledge that he was acting a farce. 7. The declaration of his attachment to the lady under the circumstances does not add to the interest of the play in our opinion. 8. It is, however, very popular in [a] certain class of Spanish theatres, which are called summer or café theatres (631, *b*).

Tema Cuadragésimo.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-CUARTA — CONTINUACION.

Descon. Es que¹ yo no soy bandido por instinto, sino por un rapto de amorosa desesperacion.

La Cond. (Un poco más tranquila.) ¡Es posible!

Descon. Sí, señora Condesa. No he hecho más que vengarme. El amor únicamente es lo que me convirtió² en un hombre criminal.

La Cond. (Para ganar tiempo.) Debe ser esa una historia romántica y terrible á la vez.

Descon. Sí, señora, romántica y terrible.

La Cond. Tengo miedo de estar sola con V., y sin embargo quisiera saberla.

Descon. Yo adoraba con delirio en mi país á la hija de un rico labrador. (La Condesa se sienta junto á la mesa y escribe sin ser vista algunas palabras en un pedazo de papel, mientras sigue la relacion.)

La Cond. Que sería hermosa sin duda.

Descon. Hermosa como un ángel de la gloria. Diría que era la más bella de todas las mujeres, si no hubiera tenido la fortuna de conocer á V.

La Cond. (Esto es lo que se llama un bandido bien educado. Yo había oído decir que había algunos muy finos, pero no en el campo).

¹ 188, *Rem.*

² convertir, 502.

Descon. Nos amábamos con frenesí. Pues bien, señora, aquella niña, á quien yo creía un modelo de pureza, me proporcionó el más cruel de los desengaños.

(La Condesa se había aproximado todo lo posible á la puerta, y, fingiendo que se le cayó el pañuelo, pasó por la rendija el papel donde había escrito.)

ESCENA DÉCIMA-QUINTA.

Anselmo. (por fuera.) Señora, señora ¿llamaba V.?

Descon. (á la Cond.) Puede V. decir lo que le plazca.³ Ya sabe V. que estoy armado.

La Cond. (al criado, con voz conmovida.) Anselmo ¿ha llegado el tren?

Ans. Sí, señora.

La Cond. ¿Y la familia que esperaba?

Ans. No ha venido. El tren llegó con dos horas de retraso á causa del mal estado de los caminos. La tormenta ha descargado sobre el río y ha convertido en un lago la campiña.

Descon. (aparte.) ¡Demonio! Yo me marchó. Además, voy vengado, y el susto ha sido de primera clase. (A la Condesa.) Señora, con permiso de V., me retiro, y ahora estoy seguro que no me detendrá más tiempo á su lado. Pero ¿qué ruido es ese? (Dan fuertes golpes en la puerta.)

Ans. (desde fuera.) Señora, valor, aquí estamos para librarla de ese infame bandido. Somos seis hombres y traemos cada uno nuestra escopeta.

La Cond. (al Descon.) Ese ruido significa que mis criados van á acabar con V., dentro de pocos momentos, si se atreve á dar un solo paso.

Descon. (aparte.) Pues me he metido en buen zipizape. No hay más remedio que confesar la verdad y salir de este atolladero. (Alto, á la Condesa) Sepa V., señora Condesa, que todo ha sido una farsa. V. me tomó como recurso contra la lluvia y contra el fastidio; yo lo comprendí, y quise darla un susto fingiéndome ese bandido que tanto la aterra.

La Cond. ¿Cómo!

Descon. Sí; pertenezco á una de las familias más nobles de

Andalucía, y soy sobrino de la marquesa de la Peña, que hoy debía salir de Sevilla para ir á la quinta de la Condesa de Alvarado, con quien tiene el proyecto de casarme.

La Cond. Conque V. . . . (La puerta cede al fin á los golpes, y entra Anselmo con cinco criados, todos armados de escopetas.)

1. There are rail-ways over all Spain. 2. One goes from the French frontier on the north to Cadiz in the extreme south. 3. This road gives-off lateral branches that lead to Lisbon and Oporto in Portugal, and on the other hand to Malaga, Carthage, and Valencia along (*por*) the eastern coast. 4. Besides, there are roads from Madrid to Barcelona via (*por via de*) Saragossa, and to the north-west as far as Bilbao and Santander. 5. These are the great lines; there are many short [ones] which connect important places with the capital. 6. The Spanish language is spoken to-day by more people than any other language in western Europe, except the English. 7. In a few years the demands of commerce will make it the¹ only² absolutely³ indispensable⁴ foreign⁴ language³ in (*de*) this country. 8. It is spoken over the whole of Central and South America (*por toda la A. del Centro y del Sur*), but with [a] certain local type like that which (*al que*) distinguishes the Anglo-American from the Englishman. 9. Still the educated of both countries may be said* to have a common speech and type. 10. Many distinguished Mexicans, Chilians, *et cetera*, have contributed by (*con*) their writings to (the) Spanish literature, and have become (*hacerse*) members of the various Academies of the mother-country.

Tema Cuadragésimo-Primo.

ESCENA DÉCIMA-SEXTA.

Anselmo. (al Desconocido.) Dáte preso,¹ tunante, ahora las vas á pagar² todas juntas.

La Cond. ¡Eh, detenéos³! Y tú, Anselmo, respecta la persona de este caballero como si fuese la mia propia.

Ans. Pero, entónces ¿qué significa el papel que me dió V. por debajo⁴ de la puerta?

* Still, it may be said that the educated of both countries have, etc.

¹ Lit., give yourself up as a prisoner; that is, "you are my prisoner." ² Often render *ir á* by the future of the following verb: "you'll pay now for the whole score." ³ 209, 404. ⁴ 649, Rem.

La Cond. Calla; luego lo sabrás todo.

Descon. Conque ¿V. dió aviso sin que⁵ yo lo notara?

La Cond. Creo que V. en mi lugar hubiera hecho lo mismo. El lance no ha sido para ménos.⁶ Pero despues he procurado enmendar mi error.

Descon. ¡Oh, sí! mil gracias. Mi nombre es Cárlos Velazquez, y ofrezco á V. mi mano y mi corazon que sabrá amarla siempre.

Ans. (aparte.) Me parece que esto va á acabar en tragédia, es decir, en boda.

La Cond. Pero ¿y esa señora con quien desêa casarle⁷ la marquesa de la Peña?

Cárlos. Renuncio á ella para siempre.

La Cond. Entónces, caballero, siento no poder dar á V. mi mano, porque V. mismo acaba de negarse á ello.⁸

Cárlos. ¡Yo negarme⁹! . . . No comprendo.

La Cond. Está V. en casa de la Condesa de Alvarado.

Cárlos. (con alegría.) ¡Será posible! ¡Ah! soy feliz, y voy á obedecer ciegamente las órdenes de mi tia.

Ans. (¡Caramba! esto va por la posta.¹⁰ Es preciso ponerse bien con este hombre.) Caballero, V. dispense si hace poco¹¹ me tomé la libertad de poner¹² la mano . . .

Cárlos. Estás perdonado.

ESCENA ÚLTIMA.

Victorina. ¿Está ya preso?

Anselmo. Sí, preso, y para toda su vida el infeliz.

La Condesa. (al público.)

En la pasada lluvia

Tendí mis redes,

Y pesqué este ingeniero

Que ofrezco á ustedes.


Ya importa un bledo¹³

⁵ Lit., *without that I should note it*, i.e., "without my observing it." ⁶ *The occasion demanded it*; lit., "the critical occasion was not for less." ⁷ *le* = *you*. ⁸ *ello* refers to the *idea*, — not to the mere word *mano*, which is fem. ⁹ 731. ¹⁰ *ir por la posta*, to go "by express," as we say. ¹¹ *hace poco*, just now, a little while ago. ¹² to lay my hands, (on you). ¹³ *Bledo*: Low Lat. *bledum*, Germ. *Blatt*, Fr. *blé*: a grain, a whit. A negative is understood with the verb: "I don't care a whit now, whether" (*que*).

Que el barómetro marque
 Bueno ó mal tiempo.
 Ayer, al verme sola,
 Aquí moría . . .
 Y hoy puede¹⁴ que me estorbe
 La compañía.
 Sí . . . yo soy franca,
 Y con franqueza pido
 Una palmada.¹⁵

1. He shuts the door; shut the door (*fam.* and *pol.*). 2. He opens the door; open the door. 3. He goes up stairs; go up stairs (*la escalera*). 4. He goes down stairs; go down stairs. 5. He leaves him; leave him; don't leave him. 6. He calls them; call them; don't call them. 7. Do not speak to me. 8. Let no one come in (*que nadie pase* or *entre*). 9. Let no one see me. 10. Let there be no one at the door. 11. Let it not be so. 12. Let us go (*vamos*); let us go up; let us go down. 13. Let us not listen to him. 14. Let us give (to)-the poor² [man] something.¹ 15. Let us not give him anything (nothing). 16. Pardon, brother! 17. May (*que*) God relieve you. 18. Farewell, cavalier (*Go with God, cavalier*). 19. To (*para*) deny an alms in Spain, they say to the beggar: "Pardon, brother," or "God protect you" (*Dios le ampare*), or both (things). 20. The beggar answers cheerfully, "Go, your worships, with God; another time it will be" (*otra vez será*).

¹⁴ *puede que*, popular for *puede ser que*, impersonal. ¹⁵ The usual ending of Spanish plays, the "*vos plaudite*" of the ancients. Observe that in poetry similar vowels meeting one another are absorbed in pronunciation; vowels that are not similar are diphthongized, or even uttered in triphthongs.

 The SECOND SERIES of these Exercises will be found at end of the *Modern Spanish Readings*.

SPANISH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY.



A.

Á, to, at, in, within, at—off.

Abalórios, M. PL., glass beads.

Abandonār, to forsake, to leave.

Abrir, to open, § 561.

Absolutamente, absolutely; *quiere a.*, is determined to.

Absoluto, a, absolute.

Aburrir, to weary, to wear out.

Abusār, to abuse, foll. by *de*, § 757.

Abuso, M., abuse, outrage.

Acabār, to bring to an end, to finish, to close; to get through; *a. con*, to put an end to, to make an end of; *a. de*, to finish (doing something); to have just, p. 422.

Accionista, M., shareholder.

Acēite, M., (olive) oil.

Acordārse, to remember, foll. by *de*, § 474.

Actitud, F., attitude; *en a. de*, in a position for.

Acto, M., act.

Acudid—*acudir*.

Acudir, to apply (*á*, to).

Acuerdo(me)—*acordarse*.

Además, besides, furthermore.

Adiós, good bye.

Adorār, to be in love with, to adore.

Adornado, a, adorned (*de*, with).

Adulaci3n, F., flattery.

Afeite, M., cosmetic.

Aflige—*afligir*.

Afligido, a, sorrowful.

Afligir, to grieve.

Agosto, M., August.

Agradār, to please, to like; used same as *gustar*, p. 420.

Agradecer, to thank, §§ 374, 754.

Agradēzco—*agradecer*.

Agua, F., water; *las ā—s*, rain; inundation.

Aguacero, M., shower.

Águeda, F., Agathe or Agatha.

Agüero, M., augury, omen.

Águila, F., eagle, § 81.

Ahora, now, at present.

Ahorrar, to lay up, to save.

Áire, M., air, atmosphere.

Air3so, a, successful, triumphant.

Ajēno, a, another's, of others; foreign (*de*, to).

Ala, F., wing; rim, § 81.

Alancēa—*alancear*.

Alanceār, to dart, to spear.

Alancēe—*alancear*.

Alavés, a, Alavese, of Álava.

Albaric3que, M., apricot.

Albedrío, M., will (*arbitrium*).

Albērgue, M., refuge.

Albricias, F. PL., present for bringing good news.

Álbum, M., album, sketching-book.

Alcalaīno, a, of Alcalá.

Alcānce, M., range; *dar a.*, to come up to, to reach.

Alcorn3que, M., cork-tree.

Alcūza, F., cruet, oil-jar.
Alegrarse, to rejoice, to be glad (*de*, at, of).
Alegria, F., joy, delight; *¡qué a.!* how glad I am!
Alemán, a, German.
Alfiler, M., pin; (two and three penny) nail, (four and six cent) nail.
Algūno, a, some, any; PL., some, a few.
Alhāja, F., jewel.
Alicantino, a, of Alicante.
Almenāra, F., beacon.
Almūd, M., measure.
Alquīla, F., sign (which indicates that a hack is not engaged).
Alrededor, adv., around; *a. de*, prep., around; *los a — es*, M. PL., the environs, outskirts.
Alto, a, high, tall.
Allá, thither, there (motion).
Allí, there (rest).
Ama, F., lady or mistress of a house (with respect of the servants); nurse, § 81.
Amabilidad, F., kindness.
Amapōla, F., poppy.
Amār, to love.
Amāra, from *amar*.
Ambigū, M., rotunda.
Ambíguo, a, ambiguous.
Amīga, F., friend (lady).
Amīgo, M., friend.
Amistād, F., friendship.
Amo, M., the gentleman or master of a house.
Amōr, M., love.
Amorōso, a, pertaining to love, on account of love.
Ampararse, to seek shelter.

Ámplio, a, full, ample.
Andalucía, F., Andalusia (southern Spain).
Andalūz, a, Andalusian.
Andār, to go, to walk (indefinite); *el a.*, the going, walking, § 528.
Andēn, M., platform, inside of a railway station.
Ángel, M., angel; *a. de la gloria*, an angel in paradise.
Angūstia, F., anguish, suffering.
Ánima, F., (disembodied) soul, § 81.
Anōche, last night.
Ansiedad, F., anxiety; *con tanta a.*, so anxiously.
Antecesōr, M., predecessor.
Ántes, adv., before, formerly; *a. de*, prep., before; *a. que*, conj., before (with subj.).
Antigüedad, F., antiquity.
Antíguo, a, old, ancient.
Añicos, M. PL., fragments; *hecho a.*, broken into fragments.
Año, M., year.
Aparecēr, to appear, to present one's self, § 374.
Aprisionār, to bind, to hold captive.
Aprovechār, to take advantage of, to avail one's self of.
Aproximarse, to approach, to draw near.
Aquēl, la, lo, that, that one, yonder.
Aquí, here.
Aragonés, a, Aragonese.
Árbol, M., tree.
Arbolēda, F., row of trees; trees (coll.).
Ardēr, to burn.
Ardid, M., cunning.
Ardiēdo, aglow, burning.
Argüir, to argue, § 526.

Argūyo — *argüir*.

Arma, F., arm, weapon; branch of military service, § 81.

Armādo, a, armed.

Armazōn, M., frame, skeleton (without the cover).

Arte, M. and F., art, §§ 81, 94, *b*.

Arreglār, to arrange, to "fix," to put in order.

Arrepentido, a, repentant.

Arrestār, to arrest.

Arriba, up, above, up-stairs.

Arrojār, to throw, to throw away or down.

Arruinādo, a, in ruins.

Asegurār, to assure, to assert; *se asegūra*, it is asserted.

Asiento, M., seat, chair.

Aspēcto, M., appearance.

Asturiāno, a, Asturian.

Asustār, to frighten, to scare; to be dreadful.

Atājo, M., short-cut (of roads).

Atāque, M., attack.

Ataúd, M., casket, coffin.

Aterrār, to terrify, to frighten; *reg. aterro, aterras*, etc.

Atolladēro, M., bog, slough, mire; scrape, difficulty.

Atrapār, to catch.

Atreverse, to dare, to presume, foll. by *d*.

Atrevido, a, bold; *es a.*, it is a piece of effrontery.

Auditōrio, M., audience.

Āula, F., public hall; university; court.

Āun, even.

Aūn, yet, still.

Āunque, although.

Aureo, a, golden.

Auto, M., judicial indictment; order for commitment; trial.

Autōr, M., author.

Avanzār, to advance, to come forward.

Ave María Purísima ! bless me !

Avergonzādo, a, abashed, ashamed.

Averigua — *averiguar*.

Averiguār, to find out.

Averigüe — *averiguar*.

Averiguo — *averiguar*.

Aviār, to arrange, to put in order, to prepare.

Avie — *aviar*.

Aviso, M., notice; *dar a.*, to notify, to give an alarm.

Ayēr, yesterday.

Ayudār, to aid, to help.

Azogādo, a, (a man or woman whose nervous system has been destroyed by work in a quick-silver mine); *temblar como un a.*, to tremble like a leaf.

Azōte, M., scourge, terror.

Azotēa, F., flat roof of southern houses, the terrace.

Azucēna, F., white lily.

Azūl, blue.

B.

Bacia, F., barber's basin.

Bailarīn, a, dancer, ballet girl.

Bāile, M., dance; ball.

Bajār, to go down, to come down (*d* with infinitive).

Bajo, a, low, short.

Baladí, of no value.

Balido, M., bleating of sheep.

Bandido, M., robber, marauder.

Baño, M., bath.

Barāja, F., pack of cards.

Barba, F., chin.
 Barómetro, M., barometer.
 Barón, M., baron.
 Barro, M., clay, mud; *lleno de b.*, muddy.
 Bata, F., morning-gown.
 Batalla, F., battle, engagement.
 Baúl, M., trunk, box.
 Bautismo, M., baptism.
 Bêbe — *beber*.
 Bebêr, to drink.
 Bello, a, fair, beautiful.
 Besâr, to kiss; *besarle á uno la mano*, to salute any one.
 Biên, adv., well, very.
 Biên, M., good, blessing; PL., goods, property.
 Bilbaíno, a, of Bilbao.
 Bledo, M., a blade of corn; *me importa un b.*, I don't care a straw.
 Boca, F., mouth, lips.
 Boda, F., marriage, wedding.
 Bolsillo, M., pocket.
 Bondad, F., goodness, kindness; *tener la b. de*, to be so good as to.
 Bonito, a, pretty.
 Borceguí, M., buskin.
 Bota, F., wine-bag.
 Bribón, M., rascal.
 Brillante, brilliant, magnificent.
 Bruscamente, suddenly.
 Buêno, a, good, well.
 Bulto, M., bundle, package, lay-figure.
 Burla, F., mockery, jest.
 Burra, F., she-ass.
 Busca, F., search, guest.
 Buscâr, to look for, to seek, to search; *ir á b.*, to go after or for; *enviar á b.*, to send for.
 Busto, M., bust.

C.

Caballería, F., cavalry.
 Caballêro, M., gentleman; (in direct address) sir.
 Caballerôsamente, adv., politely, like a well bred gentleman.
 Cabellêra, F., head of hair.
 Cabêllos, M. PL., the hair of the head.
 Cachôrro, M., whelp, cub.
 Cada, each, every.
 Cadêna, F., chain; *c. de hierro*, iron chain.
 Cae — *caer*.
 Caêr, to fall, § 544.
 Caêrse, to fall down; *se le cae el pañuelo*, her handkerchief falls, she has let her handkerchief fall.
 Cai — *caer*.
 Caída, F., fall.
 Cãigo — *caer*.
 Caldo, M., broth.
 Calla! hush! be still! hold! stop!
 Callâr, to keep silent.
 Calle, F., street.
 Callêja, F., lane.
 Cambiãdo, M., changer; *c. de monedas*, money changer.
 Camiño, M., road, way; *ponerse en c.*, to set out, to go.
 Campanário, M., church tower, belfry, spire.
 Campanilla, F., door-bell, service bell.
 Campaña, F., campaign.
 Campiña, F., country (around a city or village).
 Campo, M., field; *esos campos*, the open fields.
 Capturâr, to take captive, to catch.
 Carãmba, zounds!

Caridad, F., charity, love.
Cárlos, Charles.
Cartaginés, a, Carthaginian.
Casa, F., house.
Casár, to marry any one (to, *con*).
Casarse, to marry, to get married.
Cási, almost.
Caso, M., case; *hacer c. de*, to take notice, to pay attention (*de*, to).
Castellano, a, Castilian.
Catalán, a, Catalanian.
Catarata, F., cataract, deluge.
Caudal, M., capital.
Caudaloso, a, swift-flowing (of a river); of abundant means.
Cāusa, F., cause; *d c. de*, on account of.
Caza, F., shooting; game.
Cedēr, to give way, to yield.
Célebre, celebrated, famous.
Cena, F., supper.
Ceñir, to gird on.
Cepillito, M., little brush (dim. of *cepillo*).
Cerca, adv., near; *c. de*, prep., near, close to, by.
Cerrār, to shut, to shut up; to lock (with a key).
Cesār, to cease, to stop; *la lluvia ha cesado*, it has stopped raining.
Ciēlo, M., sky, heaven.
Ciēn — *ciento*.
Ciēncia, F., science, knowledge.
Ciento, one hundred (before noun *cien*).
Cierto, a, sure, certain; a certain; *d c* — *a distancia*, at a certain distance, some distance off; *por c* — *o*, surely, indeed.
Cierra — *cerrar*.
Cincuēta, fifty.

Cita, F., summons, engagement, citation.
Ciudad, F., town, city.
Ciudadano, M., citizen.
Civil, civil.
Claramente, clearly.
Claro, a, clear, light; *es c.*, of course.
Clase, F., class; *de primera c.*, a first-class one.
Coche, M., carriage, car; *en c.*, by carriage.
Codicia, F., greed, covetousness.
Cōima, F., hag.
Colār, to strain; to slip through, to slip in, § 476.
Colección, F., collection.
Colocār, to set, to place; *c. bien*, to adjust properly.
Colocarse, to place one's self, to take one's place, § 371.
Colōr, M., color.
Comēd — *comer*.
Comēdia, F., a play.
Comenzār, to begin, foll. by *d* with an infinitive, § 469.
Comēr, to eat, to dine.
Comíamos — *comer*.
Comida, F., dinner, meal.
Comiēnza — *comenzar*.
Como, as, since, like.
Cómo, how? how!
Compañía, F., company; *hacerle d uno c.*, to keep one company.
Complēto, a, complete, full.
Cómplice, M., accomplice.
Componēr, to repair, to mend, § 553.
Comprendēr, to understand.
Con, with.
Conde, M., earl.
Condēsa, F., countess.

- Conducta**, F., behavior.
Confesār, to confess, to acknowledge, § 461.
Confiado, a, trusting, relying.
Confuso, a, confused, confounded.
Connigo, with me [*mecum*].
Connovido, a, pitiful.
Conocer, to be acquainted with, to become acquainted with, to know, to make one's acquaintance, § 374.
Conozco — *conocer*.
Cōnque or **con que**, so then.
Conquēse, of Cuenca.
Conseguído, a, succeeded in; *se ha c.*, they have s. in (w. inf.).
Conseguir, to attain, to succeed in, § 516.
Consējo, M., counsel, advice.
Consentir, to consent, § 499.
Conservār, to preserve.
Consiente — *consentir*.
Consiga — *conseguir*.
Consigo — *conseguir*.
Consigo, with him (her, them, you) [*secum*].
Consistir, to consist (*en*, of).
Consolār, to comfort, § 476.
Consonānte, F., consonant.
Construir, to construct; to dig (a trench); *se constrūyen*, are constructed, § 522.
Constrūyen — *construir*.
Consuēla — *consolar*.
Contento, a, satisfied, pleased.
Contigo, with thee, with you [*tecum*].
Continúa — *continuar*.
Continuaciōn, F., continuation, continued, of a story.
Continuār, to continue, to go on.
Continuo, a, continuous.
- Contraído**, a, contracted, drawn up, distorted.
Contrariedad, F., disappointment, unfortunate circumstance.
Contrário, a, contrary; *al c.*, on the contrary.
Convertir, to convert, to transform, § 502.
Convirtiô — *convertir*.
Copiār (*cōpio*, as, a), to copy.
Corazōn, M., heart, valor; *de todo c.*, with all one's heart; (with verb *sentir*) deeply.
Cordobēs, a, Cordovese, of Córdoba.
Cordōn, M., cord; *c. de la campanilla*, bell-pull.
Coro, M., choir.
Corōna, F., crown.
Corpulento, a, immense, of a large trunk (as a cork-tree).
Corredōr, M., runner, agent.
Corrēr, to run, to be quick.
Corriēdo — *correr*.
Corro, M., group, knot.
Córtes, F. PL., the Spanish Parliament.
Cortir — F., curtain.
Cosa, F., thing; *no es c. de*, there is no question of.
Cosita, F., little thing, trifle.
Costār, to cost, § 473.
Costūmbre, F., custom, habit.
Crēe — *creer*.
Creēr, to believe, to think, to suppose; to be assured, to rest assured, § 549, b.
Creí — *creer*.
Creía — *creer*.
Creído, a, believed.
Creímos — *creer*.
Creyēra — *creer*.

Criada, F., maid, servant.
Criado, M., servant.
Crímen, M., crime.
Criminal, adj., criminal; *hombre c.*, criminal.
Cristál, M., window-pane, pane of glass.
Cruel, cruel.
Cuál, which? what?
Cualquiera, any one, any. *cu*
Cuando, when, since; *de c.*, since the time when.
Cuándo, when?
Cuantiōso, a, large, copious.
Cuanto, a, as much, as many.
Cuánto, a, how much? how many?
Cuarēta, forty.
Cuāsi or **casi**, almost.
Cuatro, four.
Cubierto, a, covered (*de*, with).
Cubo, M., pail.
Cuchillo, M., (table) knife.
Cuela — *colar*.
Cuero, M., leather.
Cuestión, F., question, matter.
Cuidado, M., care.
Cuidadōso, a, careful.
Cuita, F., woe.
Cuota, F., share, scot.
Curiosidad, F., curiosity.
Curioso, a, inquisitive; neat.
Custodiār, to guard, to accompany, as a guard.

CH.

Chico, a, little; a little boy or girl.
Chisme, M., implement, tool, thing.
Chorro, M., stream of water.
Chucho, M., kind of owl.
Chulo, M., boy of the ring, bull-fighter.

Chusma, F., crowd, rabble.

D.

Daño, M., injury, harm.
Dar, to give; to hit, to strike; to take, § 543.
Dardo, M., dart.
Dé — *dar*.
Debajo de, under, beneath; *por d.* *de*, (along) under.
Debē, to owe; to be to; ought, must.
Decidido, a, decided, resolved (*d.* to).
Decir, to say, to tell; to mean; *digo que*, I mean that; *es d.*, that is to say, § 539.
Dedo, M., finger, toe.
Defensa, F., defense.
Definir, to define, to explain; *vamos d d.*, let us explain.
Degollado, a, beheaded; *ser d.*, to be beheaded, to have one's throat cut [*gola*].
Dejār, to leave; *d. de*, to leave off, to cease.
Delēite, M., joy, pleasure.
Deliciōso, a, delightful.
Delirio, M., delirium; *con d.*, wildly, madly, passionately.
Demōnio, heavens!
Dentro de, within; *por d.*, on the inside.
Derecha, F., right (hand); *d la d.*, to the right, on the right.
Desāguē, M., drainage.
Desahūcio, M., ejection.
Desaparecēr, to disappear.
Desbordamiēto, overflowing, inundation.
Descanso, M., rest; *sin d.*, without cessation, incessantly.

Descargār, to fall with fury (*sobre*, upon), § 371.

Descolgār, to take down (anything suspended), § 483.

Desconocido, *a*, unknown; *a* stranger.

Descripción, *F.*, description.

Descuēlga — *descolgar*.

Desde, from, since; *d.* — *hasta* or *d.* from — to; *d. alli*, from there; *d. aquí*, from here, hence.

Desdicha, *F.*, misfortune.

Deseār (*desēo*, *as*, *a*), to desire, to wish.

Desempeñar, to discharge; to act, to play.

Desengāño, *M.*, disillusion, disenchantment; *proporcionārle d uno un d.*, to deceive one.

Desesperaciōn, *F.*, despair, desperation; *amorosa d.*, desperation on account of love.

Desesperādo, *a*, in despair.

Desesperār, to put in despair, discourage.

Desgraciādo, *a*, unfortunate, lamentable.

Deslíz, *M.*, delinquency, slip.

Despedir, to dismiss, § 512.

Despejado, *a*, clear, free from clouds or obstacles.

Despide — *despedir*.

Despojar, to despoil, to strip, to rob.

Despuēs, afterward, subsequently; *despuēs de*, prep., after; *despuēs que*, conj., after.

Destacamēto, *M.*, detachment.

Destrēza, *F.*, dexterity, cunning, shrewdness.

Destrozār, to break up; to carry away, § 371.

Detendrá — *detener*.

Detenēr, to detain, § 536.

Detenēirse, to stop, § 536.

Detrás, behind; *d. de*, behind, beyond.

Dēudo, *M.*, relative.

Dí — *decir* and *dar*.

Dia, *M.*, day.

Dibujār, to sketch, to draw.

Dibūjo, *M.*, drawing, sketching.

Diccionārio, *M.*, dictionary.

Dice — *decir*.

Dicen — *decir*.

Dicho, *a*, said, told (*decir*).

Dichōso, *a*, happy, fortunate, blessed.

Dificil, difficult; not likely.

Diga — *decir*.

Digo — *decir*.

Dijiste — *decir*.

Dilūvio, *M.*, flood, deluge.

Dinēro, *M.*, money.

Diōs, God; *D. mio*, dear me!

Diría — *decir*.

Dirigirse, to direct one's self, to proceed (*d.* toward), § 375.

Discurso, *M.*, speech; *d. de siempre*, old story.

Disfrutār, to enjoy.

Disimūlo, *M.*, simulation; *cond.*, slyly.

Dispensār, to excuse; *V. dispēse*, pardon, beg pardon.

Disponible, to dispose of, to spare.

Distancia, *F.*, distance; *d. cierta d.*, at a certain distance off.

Distinguido, *a*, distinguished, high born (*distingué*, *gué*).

Distinguir, to descry; *se distingue*, is visible, § 376.

Distracciōn, *F.*, something to occupy one's mind.

Divertir, to amuse, § 502.
Divierte — *divertir*.
Doble, double.
Doce, twelve; *las d.*, twelve o'clock, noon, midnight.
Doliente, grieving, pitiful.
Dolór, M., pain, grief.
Doncella, F., lady's maid.
Donde, where; *¿dónde?* where?
Droguería, herb-shop; (Spanish America, drug-store).
Ducho, a, clever, skilful.
Duda, F., doubt; *sin d.*, doubtless, of course; *no hay d.*, there is no doubt of it, it is certain.
Duelo, M., pain; mourning [Fr. *deuil*].
Dulzura, F., sweetness; *con d.*, affably.
Durar, to last.

E.

Ébano, M., ebony.
Echar, to throw, to toss; *echar d* and *echarse d*, to begin to (foll. by an infinitive).
Edad, F., age, number of years.
Educación, F., education; *buena e.*, good manners, courtesy.
Educado, a, educated; *bien e.*, well bred.
Efecto, M., effect; *en e.*, indeed you have; in fact.
Ejecutarse, to be effected, executed.
El que, he who, the one who.
Elefante, M., elephant.
Elemento, M., element.
Embarcadéro, M., station, landing.
Embargo — *sin e.*, notwithstanding, still.
Embudo, M., funnel.

Emoción, F., emotion.
Empeñarse, to persist (*en*, *in*), to insist (*en*, *on*).
Empezar, to begin (*by*, *con*), foll. by *d* with an infinitive, § 469.
Empiece — *empezar*.
Empiecen — *empezar*.
Empiezo — *empezar*.
Empíreo, a, celestial.
Emplear, to employ, to use, to make use of; *se emplea*, is used.
En, in, into, at, on.
Encontrar, to meet with, to find, to come upon casually; refl., to find one's self, to be. § 477
Enganchár, to harness up, to put the horses to the carriage; *haz que enganchen en seguida*, have the carriage made ready at once.
Engaña — *engañar*.
Engañar, to deceive.
Engaño — *engañar*.
Engaño, M., deception.
Enjuague, M., finger-bowl.
Enjuto, a, dry, thin.
Enmendar, to amend, to correct, § 459.
Enredo, M., plot, snarl.
Enseñar, to teach; to show.
Enseñe — *enseñar*.
Entender, to understand, to hear, § 471.
Entiendes — *entender*.
Entonces, then.
Entrar, to go in, to come in, to enter.
Entre, between (two), among (several); *entre sí*, together.
Epístola, F., letter, epistle.
Época, F., period, epoch.
Equivocarse, to be mistaken; *me he equivocado*, I made a mistake.

Era — *ser*.

Erguido, *a*, erect, with head set back.

Error, *M.*, error, mistake.

Es — *ser*.

Escala, *F.*, steps, ladder.

Escalera, *F.*, staircase, ladder.

Escampar, to stop raining.

Escaparse, to get away, to escape.

Escápe — *d escape*, quick; *irse d e.*, to be off.

Escena, *F.*, scene; stage.

Escocés, *a*, Scotch, Scotsman (or woman).

Escopeta, *F.*, musket.

Escribir, to write, § 561.

Escuálido, *a*, squalid.

Escuela, *F.*, school.

Ese, *esa*, *eso*, that (where you are, which you have, or which you say).

Eslabón, *M.*, link of a chain; flint.

Eso, that (thing); *eso es*, that's it.

Espacio, *M.*, space, period; *por e. de*, during, for.

Espantar, to scare, to terrify.

Español, *a*, Spanish, a Spaniard.

Especial, peculiar, extraordinary.

Especialmente, especially.

Espectáculo, *M.*, sight, view, display.

Esperanza, *F.*, hope, encouragement.

Esperar, to expect; to wait, to wait for, to await.

Espiócha, *F.*, pickaxe.

Está — *estar*.

Estaba — *estar*.

Establecer, to establish, to construct (as a parallel), § 374.

Estación, *F.*, station, "depot," (*Fr. gare*).

Estado, *M.*, state, condition.

Estár, to be (incidentally or temporarily); to be in, at home, § 382.

Estátua, *F.*, statue; effigy.

Estatūra, *F.*, stature, height.

Este, *esta*, *esto*, this.

Estóico, stoic; stoical.

Estorbár, to disturb, to be in one's way.

Estōy — *estar*.

Estremeno. See *Extremeno*.

Estrépito, *M.*, loud noise, crash; *con e.*, with a crash, noisily.

Eterno, *a*, unceasing, eternal.

Euro (*é-u-ro*), *M.*, Eurus.

Eurōpa, *F.*, Europe.

Exacto, *a*, exact.

Exagerar, to exaggerate; *se exagera*, they exaggerate, it is exaggerated.

Excelente, excellent, first rate.

Exhortar, to exhort.

Expedito, *a*, cleared, put in running order (of trains).

Experimentado, *a*, experienced.

Extraño, *a*, strange.

Extremeno, *a*, of Extremadura or Estremadura.

Exultar (seldom), for *exultarse*, to exult.

F.

Facciōso, *M.*, rebel (Carlist).

Fagina, *F.*, fascine (long fagot for military defense).

Faltar, to lack, to be wanting; *falta el tiempo*, there is no time (*para*, to, for).

Falúa, *F.*, marine launch, felucca.

Familia, *F.*, family.

Famoso, *a*, famous, notorious.

Farsa, F., farce.
Fastidiarse (*fastidio*, *as*, *a*), to be weary (*de*, of).
Fastidio, M., ennui.
Fautōr, M., abettor.
Fealdad, F., ugliness, plainness; *mōnstruo de f.*, prodigiously ugly looking.
Febrero, M., February.
Feliz, happy.
Feo, *a*, ugly, plain, "homely."
Feria, F., fair.
Fēudo, M., fief.
Figurarse, to fancy, to imagine, to picture to one's self.
Fijamente, without fail.
Fila, F., row.
Fin, M., end; *al fin*, at last, at length.
Fingir, to pretend, to feign, § 375.
Fino, *a*, polite, elegant.
Flamēnco, *a*, Fleming.
Forma, F., form; *en f. de*, in the form of.
Fortūna, F., good fortune.
Frāgua, F., forge.
Fraguār, to forge, § 372.
Fragüe—*fraguar*.
Fraille, M., friar.
Francēs, *a*, French, Frenchman or woman.
Franco, *a*, frank.
Franquēza, F., frankness; *con f.*, frankly, openly.
Frenesí, M., frenzy; *con f.*, wildly, passionately.
Frente, F., forehead; *f. d.*, in front of, before.
Fresco, *a*, fresh, cool; recent.
Fuego, M., fire.
Fuera—*ser* and *ir*.

Fuera, outside; *desde f.*, from without; *por f.*, outside, from the outside.
Fuero, M., privilege.
Fuerte, strong, powerful; *fuertes golpes*, hard blows.
Fuerza, F., strength; *por f.* or *d la f.*, by force.
Fuese—*ser* and *ir*.
Fuí—*ser* and *ir*.
Función, F., office; PL., *id*.
Funda, F., cover for furniture, etc. (*Fr. housse, étui*).
Fūria, F., fury; *con f.*, furiously.
Furiōso, *a*, furious, in a fury.
Furōr, fury; *con f.*, furiously.
Fusil, M., gun.

G.

Gaditāno, *a*, of Cadiz.
Galānte, polite, courteous, pleasing to ladies.
Galantēa—*galantear*.
Galanteār, to court ladies' society, to play the beau.
Galantēe—*galantear*.
Galantēo—*galantear*.
Galería, F., gallery.
Galgo, M., grey-hound.
Gallēgo, *a*, Galician.
Ganga, F., bargain.
Gastār, to spend; to waste; to wear (a garment).
Gato, M., cat.
Gaviōn, M., gabion (a cylindrical wicker basket, open at both ends, used, filled with earth, for defense).
Generāl, M., general.
Gengibre, M., ginger. (Some spell *jengibre*.)

Gênio, M., disposition, genius.
Gente, F., people; PL., *id.*; *las gentes del país*, the people of the locality; the country people.
Gesto, M., gesture, movement.
Giro, M., whirl, turn; draft.
Gitano, M., gypsy.
Gloria, F., glory, honor; *ángel de la g.*, an angel in paradise.
Golpe, M., blow; *dar un g.*, to strike; *fuertes g—s*, hard blows (*en*, on).
Gótico, a, Gothic.
Gozo, M., joy.
Gracias, F. PL., thanks, thank you.
Gran—*grande*.
Granadino, a, of Granada.
Grande, great, large (before a noun sing., *gran*).
Gravemente, seriously.
Greda, F., chalk.
Grieta, F., crevice.
Grito, M., cry, shout; *dar un g.*, to utter a cry.
Grueso, a, thick, heavy, big.
Grulla, F., crane.
Guapo, a, pretty.
Guardarse, to put away, to put (in one's pocket).
Guárda, F., guard; M., guard.
Guarida, F., den, lair.
Guedéja, F., lock of hair.
Guerra, F., war.
Guia, F., guide.
Guión, M., hyphen.
Guipuzcoano, a, a Basque from Guipúzcoa.
Guisantes, M. PL., peas.
Guitarra, F., guitar.
Gula, F., gluttony.
Gustarle á uno, to please any one,

to like, p. 420; *me gusta*, I like; *cuando V. guste*, when you like.
Gusto, M., taste, pleasure.

H.

Haba, F., bean.
Habéis—*haber*.
Habēr, to have (only as an auxiliary), § 351.
Había, there was, there were, § 354.
Había—*haber*.
Hablād—*hablar*.
Hablādo, a, spoken, talked.
Hablār, to speak, to talk (*d*, to; *con*, with; *de*, of).
Hace—*hacer*.
Hace, it is; ago; *h.*—*que*, it is—since; *h. un momento*, a moment ago; *h. poco*, a short time ago, a while ago.
Hacēr, to make, to do, to cause, to be; *hacer pedazos*, to break in pieces; *h. caso*, to take notice, to pay attention, § 530.
Hacēirse, to be made, to become; to pretend to be, to dissemble; *se hace la sorda*, pretends not to hear.
Hácia, toward, in the direction of.
Hago—*hacer*.
Halagüeño, a, flattering, charming.
Halla—*hallar*.
Hallār, to find.
Hallāzo, M., discovery.
Han—*haber*.
Hará—*hacer*.
Hasta, until, up to, to; *desde—hasta* or *d*, from—to.
Hay—*haber*, § 354.
Haya—*haber*, § 354.
Haz—*hacer*.

Haz, F., bundle.
He — *haber*, § 351.
Hebrêo, a, Hebrew.
Hecho, a, made, done, caused, had — *hacer*.
Hería — *herir*.
Herido, a, wounded; *ser h.*, to be wounded.
Herir, to wound, § 500.
Hermoso, a, beautiful, fine.
Héroe, M., hero.
Heróico, a, heroic.
Hice — *hacer*.
Hidalgo, M., gentleman.
Hielo, M., ice.
Hierro, M., iron; *camino de h.*, railway; PL., *hierros*, fetters, handcuffs.
Higo, M., fig.
Higo-chumbo, M., prickly-pear.
Hija, F., daughter.
Hijo, M., son, child; descendant.
Hilo, M., thread, linen.
História, F., history, story.
Hizo — *hacer*.
Hollar, to trample, § 475.
Hombre, M., man.
Honra, F., honor.
Hora, F., hour, o'clock.
Horadado, a, pierced.
Horizante, M., horizon.
Horrorizâr, to terrify, § 371.
Horroroso, a, horrible.
Hospitalidad, F., hospitality.
Hoy, to-day; at the present day.
Hubiêse — *haber*.
Hubo — *haber*, § 354.
Huello — *hollar*.
Huída, F., flight.
Huir, to flee, § 522.
Huiréis — *huir*.

Hule, M., oil-cloth.
Húmedo, a, damp, wet.
Humilde, lowly, humble.
Humôr, M., spirits, humor; *de mal h.*, ill naturedly, in ill humor.
Hurto, M., theft.
Huso, M., spindle.

I.

Idêa, F., idea; *qué i.*, what a happy thought!
Ido, a, gone — *ir* or *irse*.
Iglêsia, F., church.
Iguâl, like, the same as, foll. by *d*.
Imbuído, a, permeated.
Implacable, inexorable.
Importâr, to be important, to be of consequence; *importa*, it matters; *no i.*, never mind.
Imposible, impossible, it cannot be.
Imprudência, F., indiscretion; *es una i.*, it is imprudent.
Inclinado, a, inclined, bent over.
Inconveniência, F., impropriety; *es una i.*, it is inexpedient.
Increible, incredible.
Indicâr, to point out, to indicate, § 371.
Índio, a, Indian.
Indiscreto, a, indiscreet, imprudent.
Indudable, undoubted, sure.
Infame, infamous.
Infantería, F., infantry.
Infeliz, unfortunate; poor man.
Infierno, M., torture.
Infinito, exceedingly.
Inflújo, M., influence.
Ingeniero, M., engineer; PL., corps of engineers.
Ingênio, M., genius; talent.

Inglês, a, English, Englishman or woman.

Inícuo, a, heinous.

Inmarcescible, unfading.

Immediato, a, next.

Inmenso, a, boundless.

Imortal, immortal, undying.

Inquiêto, a, uneasy, anxious.

Insômnio, m., sleeplessness; *noches de i.*, sleepless nights.

Insoportável, intolerable.

Instante, instant, moment; *al i.*, immediately, at once.

Instinto, m., instinct.

Inteligência, f., intelligence.

Interesante, interesting, of interest.

Inútil, useless.

Invitação, f., invitation.

Ir, to go, § 552; *ir d.*, to be going to (with infinitive); *ir d buscar*, to go after, for.

Irse, to go away, to go off, to be going; *vdse*, exit (in plays).

Irlandês, a, Irish, Irishman or woman.

Irónico, a, sarcastic.

Irregular, irregular.

J.

Jalão, m., outcry, uproar.

Jamás, never, ever.

Jânula, f., cage.

Jerezano, a, of Jeréz or Sherry.

Jesús, heavens!

Jóven, young man or woman, youth.

Juân, John.

Juêgo, m., play, game.

Juêz, m., judge.

Juício, m., judgment.

Júlio, m., July.

Júnio, m., June.

Junto, a, joined; together; *pagarlas todas juntas*, to pay off old scores, to make a final settlement.

Junto á, near.

Jura, f., oath taking; act of administering an oath.

Juzgār, to judge, § 371.

Juzgo—*juzgar*.

L.

Labradôr, m., farmer.

Lado, m., side; *d su l.*, by him, by her.

Lago, m., lake.

Lance, m., occasion; *el l. no ha sido para menos*, the o. demanded it.

Largo, a, long.

Lástima, f., pity; *qué l.*, what a pity!

Lección, f., lesson.

Leche, f., milk.

Lêe—*leer*.

Leër, to read, § 549, b.

Lêgua, f., league.

Leído, a, read—*leer*.

Lêjos, far, far off; *muy l.*, a good way off.

Leonês, a, Leonese, of Leôn.

Lêudo, a, leavened.

Levantarse, to get up, to rise.

Levita, f., frock-coat; *gente de l.*, middle and upper classes; *gastar l.*, to be a gentleman.

Ley, f., (PL., *leyes*), law.

Leyendo—*leer*.

Libertad, f., liberty; *tomarse la l.*, to take the liberty (*de*, to).

Librār, to deliver, to set at liberty.

Libre, free, rid.

Libro, m., book; *l. de molde*, (printed) book; *l. de mano*, manuscript.

Licēo, M., Lyceum.
 Lícito, a, allowed, lawful.
 Límpio, a, clean, neat.
 Línea, F., line.
 Lisōnja, F., flattery.
 Locūra, F., folly, piece of folly.
 Logrār, to succeed in.
 Longitūd, F., length.
 Luego, then, next; presently.
 Lugār, M., place, stead.

Ll.

Llama, F., flame.
 Llamār, to call; to knock (*d*, at).
 Llamāirse, to be called, to be named;
se llama, is called; *¿cómo se llama*
V.? what is your name?
 Llanto, M., weeping [*planctus*].
 Llave, F., key.
 Llegādo, a, arrived — *llegar*.
 Llegār, to arrive, to come, § 371.
 Lleno, a, full, filled (*de*, with).
 Llevār, to carry, to take.
 Llorōso, a, tearful.
 Llovēr, to rain; *volver d ll*, to rain
 again, § 418.
 Lluve — *llover*.
 Llúvia, F., rain; *grandes llúvias*,
 heavy rains, much rainy weather.

M.

Madrilēño, a, Madrilénian, of
 Madrid.
 Magnífico, a, magnificent.
 Mairēna, name of a town about
 sixteen miles from Seville, prop-
 erly, *M. del Alcór*.
 Maitīnes, M. PL., matins.
 Majuēlo, M., vine-patch newly
 planted or set out.
 Malaguēño, a, of Málaga.

Maldād, F., evil, wickedness.
 Malo, a, bad, evil; poor; ill (before
 a sing. noun masc., *mal*).
 Manchēgo, a, of *La Mancha*.
 Mandadēro, messenger, errand-boy.
 Mandār, to order; to cause, have
 (anything done).
 Manēra, F., manner, way; *de esta*
m., in this way.
 Mano, F., hand; *besar la mano d*,
 to salute (a person).
 Mañāna, F., morning; M., to-morrow.
 Maragāto, a, a man or woman of
 Astorga.
 Marcār, to mark, to indicate, § 371.
 Marchār, to walk, to go.
 Marchāirse, to go away, to depart,
 to go.
 Marchito, a, withered.
 Marēa, F., tide.
 Mārque — *marcar*.
 Marquēs, M., marquis.
 Marquēsa, F., marchioness.
 Más, more, longer; *no — m.*, no
 longer; *no — más que*, only,
 nothing but.
 Matār, to kill; to wear out.
 Matrimōnio, M., marriage; *man*
 and wife.
 Matritēnse, of Madrid.
 Máxime, especially.
 Mayo, M., May.
 Mediadōr, M., mediator.
 Médio, M., means; *de qué m.*, in
 what way?
 Médio, a, half.
 Mejōr, better; *serla m. que*, it would
 be better if, you had better.
 Ménos, less; *lo m.*, the least thing;
 at least.
 Mercēd, F., grace, favor.

Merecēr, to deserve, § 374.
Mes, M., month.
Mesa, F., table, writing desk, desk (in schools).
Metērse, to get (*en*, into).
Metro, M., metre.
Miēdo, M., fear; *tenēr m.*, to be afraid (*de*, to).
Miēstras, while.
Mil, a thousand.
Milāgro, M., miracle, wonder.
Militār, soldier, military officer.
Millōn, M., million.
Minūto, M., minute.
Mirāda, F., look, glance.
Mirār, to look, to see, to behold; *m. d.*, to look at; *mire V.*, see, look.
Mismo, a, same, self; *lo m.*, the same (thing).
Modāles, M. PL., manners, style.
Modelo, M., model, beau-ideal.
Modo, M., way, manner; *de m. que*, so that, so.
Momēto, M., moment; *al m.*, this instant, instantly; *en estos m—s*, at present.
Monēda, F., coin, piece of money, small change, change.
Mōnstruo, M., monster; *m. de fealdād*, prodigiously ugly.
Montēra, F., hunting-cap; name of a central street in Madrid, leading from the Puerta del Sol to those of Fuencarrāl (pop. *Funcarrāl*) and Hortalēza.
Mordēr, to bite, § 490.
Morir, to die, § 509.
Morirse, to die, to give up.
Moro, M., Moor.
Mortāl, mortal.
Mortificār, to provoke, § 371.

Motīn, M., riot, disturbance.
Mozo, M., boy, waiter; *buen m.*, fine looking.
Muchācho, a, M. F., boy, girl.
Mucho, a, much, a good deal of; PL., many, a good many.
Mucho, adv., much, greatly.
Muerdo — *morder*.
Muero — *morir* or *morirse*.
Mujēr, F., woman, wife.
Murciāno, a, of Mūrcia.
Murmūllo, M., murmur.
Musa, F., muse.
Muy, very.

N.

Nada, nothing, not anything, no!
Nadār, to swim.
Nādie, no one, not anyone.
Nado — *d nado*, swimming, by water.
Narānja, F., orange.
Narigōn, M., long-nosed.
Nariz, F., nose.
Narraciōn, F., story, recital.
Navarro, a, Navarrese.
Necesidād, F., need, necessity.
Necesitār, to need, to be in need of (generally foll. by *de*).
Negārse, to decline, to refuse (foll. by *d* with pron. or infn.), § 371.
Negro, a, black, dark.
Nēutro, M., neuter.
Ni, neither, nor, not; *no — ni — ni*, neither — nor, not — either — or; not even, not so much as.
Nieta, F., granddaughter.
Nieto, M., grandson.
Nīmio, a, excessive.
Ningūno, a, no, not any, not at all; no one, not anyone.

Niña, F., child, girl.
Niño, M., boy, child.
No, not, no.
Noble, noble, high-born.
Noche, F., night; *de n.*, by night, at night.
Nombrâr, to mention by name, to speak a name; *sólo con nombrârle*, at the bare mention of his name.
Nombre, M., name.
Nosotros, as, we (men), we (women), us (after prep.).
Notâr, to observe.
Noticia, F., news, item, piece of news; PL., news.
Nubarrôn, M., great cloud, black cloud.
Nuevo, a, new.
Nulo, a, null, void.
Numerôso, a, numerous.
Nunca, never (with neg. verb if it follows verb).

Ñ.

Ñudo, M., knot.

O.

Objeto, M., object; *con o. de*, for the purpose of.
Obligaciôn, F., duty, obligation; *no tenêr o. de*, not to be supposed to.
Obligãdo, a, compelled, forced (*d*, to).
Obra, F., work; *estar en o.*, to be in repairs, or repairing.
Ocupâr, to occupy, to hold.
Ocupârse, to employ one's self (*en*, in, about).
Ocurrência, F., occurrence, incident, coincidence.

Ocurrir, to happen, to be the matter; *¿qué ocurre?* what is the matter?

Ocho, eight.

Odiôso, a, hateful.

Odre, M., wine-skin.

Ofrecêr, to offer, § 374.

Ofrezco — *ofrecer*.

Oid — *oir*.

Oido, a, heard; *o. decir*, heard say — *oir*.

Oído, M., hearing; ear.

Ôiga — *oir*.

Ôigo — *oir*.

Oir, to hear, to listen, § 553.

Olôr, M., odor, smell.

Olvidâr, to forget; refl. with *de*.

Opâco, a, opaque, dark.

Óptico, M., optician.

Orden, F., order (command); M., order (sequence).

Orgüllo, M., pride.

Original, M., extraordinary, peculiar.

Otro, a, other, another, other one.

Oye — *oir*.

P.

Paciência, F., patience.

Pagâr, to pay; *pagârlas*, to pay for it, to "catch" it; *pagârlas todas juntas*, to settle for old scores, §§ 371, 753.

País, M., country; district, region.

Pala, F., shovel.

Palâbra, F., word (in discourse; a single word is *voz*, F.).

Palênque, M., wrestling place, arena.

Palmâda, F., clap of the hands, applause.

Panzûdo, a, corpulent.

Pañuelo, *m.*, handkerchief; shawl (anything put over the head or shoulders).

Papel, *m.*, paper; newspaper; part, character (in a play); *hacer un p.*, to act a part, to cut a figure.

Papelito, *m.*, little paper; pop., paper segar.

Para, for; to, in order to, so as to; *p. que*, in order that, that, so that (subj.).

Paraguas, *m.*, SING. and PL., umbrella.

Paralēla, *f.*, parallel (a trench with a parapet constructed opposite the enemy's works).

Parēce, it appears, it seems—*parecer*.

Parecēr, to appear, to seem, § 374.

Parezco—*parecer*.

Parte, *f.*, part; *por mi p.*, on my part, in me.

Pasa, *f.*, raisin.

Pasado, *a.*, passed, spent; past, late.

Pasado, *m.*, past.

Pasār, to pass, to spend, to experience; to pass over; to pass anything (*por*, through).

Pasatiēmpo, *m.*, pastime, passing amusement.

Pasiōn, *f.*, passion.

Paso, *m.*, step; *dar un p.*, to take a step.

Pedāzo, *m.*, piece; *hacer pedazos*, to break in pieces.

Pedir, to ask, to ask for, §§ 512, 753.

Pōine, *m.*, comb.

Peligro, *m.*, danger.

Penōso, *a.*, painful, severe.

Pensār, to think, to reflect, to imagine; to intend; *p. en*, to think of, § 457.

Peña, *f.*, cliff, rock. Proper name, *Fr. de la Roche*.

Peōr, worse; *lo peōr*, the worst.

Perdēr, to lose; to ruin, § 470.

Perdido, *a.*, lost, ruined, undone.

Perdonār, to forgive.

Perfēctamente, perfectly.

Perfecto, *a.*, perfect, complete.

Periódico, *m.*, newspaper.

Permanecēr, to remain, § 374.

Permiso, *m.*, permission; *pedir d uno p. para*, to ask leave to.

Permitir, to allow, to permit (*que* with subj., to).

Pero, but; why.

Persōna, *f.*, person; appearance.

Pertenecēr, to belong, § 374.

Pertenezco—*pertenecer*.

Pescār, to fish, to fish up, to catch (a fish), § 371.

Pesqué—*pescar*.

Pida—*pedir*.

Pide—*pedir*.

Pido—*pedir*.

Pié, *m.*, foot; *d p.*, on foot.

Piensa—*pensar*.

Pintōr, *m.*, painter.

Placēr, *m.*, pleasure.

Placēr, to please; *place*, it pleases, § 545.

Plaza, *f.*, square, market; fortress.

Plazca—*placer*.

Pluma, *f.*, pen.

Pobre, poor, sorry, wretched.

Poco, *a.*, small, little; PL., few; *un p.*, a little, slightly.

Podēmos—*poder*.

Podēr, to be able, can, may, § 532.

Podido, been able—*poder*.

Podrá, will be able, can—*poder*.

Ponêr, to put, to place, to lay; to put in; *p. la mano*, to lay one's hand (*en*, *on*), § 533.

Ponêrse, to become, to get; *p. bien con*, to get on good terms with; *p. bueno* or *malo*, to be well or ill; *p. en camîno*, to start off, to set out, to go.

Poquito, very little, rather, somewhat.

Por, by, for, through, along, over.

Pormenôres, M. PL., particulars, details.

Pôrque, because, for (consequence).

Porqué and **Por qué**, why?

Posible, possible.

Posta, F., post; *ir por la p.*, to go by express.

Practicârse, to be constructed, § 371.

Precioso, a, precious, valuable; magnificent, superb.

Preciso — *es p.*, it is necessary.

Preferir, to prefer, § 500.

Prefiêro — *preferir*.

Prendêr (pp. *preso*), to arrest, to seize, to take.

Preparâr, to prepare, to arrange; *prepararlo todo*, to get everything in readiness.

Presâgio, M., prophecy.

Presência, F., presence.

Presentâr, to present.

Preso, a, arrested, taken — *pren-der*; *darse p.*, to surrender.

Prestâr, to lend.

Primêro, a, first; *lo p.*, the first thing.

Princípio, M., beginning; *al p.*, at first.

Prisa, F., haste; *tener p.*, to be in a hurry (*por* or *para*, to).

Prisionêro, M., prisoner.

Procurâr, to try, to seek (*de*, to).

Profundidad, F., depth.

Prolongâr, to prolong, to lengthen out, § 371.

Pronto, quick, soon; *más p.*, quicker.

Prôpio, a, self, own.

Proporcionâr, to bestow, to afford, to give.

Próximamente, approximately.

Próximo, a, near, next.

Proyecto, M., plan, purpose; *tener el p. de*, to purpose.

Prueba, F., proof, trial; essay.

Público, M., public.

Pudrîr, to decay, § 510.

Pueblo, M., village; town; people.

Puede, may, can, is able — *poder*.

Puedo, *no p.*, I cannot — *poder*.

Puerta, F., door, gate.

Puês, then, well, why; *p. bien*, well.

Puesto, a — *poner* and *ponerse*.

Puesto que, since.

Punto, M., point; moment.

Purêza, F., purity, virtue.

Q.

Que, who, which, whom; that, since; until; let (with subj.).

Qué, what? what! how!

Quedâr, to remain, to be left; *q. d.*, to keep; *quedarse con.*, to keep.

Quema, F., burn, scorching.

Querêlla, F., feud.

Querêr, to wish, to want, to like; will, § 534.

Querido, a, dear.

Queso, M., cheese.

Quiên, who; after a prep., whom.

Quién, who? whom?

Quiere — *querer*.

Quiero — *querer*.
Quieto, a, quiet, still.
Química, F., chemistry.
Quinientos, as, five hundred.
Quinta, F., summer-house.
Quise — *querer*.
Quisiera — *querer*.
Quiso — *querer*.
Quizás, or **quizá**, perhaps (subj.).

R.

Rapto, M., burst.
Rarēza, F., eccentricity.
Raro, a, odd, curious, strange.
Rasgo, M., dash, stroke.
Rato, M., while.
Ratito, M., little while, moment.
Raudál, M., torrent, rapid.
Raza, F., race, stock.
Razón, F., reason; *tener r.*, to be right.
Real, M., a rial or royal (5 cts. in Spain, and 10 cts. in Cuba).
Recibir, to receive.
Recogēr, to gather up, to pick up, § 375.
Recōja — *recoger*.
Recordār, to remember, § 474.
Recuerdo — *recordar*.
Recuerdo, M., recollection, memory, thought; *su r.*, the thought of him.
Recūrso, M., resource, recourse, convenience.
Red, F., net.
Refugiārse, to take refuge (*en*, *in*).
Regir, to rule, § 515.
Registro, M., record.
Regulār, usual.
Reí — *reir*.
Reinādo, M., reign.
Rēino, M., kingdom.

Reir and **reirse**, to laugh (*de*, *at*), § 520.
Relój (more often now, *reloj*), M., watch, clock.
Remēdio, M., remedy; *no hay más r. que*, the only way is to.
Rendija, F., opening, rent, crevice.
Rendirse, to surrender, § 513.
Renunciār, to give up, to abandon (*fol.* by *d*).
Reñir, to quarrel, to fight, § 518.
Reparaciōn, F., amends, satisfaction.
Representār, to appear to be of (such an age).
Resignaciōn, F., patience.
Resignārse, to be resigned.
Respetār, to respect.
Resto, M., the remainder; PL., remains.
Retenēr, to hold, to keep, § 536.
Retirārse, to withdraw, to disappear.
Retrāso, M., backwardness; *llegar con r.* (of a train), to be behind, to be late.
Reunir, to gather.
Revolvēr, to turn upside down, to ransack, § 491.
Revuelto, a — *revolver*.
Rey, M., king.
Rícachōn, very rich.
Rico, a, rich.
Rie — *reir* or *reirse*.
Rige — *regir*.
Rincōn, M., corner.
Rinconcito, M., little corner, nook.
Rindo, me — *rendirse*.
Riña, F., quarrel, fight.
Rio — *reir* or *reirse*.
Rio, M., river.
Robo, M., robbery, theft.

Rodilla, F., knee; *de r—s*, on one's knees.

Rogār, to request, to beg, to beseech, § 483.

Romántico, a, romantic, full of romance.

Rompēr, to break; refl., to be broken.

Rota, F., rout, defeat.

Roto, a — *romper*, § 571.

Rueda, F., wheel,

Ruego — *rogar*.

Ruego, M., request.

Ruido, M., noise, tumult.

Ruidoso, a, boisterous, noisy.

S.

Sabe, knows; *se s.*, is known — *saber*.

Sabēr, to know, to know how, to learn; to be able, can, § 535.

Sabrás — *saber*.

Sacār, to take out; to take down, § 371.

Sacudid, shake ye — *sacudir*.

Sacudir, to shake.

Salir, to go out, to come out, to go away, to go, to start to leave; to get out of, to escape from (with *de*); to set out from, to leave, to start (foll. by *de*, from), § 554.

Salvārse, to save one's self, to be saved.

Santiguārse, to make the sign of the cross, § 372.

Santiguo — *santiguarse*.

Santo, a, holy; *cielo s.*, heavens!

Santo, a, M. and F., saint.

Sañudo, a, full of wrath.

Satisfacciōn, F., satisfaction, atonement, amends.

Satisfacēr, to satisfy, § 531.

Satisfēcho, a, satisfied, contented, pleased — *satisfacer*.

Sé — *saber*.

Sēa — *ser*.

Seguía — *seguir*.

Seguida — *en s.*, at once, immediately.

Seguir, to follow, to take (advice); to go on, § 516.

Segūn, according to, according as, as.

Segūro, a, sure; *de s—o*, surely, certainly.

Semejānza, F., likeness, similarity.

Semi-doble, half-double.

Sencillo, a, simple, plain, single.

Sentārse, to sit down, § 459.

Sentir, to perceive by the senses, to feel, to hear (as steps); to regret, to be sorry, § 499.

Seña, F., sign, address; standard.

Señor, M., sir, gentleman, Mr.

Señora, F., madam, Mrs., the lady, mistress (of the house).

Sēpan — *saber*.

Ser, to be (absolutely, of what is permanent, inherent), § 385.

Sér, M., being; soul, individual.

Servicio, M., service.

Servir, to serve; *s. en*, to be of (a branch of public service), § 513.

Sevilla, F., Seville (pron. *sēv-il*, and not *se-vill*, because from *Hispalis*, and Arab. *Isbilā*, so that *ville* is not separate from the stem); *tren de S.*, Seville train.

Sevillāno, a, of Seville.

Sexo, M., sex.

Si, if, whether; why.

Sí, yes.

Sido, been — *ser*.

Siempre, always, ever; *para s.*, for ever; *de s.*, eternal; continuing to (verb).

Siën, F., temple, forehead; *las sienes*, the temples.

Sienta — *sentarse* and *sentir*.

Siéntese V., sit down — *sentarse*.

Sienten — *sentir* and *sentarse*.

Siento — *sentir* and *sentarse*.

Significār, to signify, to mean, § 371.

Significativo, a, significant.

Signe — *seguir*.

Siguen — *seguir*.

Sin, without; *sin que*, without (that).

Sino, but; *no — sino*, only.

Siquiëra, even; *ni s.*, not even.

Sirgo, M., twisted silk.

Sirvió — *servir*.

Sitiado, a, besieged.

Sitiador, besieger.

Sobre, on, upon, above, over; *s. todo*, above all.

Sobrino, M., nephew.

Socorro, M., help.

Sol, M., sun.

Soldado, M., soldier.

Soledad, F., solitude, lonely situation.

Solo, a, single, alone, only.

Sólo, adv., only.

Sombrerero, M., hatter.

Sombrero, M., hat.

Sombrío, a, gloomy, morose.

Somos — *ser*.

Son — *ser*.

Sonrisa, F., smile.

Soplār, to blow.

Sordo, a, deaf; *hacerse la sorda*, to pretend not to hear.

Sortija, F., (jewelled) ring.

Sospechār, to suspect.

Soy — *ser*.

Su, his, her, its, one's, your, their.

Subir, to go up, to come up; to go up stairs, up the steps; to come up stairs, up the steps.

Sucedër, to happen.

Sucedido, a, happened.

Suelo, M., ground, floor; *al s.*, on the floor, down.

Sueño, M., dream.

Sufrir, to endure.

Supiese — *saber*.

Suplicār, to beg, to request, § 371.

Susto, M., fright, scare.

Suyo, a, his, hers, its, yours.

T.

Tahūr, M., gambler.

Tal, such, such a.

Tambiën, also, too; likewise.

Tampoco, and — not, nor.

Tan, as, so.

Tanto, a, as much — many, so much — many; *por t.*, therefore, consequently.

Tapicero, M., upholsterer.

Tarde, F., afternoon.

Tarde, adv., late.

Tasajo, M., fitch of bacon.

Taza, F., cup (coffee or tea).

Tejuëlo, M., lettering on the back of a book.

Tela, F., cloth (cotton or linen), material, covering.

Tema, M., theme, subject, talk; old story; exercise.

Temblār, to tremble, § 463.

Tembloroso, a, tremulously.

Temër, to fear, to be afraid.

Temerario, a, rash, fool-hardy.

Tempestad, F., storm, violent storm.

Tendër, to stretch, to spread (as a net), § 471.

Tendrá — *tener*.

Tendría — *tener*.

Tenër, to have; to take; *t. que*, to have to, § 536.

Tenga — *tener*.

Tenído — *tener*.

Teniënte, M., lieutenant.

Tentâr, to try; to tempt, § 459.

Teñido, a, dyed — *teñir*, § 518.

Terrëno, M., ground.

Terrible, terrible.

Tertulia, F., party, company.

Tia, F., aunt.

Tiempo, M., time; weather; *más t.*, longer.

Tienda, F., shop, "store"; *en la t. de*, at —'s; *á la t. de*, to —'s.

Tienes — *tener*.

Tientan — *tentar*.

Tierra, F., earth, land, soil.

Tilín — *hacerle á uno t.*, to make one tingle.

Timbre, M., stamp; hand-bell.

Tinta, F., ink.

Tio, M., uncle.

Tira, F., strip.

Tirâr, to pull (*de*, at).

Todavía, yet, still; *t. un, una*, another.

Todo, a, all, the whole; M., everything; *todo lo que*, all that.

Toledãno, a, of Toledo.

Tomâr, to take, to take up (as a book); *t. por*, to take anyone for.

Tomârse (*la libertãd de*), to take (the liberty to).

Tontería, F., folly, nonsense.

Torëo, M., bull-fighting.

Tormenta, F., tempest.

Toro, M., bull.

Torrë, F., tower.

Torrente, M., torrent; *á torrentes*, in torrents.

Tortuoso, a, winding.

Trabajadör, M., laborer.

Trabajâr, to work.

Trabãjo, M., work; PL., operations; *t — s de zapa*, undermining operations.

Trãe — *traer*.

Traër, to bring, to carry; to contain (of a newspaper), § 537.

Tragédia, F., tragedy.

Traído — *traer*.

Trãigo — *traer*.

Trajësen — *traer*.

Trãjo — *traer*.

Tranquilo, a, quiet, calm; at ease.

Transitâr, to go, to make one's way.

Tratâr, to try (*de*, to).

Travës — *á t. de*, through, across.

Trazãdo, a, traced, carried (*sobre*, along) — *trazar*.

Trazar, to trace, § 371.

Trëinta, thirty.

Tren, M., train.

Trinchëra, F., intrenchment.

Triste, sad.

Triunfâr, to triumph, to get the better (*de*, over, of).

Tropelia, F., outrage.

Trueno, M., a clap of thunder, thunder; PL., peals of thunder, thunder.

Trujo — *traer*.

Tube, M., lamp chimney.

Tudënse, of Tuy (learned).

Tudés, a, of Tuy (popular).

Tunãnte, M., rascal.

Tuviëra — *tener*.

Tūvo — *tener*.

Tuyo, a, thine.

U.

Último, a, last, final.

Único, a, only; *lo ú.*, the only (thing).

Unido, a, united, connected (*entre sí*, together, to each other).

Unir, to join, to unite.

Universāl, universal.

Unos, as, some (usually omitted in Eng.), a few.

Uso, M., use.

Ustêd, your worship, you.

V.

Va — *ir* and *irse*.

Vacía — *vaciar*.

Vaciār, to empty.

Vaivên, M., vibration, oscillation; undulation. [*Va y ven*, go and come.]

Valenciāno, a, Valencian.

Valido, M., confidential minister, king's favorite.

Valôr, M., courage.

Valle, M., valley.

Vallisoletāno, a, of Valladolid.

Vāmos, let us go, let us come; come! come now! *vamos d*, let us —. From *ir*.

Van — *ir* or *irse*.

Vara, F., cane, stick; yard (meas.).

Variār, to change, to vary, to alter; *v. de parecer*, to change one's opinion.

Varío — *variar*.

Varôn, M., man; male.

Vascuênce, Basque language.

Váse, exit — *irse*.

Vate, M., bard, poet.

Vaya — *ir*, indeed! of course! *vaya sí* — of course I do, I will!

Vé — *ir*; véte — *irse*.

Ve — *ver*.

Veces, F. PL., times; *dos v.*, twice.

Ved — *ver*.

Vēinte, twenty.

Vellūdo, a, hairy, shaggy.

Vendrá — *venir*.

Venga — *venir*; *dile que v.*, tell him to come.

Vengārse, to avenge one's self (*de*, of, on), § 371.

Venir, to come, § 541.

Ventāna, F., window; *los cristales de la v.*, window panes.

Veo — *ver*.

Ver, to see; *vamos d v.*, let us see, § 548.

Verse, to be (substitute of *estar*).

Verāno, M., summer.

Vêras — *de v.*, truly! indeed!

Verdād, F., truth; *en v.*, truly; *en v. que*, truly I —.

Verdadêro, a, true, genuine, down-right.

Véte — *irse*.

Vez, F., a time; *otra v.*, again, once more; *de una v.*, at once, once for all.

Via, F., track (of a railway).

Viaje, M., journey; travelling.

Viajêro, M., traveller, passenger.

Vício, M., vice; bad habit.

Victória, F., victory; hurrah!

Vida, F., life.

Vidriêro, M., glazier.

Viejo, a, old.

Viene — *venir*.

Viento, M., wind.

Viña, F., vineyard.
 Violēncia, F., force, violence.
 Violēto, a, forcible, violent.
 Virtūd, F., virtue.
 Virtuōso, a, virtuous.
 Visita, F., visit, call.
 Visitār, to visit, to pay a visit to.
 Visto, a, seen — *ver*.
 Viudo, M., widower.
 Vive — *vivir*.
 Vivían — *vivir*.
 Viviente, living.
 Vivir, to live.
 Vizcaīno, a, Basque (of Biscay).
 Volānte, flying; *zapa v.*, defence made of baskets filled with earth and placed close together.
 Volvēr, to return, to come back, § 491.
 Volvēr á, again (as *v. d hacer*, to do again).
 Voto, M., vow.
 Voy — *ir* or *irse*.
 Voz, F., voice, tone of voice; a word.
 Vuelo, M., flight (of a bird); soaring.

Vuelta, F., turn, return; *v. al tema*, back to the old subject again.

Vuelva — *volver*.

Vuelve — *volver*.

Vuelvo — *volver*.

Y.

Y, and (before initial *i* or *hi*, é).

Ya, now, already; *ya no — más*, not — any more, no more, no longer; yes! of course!

Ya que, conj., since.

Yedra, F., ivy.

Yema, F., yolk.

Yeso, M., lime, mortar.

Yugo, M., yoke.

Z.

Zanja, F., trench, ditch.

Zapa, F., sap, trench, undermining.

Zapadōr, M., sapper.

Zaragozāno, a, of Saragossa.

Zig-zag, PL., zig-zags, M., zig-zag.

Zipizape, M., scrape; scuffle.

Zozōbra, F., anxiety.

Zumbār, to buzz, to hum.

ENGLISH-SPANISH VOCABULARY.



A.

Able (*to be*), poder — puedo, es, e.

About (*concerning*), acérca de;
(*nearly*), cosa de; poco más ó
ménos.

Absolutely, absolutamente.

Academy, Acadēmia, F.

Accommodation-train, el tren
mixto (composed of 1st, 2d, and
3d class carriages); tren-ómnibus
(from French).

Account (*narration*), relaciōn, F.;
to give an a. of, hacer la r. de;
on a. of, á cāusa de.

Accustomed (*to be*), solēr (with
infin.); estār acostumbraō á.

Acknowledge (*to*), confesār.

Acquaintance, conocido, a, M. and F.

Across, á través de; por; *running*
a. the page, á renglōn seguido.

Act (*to*), representār.

Action, acciōn, F.; acto, M.

Active, activo, a.

Add (*to*), contribuir; *does not a.*,
no contribuye.

Adorn (*to*), adornār.

Advice, consējo, M. (usually PL., los
consējos); *by the a.*, de consējo;
(*in government*) de acuēdo.

Afternoon, tarde, F.; *this a.*, esta t.;
in the a., por la t.

Again, otra vez; volver á (with an
infin.); as, *he goes out a.*, vuelve
á salir, p. 422.

Against, contra.

Agnes, Inēs, F.

Agreeable, agradāble.

Aid, auxilio, M.; *to come to one's a.*,
venir or acudir en su auxilio.

Air, āire, M.; cielo, M.; (*that which*
we breathe) el āire or la atmósfera.

Alight (*to*), posār (*of birds*).

Alike, igual; PL., iguales.

All, adj., todo, a; PL., todos, as;
(*everything*) todo.

Alliance, alianza, F.

Allow (*to*), permitir.

Almost, cāsi.

Alms, limosna, F.

Already, ya.

Also, tambiēn.

Always, siēmpre.

America, América, F.

American, Americano (if Span.);
Anglo-American (if from the
U. S.).

American, adj., americano, a.

Amiable, amāble.

Among, entre (*rest*), por entre
(*motion*).

Amusing, divertido, a; entrete-
nido, a.

Ancient, antiguo, a.

And, y; (before *i* or *hi*) é.

Andalusia, Andalucía, F.

Andalusian, andalūz, a.

Anger, cólera, F., ira, F. [no.

Anglo-American, Anglo-america-

Angry, incomodado, a, (*moderate*); enfadado, a.

Another, otro, a; *a. time*, otra vez.

Answer (*to*), responder; contestar á (*when questioned*).

Any (*you please*), cualquiera; *in a. language*, en cualquier idioma, p. 437; (*otherwise, any is usually left untranslated*); *a. more*, ya—no; as, *I don't like the country a. more*, ya no me gusta el campo.

Anybody (*with neg.*), nadie; (*without neg.*) alguien.

Apartment (*of a house*), cuarto, M.; (*of a floor*) habitación, F.; (*of a palace*) salón, M.

Appear (*to*), in the sense of *to present one's self*, aparecer.

Appear (*to*), meaning to seem, parecer; *it appears*, parece.

Approve (*to*), aprobar.

April, abril, M.; *April 25th*, á veinte y cinco de A.

Arab, árabe, M. and F.

Aranjuéz, [*aram Jovis*], a royal seat, about two hours by rail from Madrid.

Are, son; están.

Are (*there*), hay.

Army, ejército, M.

Arrest (*to*), prender.

Arrested, preso, a.

Arrival, llegada, a.

Arrive (*to*), llegar.

Artist, artista, M.

As (*according as*), según, conforme á.

As, conj., como; adv., tan; *as—as*, tan—como.

As-far-as, hasta.

As-many—as, tantos, as—como.

As-much—as, tanto, a—como.

Ask (*to*), as a question, preguntár; as a request, pedir, p. 420; *to ask for a thing*, pedir alguna cosa.

At, en, á.

Atmosphere, atmósfera, F.; aire, M.

Attachment, amor, M., cariño, M.

Attempt, atentado, M.

Attend (*to*), asistir, *followed by á*.

Attendance, asistencia, F.

Attended, concurrido, a; *very well a.*, muy concurrido, a, *or* concurridísimo, a.

Attends (*he*), asiste á.

Aunt, tia, F.

Author, autor, M.

Avenge one's self (*to*), vengarse (*of, de*).

B.

Bad, malo, a (mal).

Badly, mal.

Balcony, balcón, M.

Ball, pelota, F.; (*weapon*) bala, F., (*shot*) balazo, M.; *wounded by a b.*, herido de un balazo.

Banker, banquero, M.

Basque, subst., Vizcaíno, a.

Basque, adj., vascongado, a.

Bath, baño, M.

Bathing-season, temporada de los baños (la).

Battalion, batallón, M.

Be (*to*), ser (*absolute*); estar (*accidental*); (*of weather*) hacer, p. 429.

Beautiful, hermoso, a; bello, a.

Because, porque.

Become (*to*), hacerse; ponerse, p. 431.

Beef, carne de vaca, *or simply* carne, F.

Been, sido; *estādo*; (*of weather*)
hecho; *b. able*, podido.

Before (*time*) *āntes*; (*presence*)
ante.

Beg (*to*), *meaning to request*, rogār;
meaning to solicit alms, pedir.

Beggar, mendigo (seldom used);
pobre.

Begin (*to*), *empezār* (*to*, *á*); *echār*
á; *echārse á*; *ponērse á*.

Behavior, conducta, *F.*, compor-
tamiēto, *M.*

Believe (*to*), *creēr*.

Belong (*to*), *pertenecēr* (*to*, *á*);
ser (*to*, *de*).

Bench, banco, *M.*

Benevolent, caritativo, *a.*

Bernard, Bernārdo.

Besides, además.

Best, el (*la*, *lo*) *mejōr*.

Better, *mejōr*; *PL.*, *mejōres*.

Beyond, más allá de (*farther*);
(*outside or besides*) fuera de.

Bilbao, *Bilbāo*, a large town on the
Bay of Biscay.

Bird, ave, *F.*; pájaro, *M.* (*p.* is less
used in poetry or in the higher
style of prose).

Blame, censūra, *F.*

Blindly, *ciēgamente*.

Block, trozo, *M.*, *trocito*, *M.*

Blow, golpe, *M.*

Blue, azūl.

Boldly, *resuēltamente* (*bravely*);
desvergonzādamente (*impudently*).

Book, libro, *M.*

Boston, Bóston.

Both, ambos, *as*; los (*las*) dos.

Box, caja, *F.*

Boy, muchācho, *M.*

Bracelet, *pulsēra*, *F.*

Branch, ramo, *M.*, *ramāl*, *M.*

Break (*to*), *rompēr*; *to b. in pieces*,
hacer pedāzos, *or* *añicos*.

Break out (*to*), *estallar*.

Bright, vivo, *a*; claro, *a.*

Brilliant, *brillānte*.

Bring (*to*), *traēr*; *brings*, *trāe*; *he*
brought, *trājo*.

Broad, ancho, *a.*

Brother, hermano, *M.*

Building, edificio, *M.*

Busy, ocupādo, *a*, (*at*, *en*).

Busy one's self (*to*), *ocupārse* (*with*
or at, *en*).

But, pero, *mas*; (*after neg. sent.*),
sino.

Buy (*to*), *comprār*.

C.

Cadiz, Cádiz; *of or pertaining to*
Cadiz, *gaditāno*, *a.*

Cadiz (*of*), *Gaditāno*, *a.*

Call, visita, *F.*

Call (*to*), *llamār*; *called*, *llamādo*, *a.*

Call one's self (*to*), *llamārse*.

Called (*to be*), *llamārse*; *is c.* *or*
named, *se llama*; *are c. (they)*, *se*
llaman.

Calmly, con calma; tranquilo, *a.*
(*adj. for adv.*).

Campaign, *campaña*, *F.*

Can, poder; *I c.*, *puedo*; *I cannot*,
no puedo; *he c.*, *puede*; *he cannot*,
no puede; *you c.*, *V. puede, or V.*
podrá (*if the idea is future*).

Cap, gorra, *F.*

Capable, *capāz*.

Capacity, *capacidād*, *F.*

Capital, *capitāl*, *F.*; (*of Spain*)
corte, *F.*

Captain, *capitān*, *M.*

Capture, toma, F.
Car (*railway*), coche, M.; *the cars*, el tren, SING.
Care, cuidádo, M.
Care (*to*), *meaning inclination*, querēr (quiero, quieres, etc.); *not to c.*, no querēr.
Carelessly, descuidadamente; con ligerēza.
Carlist, Carlista, M. and F.
Carriage, coche, M.
Carry (*to*), llevār.
Carry off (*to*), llevār; llevārsē; llevār fuera.
Carthage, Cartagēna, F.
Castile, Castilla, F.; *New C.*, Castilla la Nueva; *Old C.*, Castilla la Vieja.
Castilian, Castellāno, a, M. and F.; adj., castellāno, a.
Cat, gato, M.; gata, F.
Catalonian, Catalān, a; catalan, a.
Catch (*to*), cogēr (cojo, coges, etc.); capturār.
Cavalier, caballēro, M.
Cease (*to*), dejār (*to*, de).
Ceiling, techo, M.
Celebrated, célebre, famōso, a.
Cent, centāvo, M. (Span. Am.).
Centre, centro, M.
Century, siglo, M.
Certain—*a c.*, cierto, a (*without un, una*); *in a c. class*, en cierta clase; *superl.* certísimo, a, and ciertísimo, a.
Chair, silla, F.
Change (*to*), variār de (*direction, opinion*); mudār de (*residence, clothes, etc.*).
Chapter, capítulo, M.
Character, carácter, M.

Characteristics of (*the*), el carácter de.
Charge (*care, office*), encargo, M.
Charitable, caritativo, a.
Charles, Cárlos.
Cheerfully, alēgremente.
Cherish (*to*), abrigār.
Chieftain, cabecilla (*of Carlist bands*), M.
Child (*young*), niño; (*of any age*), hijo, M.
Children (*young*), niños; (*of any age*), hijos, M.
Chilian (*of Chili*), Chilēno, a, M. and F.; chilēno, a.
Christianity, cristianismo, M.
Church, iglésia, F.
Circumstance, circunstāncia, F., caso, M.; *under the c—s*, bajo las circunstancias.
Citizen (*civilly*), vecino, M.; (*politically*), ciudadāno, M.
City, ciudād, F. (*common name*); poblaciōn, F. (*with reference to its inhabitants*); villa, F. (*officially and administratively*).
Class, clase, F.; *in a certain c.*, en cierta c.
Clear, claro, a; despejādo, a.
Clear up (*to*), aclarār.
Clever, hábil.
Close, fin, M.; *at the c. of*, á fines de, á últimos de (*in dates*).
Clothes, ropa, F. (coll.).
Cloud, nube, F.
Coast, costa, F.
Cobbler, zapatēro de viejo, M.
Coetaneous, coetáneo, a.
Coin, monēda, F.
Cold, frío, M.; *to be c.*, hacēr f.; *to be very c.*, hacer mucho f.

- Collection**, colecció*n*, F.
Color, coló*r*, M.
Column, columna, F.
Combatant, combatiente, M.
Come (*to*), venir (vengo, vienes, etc.); *he came*, vino.
Come back (*to*), volver (vuelvo, vuelves, etc.).
Come down (*to*), bajár.
Come forward (*to*), adelantarse; presentarse.
Come from (*to*), venir de; salir de.
Come in (*to*), entrár; pasár.
Come near (*to*), acercarse.
Come out (*to*), salir (salgo, sales, etc.).
Come up (*to*), subír.
Comfortable, cómodo, a.
Command, mando, M. (*authority over*).
Commandment, mandamiento, M. (*divine*); mandato, M. (*human*).
Commerce, comercio, M.
Common, común; ordinário, a.
Commonwealth, república, F.
Companion, compa*ñ*ero, a, M. and F.
Concluded, concluido, a.
Condition, condició*n*, F.
Conduct, conducta, F., comportamié*nto*, M.
Confidence, confián*za*, F.
Congenial, simpático, a.
Connect (*to*), unir (*with*, á); enlazár (*with*, con).
Conscience, concié*ncia*, F.
Conscript, quinto, M.
Consent, consentimie*nto*, M.; *with the c. of*, con c. de.
Consider (*to*), considerár (conside*ro*, as, a); medita*r*.
Considerable, bastá*nte*.
Consist (*to*), consistir (*of, en*); constar (*of, de*).
Constantinople, Constantinópla, F.
Constitutional, constitucio*nal*.
Construct (*to*), construír.
Contented, contento, a; satisfecho, a.
Contrary, contrá*rio*, a; opuesto, a.
Contribute (*to*), contribuir (contribúyo, yes, ye); *have contributed* (*they*), han contribuido.
Convenient, cómodo, a, (*comfortable*); conveni*en*te (*expedient*).
Conversation, conversació*n*, F.
Cool, fresco, a.
Cost (*to*), costár (cuesto, as).
Costume, traje, M.
Couched, concebido, a.
Counsel, consé*jo*, M.
Count, conde, M.
Countess, condé*sa*, F.
Country, pais, M. (*general*); campo, M. (*not city*, rus); pátria, F. (*native country or province*); campiña, F. (*environs*, campaña).
Couple, par, M.
Courage, valór, M.
Course, rumbo, M.; *of c.*, sin duda; naturalmente.
Courteous, cortés, fino, a.
Cousin, primo, a, M. and F.
Cross, cruz, PL., cruces, F.
Cry (*to*), llorár (*to weep*); gritár (*to exclaim*).
Cuban, Cubá*no*, a, M. and F.; cubá*no*, a; de Cuba.
Curious, raro, a; extrañ*o*, a.
Custom, costú*mbre*, F.

D.

- Danger**, peligro, m.
Dark, oscuro, a.
Day, día, m.; *every d.*, todos los días.
Deceive (*to*), engañar.
Decision, decisión, f.
Declaration, declaración, f., confesión, f.
Deep, profundo, a.
Defect, defecto, m.; falta, f.
Definite, definitivo, a.
Demand, exigencia, f.
Deny (*to*), negar, rehusar.
Deserve (*to*), merecer (merezo, mercedes, ce).
Design, proyecto, m.; propósito, m.
Develop (*to*), desarrollar; *to be d — d*, desarrollarse; *may be d — d more*, se hayan desarrollado más.
Devout, piadoso, a; pio, a.
Different, distinto, a; diferente.
Difficult, difícil.
Diligence, aplicación, f.
Diligent, aplicado, a.
Dine (*to*), comer.
Dinner, comida, f.
Direct (*to*), dirigir (dirijo, diriges, -ge); *he directed*, dirigió.
Discern (*to*), discernir (discierno, -nes, -ne).
Discharge (*to*), desempeñar; cumplir con (*as an obligation*).
Distinguish (*to*), distinguir (distingo, gues, gue).
Distinguished, distinguido, a, (before the noun).
Disturb (*to*), alborotar (*of turmoil*); estorbar (*of inconvenience*).

- Do** (*to*), hacer (hago, haces); *of doing*, de hacer.
Doctor, doctor, m.; médico, m.; facultativo, m.
Document, documento, m.
Dog, perro, m.
Dollar, peso, m. (Spain and Amer.); duro, m. (Spain).
Door, puerta, f.
Dozen, docena, f.
Draft, borrador, m.
Dramatic, dramático, a.
Draughtsman, perito, m.; dibujador, m.
Draw (*to*), tirar (*pull*).
Draw up (*to*), extender (*a document*); redactar, hacer (*of plans*); *drawn up*, puesto en orden (*of soldiers*).
Drawing-room, sala, f.
Dress, vestido, m.; traje, m.
Drive, paseo, m.
Dry, seco, a.
Drum, tambor, m.
Dull, triste; fastidioso, a.
Dulled, entorpecido, a; insensible (*of conscience*).
During, durante.
Duty, deber, m.; obligación, f.

E.

- Eagle**, águila, f.
Earl, conde, m.
Early, temprano; adj., antiguo, a, (*ancient*).
Eastern, oriental.
Easy, fácil.
Easy-chair, sillón, m.
Eat (*to*), comer.
Educated, educado, a; *the educated*, PL., la gente ilustrada (coll.).

Emperor, emperadōr, M.
Employ, empleār; *employed*, em-
 pleado, a.
End, fin, m.; *at the end*, al fin.
Enemy, enemigo, M.
Engender (*to*), engendrār.
Engine, máquina, F.; locomotōra;
 (Sp. America) locomotiva, F.
English, inglēs, a.
Englishman, Inglēs, M.
Englishwoman, Inglēsa, F.
Engraved, grabado, a.
Engraving, grabado, M.
Enlightened, ilustrado, a.
Entangling, enredadōr, a.
Enter (*to*), entrār (*into*, en).
Entertaining, divertido, a.
Envelope, sobre, M.
Err (*to*), errār (yerro, as, a).
Errand-boy, mozo, M.; mandadē-
 ro, M.
Escorial, el Escoriāl; (*full name*:
 San Lorenzo del Escoriāl).
Estate, estado, M. (*class*); heredad,
 F. (*property*).
Et cætera, et cetera.
Europe, Eurōpa, F.; *western E.*, la
 Europa occidental; el oeste de E.
Europe (*of*), European, europēo, a.
Even, aún; *even if*, aún cuando
 (w. subj.).
Every, cada.
Everywhere, por todas partes.
Evidence, prueba, F.; indicio, M.
Exceedingly, sūmamente.
Except, excepto; salvo.
Excite (*to*), excitar, movēr.
Excursion-ticket, billēte de re-
 creō (*i.e.*, de ida y vuelta).
Excursion-train, tren de recreō;
 "*excursion*" is viaje de r.

Excuse (*to*), dispensār.
Exercise, tema, M.
Expect (*to*), esperar.
Experience, experiēncia, F.
Express-train, el tren corrēo, *or*
 el corrēo; el tren de gran veloci-
 dad (*of express freight*).
Extraordinary, especial, extraor-
 dinario, a.
Extreme, extrēmo, a.
Eye, ojo, M.

F.

Fabric, tejido, M.
Fair, fēria, F.
Fair (*of weather*), bueno, a.
Faithful, fiel.
Faithfully, fiēlmente; con fidelidad.
Fall (*to*), caer (cāigo, cæes, cæe).
Fall down (*to*), caerse.
Famous, célebre; famōso, a.
Fancy (*to*), figurarse; (*to think, be-
 lieve*) creēr.
Farewell, adiōs; vaya V. con Diōs,
or simply con Diōs.
Farce, farsa, F.; *to act a f.*, repre-
 sentār una farsa.
Farmer, labradōr, M.; cultivadōr, M.
Fate, suerte, F.; destino, M.
Father, padre, M.
Favor, favōr, M.
Favorable, favorāble.
Fear (*to*), temēr.
Feign one's self to be (*to*), fingirse
 (me finjo, te finges, etc.).
Fellow-man, semejante, M.
Festival, fiesta, F.
Few (*a*), algūnos, as; unos cuantos,
 as; *f.*, pocos, as; *in a f. years*,
 dentro de algunos años; *f. men*,
 pocos hombres.

Fewer, ménos; no tantos, as.
Field, M., campo, M.
Fight, riña, F. (*personal*); combāte, M., pelēa, F. (*general*).
Find (*to*), hallār (*what was lost*); encontrār (*to meet with*).
Fine, hermōso, a; fino, a, (*quality*).
Fire, fuego, M. (*element*); incēndio, M. (*conflagration*).
Fleece, vellōn, M.
Flight, vuēlo, M. (*as of a bird*).
Floor, suelo, M.; *on the f.*, al suelo (*motion*); en el suelo (*rest*).
Flour, harīna, F.
Flower, flor, F.
Foe, enemigo, M.
Folio, folio, M. (*size*); foja (*foliated leaf*), F.
Following, adj., siguiente (*after noun*); *f. day*, el día s.
Folly, imprudēcia, F.; locūra, F.
For, para (*destination*); pōrque (*reason*).
Force, fuerza, F.
Foreign, extranjēro, a.
Forgive (*to*), perdonār.
Form (*to*), formār, constituir; *they f.*, constitūyen.
Fragment, pedāzo, M.; añicos, M. PL.; *to break in f—s*, hacēr p—s, a—s.
Fray, lucha, F.; combāte, M.
Free, libre; exento, a (*from, de*).
Freely, libremente.
French, francēs, a.
Frenchman, Francēs, M.
Frenchwoman, Francēsa, F.
Friday, viēnes, M.; *on F.*, el v.; *Fridays*, los viēnes.
Friend, amigo, M.; amiga, F.
Friendly, amistōso, a; amāble.

Friendship, amistād, F.
Frock coat, levita, F.
From, de; (*place, time*) desde; *f. — to*, desde — á or hasta.
Front room, cuarto interiōr, M.; habitaciōn interiōr, F., or cuarto que da á la calle.
Frontier, frontēra, F.
Fruit, fruto, M. (*on the tree*); fruta, F. (*plucked*).
Fulfill (*to*), cumplir; *to f. (an obligation)*, cumplir con.
Full, lleno, a; replēto, a, (*of, de*).
Furnish (*to*), surtir (*to provide*); *they f.*, sūrten — (*with, de*).
Further, más; además (*besides*).

G.

Gallant, galānte.
Garden, jardín, M.; huerta, F.
Gate, puerta, F.
Gay, alēgre.
General, general, M. adj., *id.*
Generally, ordināriamente.
Gentle, dulce, suave (*of persons*); manso, a, (*of animals*).
Gentleman, caballēro, M.; señōr, M.
German, alemān, a; Alemān, a, M. and F.
Get up (*to*), levantārse; *without getting up*, sin levantārse.
Get better, ponērse mejōr; *to be getting b.*, ir poniēdosem.
Get well (*to*), ponērse bueno, a; *to g. w. again*, volvērse á ponēr bueno, a.
Girl, muchācha, F.; niña, F.
Give (*to*), dar; (*as a present*) regalār; *to give an account of*, hacēr la relaciōn de.

Give off (*to*), echār.

Give up (*to*), abandonār; entregār.

Glad (*to be*), alegrārse; *I am g.*, me alegró (*that*, de que); *are you g.?* ¿se alegró V.? *How g. I am!* ¡qué alegría! *or*; cuánto me alegró!

Glance, mirāda, F.

Go (*to*), ir (*definite*); andār (*vague*); *to be going to* (*inf.*), ir á; *I am going*, voy; *I am going to* (*inf.*), voy á; *one goes*, se va.

Go away (*to*), irse.

Go down (*to*), bajār; *to go d. stairs*, bajār la escalera.

Go in (*to*), entrār.

Go on (*to*), seguir (sigo, sigues).

Go out (*to*), salir (*to*, á); *to go o. again*, volvēr á salir (salgo, sales, sale).

Go up (*to*), subir; *to go up stairs*, s. la escalera.

Go and return (*out and back*), ida y vuelta, F.

God, Diós, M.

Godoy (*Manuël*), favorite of Charles IV., and his universal minister till the 18th of March, 1808.

Gold, oro, M.

Good, bueno, a, (buen).

Goods (*blessings*), biēnes, M. PL.; (*mdse.*), géneros, M. PL.

Goodness, bondād, F.

Government, gobierno, M.

Graceful, graciōso, a.

Grammar, gramática, F.

Grand, grande (gran); *in full uniform*, de gran lujo; de gala.

Gravity, gravedad, F.; lo grave.

Great, grande (gran).

Grow (*to*), crecēr (crezco, creces, crece).

Guarantee, garantía, F.

H.

Habit, costūmbre, F.; *bad h.*, mala c., *or* vicio, M.

Half (subst.), mitād, F.; *one h.*, la m.; *one h. of a day*, la m. de un día.

Half (adj.), mēdio, a; *h. a*, medio, a; *h. a day*, medio día; *a day and a h.*, un día y medio.

Hand, mano, F.; *on the other h.*, por otra parte; por otro lado.

Hand-laid, hecho á mano; *h.-l. paper*, papēl h. á m.

Hang (*to*), colgār (*on*, de); pendēr (*to*, *on*, de).

Hang up (*to*), colgār (cuelgo, as, a).

Happen (*to*), sucedēr; *it happens*, sucēde.

Happy, feliz; dichōso, a.

Harm, daño, M.

Harmonious, armoniōso, a.

Hat, sombrero, M.

Have (*to*), habēr (*only as an auxil.* — he, has, ha); tenēr (*the proper verb* — tengo, tienes, tiene).

Have just (*to*), acabār de (*inf.*); *he has just gone out*, acāba de salir.

Have to (*to*), tenēr que; *I h. to do it*, tengo que hacerlo.

Head-dress, toca, F.; peinādo, M.

Hear (*to*), oír (ōigo, ōyes); enten- dēr (*to understand* — entiendo, des, de); (*of a slight noise*) sentir (siento, tes, te).

Help (*to*), ayudār (ayūdo, as, a).

Help, socorro; *to cry for h.*, gritār al s.

Here, aquí.

High, alto, a.

Highlander, Montañés, a.

Highway-robber, salteador de caminos, M.

History, história, F.

Hit on (*to*), dar con.

Home, adv., á casa (*motion*); en casa (*rest*).

Honor, honôr, M.; honra, F.

Honor (*to*), honrâr.

Hoop, aro, M.

Horse, caballo, M.

Hot, calurôso, a, (*of the sun*); caliente (*of fire*).

Hot (*to be*), hacêr calôr (*of the weather*); *it is hot*, hace c.; *it is very hot*, hace mucho c.; *it is hotter than*, hace más c. que.

Hotel, hotêl (*not an apartment house*), M.; fonda (*for guests*), F.

Hour, hora, F.

House, casa, F.

Household, casa, F.

How? ¿cómo? *how much?* ¿cuánto, a? *many?* ¿cuántos, as?

However, sin embargo.

Humiliating, humillãnte.

Hundred (*one*), ciento (cien).

Hunger, hambre, F.; *to be hungry*, tener h.

I.

Idle, ocioso, a, (*with estâr*).

If, si.

Ignorant, ignorante (*with ser*).

Ill, malo, a; enfermo, a, (*with estâr*).

Ill, adv., mal.

Illustrated, ilustrãdo, a.

Impassible, intransitable.

Impatient, impaciente; *to become i.*,

impacientãrse; *out of patience*, impacientãdo, a.

Impetus, ímpetu, M.; impetuosidad, F.

Important, importãnte.

Important (*to be*), importâr; venir; *is i.*, importa; conviene; *is very i.*, importa mucho; conviene mucho.

Impossible, imposible.

In, en; *in order that*, para que (w. subj.); *in order to*, para (w. inf.).

Incessantly, sin cesãr, continuamente.

Income, renta, F., or rentas, F. PL.

Indispensable, indispensable.

Individual, individuo, M.

Infinitely, infinito.

Influentia, influyẽnte.

Ink, tinta, F.

Inkstand, tintêro, M.

Innocent, inocẽte.

Inside, interiôr.

Interest, interês, M.; *great i.*, mucho interês; *to the i. of the play*, al interês que inspira la comedia.

Intimate, íntimo, a.

Into, en.

Introduction, introducciôn, F.

Inundation, desbordamiẽto, M.; avenida, F.

Invention, invenciôn, F.

Invite (*to*), convidâr.

Iron, hierro, M.

Iron-clad, blindãdo, a; *i.-c. frigate*, fragata blindada.

J.

Jane, Juana, F.

Jest (*to*), chanceãr (chancêo, cêas, cêa).

Jew *el*, joya, F.; *alhāja*, F.
Jewelry, joyería, F.; *alhājas*, F. PL.
John, Juan, M.
Journey, viaje, M.; *good j.*, feliz viaje.
Joy, alegría, F.; gozo, M.
Judge, juez, M. (PL., juéces).
Judgment, juicio, M.
Julia, Jūlia and Juliāna, F.
Jump up (*to*), saltar.
Just, justo, a; *to have j.*, acabār de.

K.

Keep (*to*), guardār; quedārse con.
Kind, bueno, a; bondadoso, a, (*to*, para).
Kind, clase, F.; especie, F.; *what k. of weather?* ¿qué tal tiempo?
King, rey, M.; *k. and queen*, los reyes, PL. (*the sovereigns*).
Kite, comēta, F.
Knife, cuchillo, M. (*table k.*); cuchilla, F. (*in machinery*); cortaplūmas, M. SING. and PL. (*pocket k.*; *navāja*, F. (*clasp k.*, and common name for jack-k. among the lower classes).
Know (*to*), sabēr (*of things*, sé, sabes, sabe); conocer (*of persons and of things*, *to k. thoroughly*, conozco, conoces, ce).
Know how (*to*), sabēr (w. inf.).
Known, conocido, a, (*persons*); sabido, a, (*things*).

L.

Laborer, trabajadōr, M.; obrēro, M.
Lady, señōra, F.; dama, F.
Lamb, cordēro, M.; corderito, a, M. and F.

Land, tierra, F.; terrēno, M. (*tract*); heredades, F. PL.
Lane, callejuela, F.
Language, lengua, F.; idiōma, M.; la lengua castellāna: el castellano es idioma muy fácil.
Large, grande (after the noun).
Largest, el (la, lo) más grande; el (la) mayōr.
Last, último, a; postrero, a, (postrer); *last night*, anoche.
Late, tarde.
Lateral, laterāl.
Latin, subs., Latin; adj., latino, a.
Latter (*the*), éste, ésta; éstos, éstas.
Law, ley, F.
Lawrence (*St.*), San Lorenzo.
Lead (*to*), conducir, llevar; *to l. to*, llevar, conducir.
Lead (*metal*), plomo, M.
Leaf, hoja, F. (*of a tree or a book*).
Learn (*to*), aprendēr (*to*, á).
Learned, erudito, a; sábio, a.
Leave (*to*), dejār (*not to take*); salir (*to depart*, foll. by *de*); *to l. by the train*, salir con el tren; salir, partir (*to go*); *when do you l.?* ¿cuándo sale V.? or ¿parte V.?
Lecture, conferēncia, F.
Leg, pié, M. (*of a table*).
Lemon, limōn, M.
Lend (*to*), prestār (with dat. of pers.).
Less, ménos; no — tanto, a.
Lesson, lección, F.
Let (with imperat.), que (with subj.), with 3d pers. SING. and PL.
Letter, carta, F.
Lettuce, lechuga, F.
Lewis, Luis.
Library, bibliotēca, F.

Life, vida, F.

Light, luz, F.

Lighten (*to*), alumbra^r.

Like, igual; parecido, a, (after noun); *like that which*, semejante al que (á la que, á lo que).

Like (*to*), quer^er (*to esteem*—quiere, es, e); gustá^rle á uno, p. 420; agradá^rle á uno; *I l.*, me gusta; *I do not l.*, no me gusta; *the countess does not like*, á la condesa no le gusta; *I should l.*, quisiera; *would you l.?* ¿quisiera V.?

Limit, límite, M.

Line, línea, F.; p^auta, F.; renglon, M. (*of a book or Ms.*); línea (*of a railway, etc.*).

Lisbon, Lisb^oa, F.

Listen (*to*), escuch^ar (without prep.).

Literature, literat^ura, F.

Little, poco; *a l. (of)*, un poco de.

Live (*to*), vivⁱr; *to live in*, vivⁱr en, or habit^ar (*without*, and by some *with*, en).

Living (*alive*), vivo, a.

Local, loc^al.

London, L^ondres.

Long, largo, a, (*superl.* largu^ísimo, a).

Look, mir^ada, F.

Look (*to*), mir^ar.

Look for (*to*), busc^ar.

Look out (*to*), asom^arse (*of*, á).

Lord, se^ñor, M.

Lose (*to*), perd^er (pierdo, es, e).

Lost, perdido, a.

Louisa, Luisa, F. (*loo-ee-ça*).

Lovely, am^able (*moral*); hermoso, a, (*physical*).

Low, bajo, a.

Luxury, lujo, M.

M.

Machine, má^quina, F.

Madam, se^ñora, F. (*direct address*); la se^ñora (3d pers.).

Made (p. part.), hecho, a.

Made (*to be*), ser hecho, a.

Madrid (*of*—), Madril^eño, a; madrile^ño, a.

Magnificent, magn^ífico, a.

Mail-train, tren-corr^eo, M., or *simply* el corr^eo.

Make (*to*), hac^er (hago, haces, ce); *he made*, hizo.

Malaga, Má^laga, F.

Man, hombre, M.

Manners, mod^ales, M. PL.

Manuel, Manu^el; *familiar*, Manolito.

Manufacturer, fabric^ante, M.; PL. (*general*), industri^ales, fabric^antes.

Many, muchos, as.

Marauder, bandido, M.

March, Marzo, M.; *M. 7th*, á siete Marzo, or el día siete de Marzo.

Marchioness, marqu^esa, F.

Marquis, marqu^es, M.

Marry (*to*), cas^arse; *to m. anyone*, cas^arse con álguien; *to m. some one to another*, casar á fulano con mengana.

Mary, María.

Mass (*crowd*), masa, F; (*sacrament*) Misa, F.

Master, amo, M. (*of the house*); ma^estro, M. (*teacher*); ma^estro, M. (*one who excels*).

Material, adj., materi^al (after noun).

May—*he m.*, *it m.*, puede; *m. be*, puede ser. See poder.

May, Mayo, M.

Means, medios, M. PL.; *to find m.*, encontrār medios (*to*, *para*).
Measure, medida, F.; *providencia*, F.
Meat, carne, F.
Mechanic, artesano, M.
Meet (*to*), encontrār.
Member, individuo, M.
Memory, memōria, F.
Mend (*to*), componēr (compongo, -pones, -pone).
Merchant, comerciānte, M.
Messenger (*of news*), mensagēro, M. (*errand-boy*), mandadēro, M.
Mexican, Mejicāno, a; mejicāno, a.
Midst—*in the m. of*, en medio de.
Mild, suave, blando, a.
Mill, milésimo (*imaginary coin*), M.
Minister, ministro, M. (*political*).
Miscellaneous, vārios, as, PL. (and after the noun).
Misfortune, desgračia, F.
Mistress (*of the house*), ama, F.; señōra, F.
Moderate (*to*) calmār; templār.
Modern, moderno, a.
Moment, momento, M.
Money, dinēro, M.
Month, mes, M.
Moral, morāl.
More, más; *no m.*, ya no (verb).
Morning, mañāna, F.; *the m. paper*, el periódico de la mañāna.
Morocco (*of*), Marroquí.
Mother, madre, F.
Mother-country, madre-pātria, F.; pātria.
Mountain, sierra, F.
Move (*to*), movēr (muevo, es, e).
Much, mucho, a.

N.

Nail, clavo, M.; alfiler, M.
Name, nombre, M. (*Christian*); apellido, M. (*surname*).
Named (*to be*), llamārse; *his name is*, se llama; *what is his name?* ¿cómo se llama?
Narration, relación, F.
Nation, nación, F.
National, nacional.
Navigation, navegaciōn, F.
Near (adv.), cerca; (prep.), cerca de.
Necessary, necesārio, a; *it is n.*, es n., es menester, es preciso (*the last is strongest*; all with subj. or an inf.).
Necklace, collar, M.
Needle, aguja, F.
Neighbor, vecino, a, M. or F.
Neighborhood, vecindād, F.
Never, no — nunca, *or* nunca before the verb.
New, nuevo, a.
News, noticia, F., and noticias, F. PL.
Newspaper, periódico, M.; diario, M.
Night, noche, F.; *to-n.*, esta n.; *last n.*, anoche.
No (adv.), no; (adj.), ninguno, a; no — alguno, a, (alguno, in this case after the noun).
Noble, noble.
Nobody, nadie.
Noise, ruido, M.
Nor, ni.
North, norte, M.; *on the n.*, en el norte, al norte.
North-west, noroeste.
Not, no.
Notable, notable.

Notify (*to*), avisar; dar aviso (*to*, á).

Now, ahora.

Number, número, M.; *a n. of*, una porción de.

Nurse, nodriza, F.

O.

Object, motivo, M. (*cause, end*); objeto, M. (*visible*).

Obligation, obligación, F.; *to discharge one's o.*, cumplir con su obligación.

Obliged (*to be*), agradecer (agradezco, agradeces, ce — *under obligation*); *the stranger was o. to ...*, al desconocido le fué forzoso el ... (inf.).

Occasion, ocasión, F.

Occur (*to*), suceder; acaecer; tener lugar.

O'clock, hora, F.; *at what o'clock?* ¿ á qué hora ?

Octavo, octavo, M.; *in octavo*, en octavo.

October, Octubre, M.; *Oct. 27th*, á veinte y siete de Octubre, *or* el día veinte y siete de Octubre.

Odd, raro, a; extraño, a; *o. (number)*, impar.

Offence, disgusto, M.; *to take offence*, incomodarse.

Officer, oficial, M.

Official, oficial.

Often, amenudo; muchas veces.

Old, viejo, a; antiguo, a; *old man*, anciano, M.

Old age, vejez, F.

Old people, ancianos, M. PL.

On, en; sobre; encima de.

Once, una vez (*one time*); ántes (*formerly*); antiguamente (*of old*).

One, with a verb, is expressed by the reflexive *se*, 3d SING.; *one goes*, se va.

One's, su; PL., sus.

Only, adv., sólo; únicamente; adj., único, a.

Open (*to*), abrir; p.p. abierto.

Opera-glasses, gemelos, M. PL.

Opinion, parecer, M.; *in our o.*, á nuestro parecer.

Oporto, Porto, M.

Opponent, contrario, M.; contrincante.

Optician, óptico, M.

Or, ó, (before *o* or *ho*) ú.

Orange, naranja, F.

Order, órden, F.; *by o. of*, de o. de.

Ornament, adorno, M.

Others, otros, as.

Our, nuestro, a.

Out and back, ida y vuelta.

Out of patience, impacientado, a; impaciente.

Over, por (*through*); por (*throughout*); *over all Spain*, por toda España.

Overcast, encapotado, a.

Own, propio, a.

Ox, buey, M. (PL. buēyes).

P.

Page, página, F.

Pageant, fausto, M.

Painting, cuadro, M.; pintura, F.

Palace, palacio, M.

Paper, papel; periódico, M.; *the morning p.*, el per. de la mañana.

Parable, parábola, F.

- Paradise**, paraíso, M.
Pardon (*to*), perdonar; *pardon*, brother, perdōne, hermano.
Parent, padre, M.; PL., pādres, M.
Parish-priest, cura-pároco, M.
Part, parte, F.; *on the p. of*, de parte de.
Partridge, perdiz, F.
Party, partido, M.
Pass (*to*), pasar.
Passive, pasivo, a.
Passport, pasapórtē, M.
Patent, patente, F.
Patience, paciēcia, F.
Paul, Pablo.
Peace, paz, F.
Pear, pera, F.
Pen, pluma, F.
Penalty, pena, F.
Pencil, lápiz, M.; lapicēro, M.
Pensioned, jubilado, a.
People, gente, F.; pueblo, M.
Permanent, permanēte.
Permit (*to*), permitir.
Persist (*to*), empeñarse (*in*, *en*).
Person, persōna, F.
Perspire, transpirar; sudar.
Peter, Pedro.
Philadelphia, Filadēlfia.
Phœnician, Fenicio, a; fenicio, a.
Physician, médico, M.
Pick up (*to*), recoger (recōjo, -cōges, -cōge).
Picture, cuadro, M.; lámina (*in books*), F.
Picturesque, pintoresco, a.
Piece, pedázo, M.; *piece of news*, noticia, F.
Place, lugar, M.; sitio, M.
Place (*to*), poner (pongo, pones, pone); colocar.
Plan, plano, M. (*of a place*); modēlo, M. (*model*).
Play (*to*), jugar (juego, as, a).
Play, comēdia, F.; piēza, F.
Plaything, juguēte, M.
Pleasant, agradāble.
Please (*to*), agradar; *it pleases* gusta, agrāda, plāce.
Poem, poēma, M.
Point to (*to*), indicār.
Poor, pobre (*indigent*); malo, a, (*of things*).
Popular, populār.
Post, puesto, M.
Portugal, Portugāl.
Position, situaciōn, F. (*state*); *of her p.*, de la situaciōn en que se encontrāba.
Power, poder, M.
Praise (*to*), alabar; (*of things*) celebrār.
Precious, preciōso, a; de precio; *more p.*, de más precio.
Present, regalo, M.
Present, adj., presente.
Presently, luego; pronto; dentro de poco.
Press, imprenta, F.
Pretended, fingido, a.
Pretty, bonito, a; guapo, a.
Prince, príncipe, M.
Princess, princēsa, F.
Principal, principāl.
Principle, principio, M.
Print (*to*), imprimir; p.p.imprēso, a.
Printed, imprēso, a.
Printing, imprenta, F. (*the art*); impresiōn, F. (*the act*).
Private, particular.
Prodigal, pródigo, a.
Producing, adj., productōr, a.

Profit, provēcho, M.
Profitable, provechoso, a; de provecho.
Profound, profundo, a.
Project, proyecto, M.
Promise (*to*), prometer.
Property, fincas, F. PL.
Prosperity, prosperidad, F.
Proud, orgulloso, a.
Proverb, refrán, M.
Province, provincia, F.; país, M.
Public, público, a; subst. público, M.
Public square, plaza, F.
Punishment, castigo, M.
Purchase (*to*), comprar.
Purpose, propósito, M.; fin, M.; *for what p.? ¿á qué?* (pop.).
Put one's self (*to*), ponerse; colocarse.
Put on (*to*), ponerse.

Q.

Quail, codorniz, F.
Quality, calidad, F.; condición, F.
Quarter, cuarto, M.; (*of a pound*), cuarterón, M.; (*of a hundred*), arroba, F.
Cuarto, cuarto, M.; *in q.*, en cuarto.
Queen, reina, F.
Question, cuestión, F.; asunto, M.
Quiet, tranquilo, a.
Quite, bastante; bien.

R.

Rail-way, ferro-carril, M.; PL., ferro-carriles.
Rain (*to*), llover (llueve).
Rain, lluvia, F.
Rainy, lluvioso, a.
Raisin, pasa, F.

Rather, más bien; mejor dicho.
Ratification, ratificación, F.
Ratify (*to*), ratificar.
Raw-recruit, bisoño; PL., gente bisoña.
Read (*to*), leer; *he r.*, leyó.
Read (p. part.), leído, a.
Real, real, M.
Receipts, ingresos, M. PL.
Receive (*to*), recibir; admitir.
Recollection, recuerdo, M.
Reflection, recuerdo, M.; reflexión, F.
Refuse (*to*), negarse (*to*, á)—(me niego á).
Region, país, M.
Reign, reinado, M.
Reject (*to*), rechazar, despreciar.
Relative, pariente, M.; parienta (*popular*), F.
Relieve (*to*), aliviar, amparar; *God r. you!* ; Dios le ampare á V. !
Religious, piadoso, a; devoto, a.
Remain (*to*), permanecer (-ezco).
Remark, observación, F.; advertencia, F.
Remedy, remedio, M.
Remember (*to*), acordarse (acuerdo, as, a — *fol.* *by de, to r. a thing or a person*); recordar (recuerdo, as, a — *to r. that*, etc.); *I r. him*, me acuerdo de él; *I r. that*, recuerdo que...; *do you r.?* ¿recuerda V.? *to r. (to keep in mind)*, tener presente; *one must r.*, se ha de tener p., or se debe tener p.
Reproof, censura, F.
Reside (*to*), habitar (direct or with *en*).
Resident, vecino, a, M. and F. (*of a town*).

Resign (*to*), hacer demisiōn; *to r. one's self*, resignāre (*to*, á), conformarse (*to*, con).

Resource, recurso, M.

Respect, consideraciōn, F. (*for*, para).

Retire (*to*), retirāre (*to withdraw*).

Return (*to*), volvēr (vuelvo, ves, ve); *in returning*, en v.

Review, revista, F.; formaciōn, F. (*popular*).

Reward, premio, M.; recompensa, F.

Ribbon, cinta, F.

Rich, rico, a.

Riches, riquēza, F., or PL. riquēzas.

Right — *on the r.*, á la derecha (*sc. mano*).

Ring, anillo, M. (*plain*); sortija, F. (*jewelled*).

Road, camino, M.; línea, F. (*system of railroads*).

Robber, bandido, M.; ladrōn, M.

Roguish, burlōn, a.

Roof, tejado, M.

Room, habitaciōn, F., cuarto, M.

Rose, rosa, F.

Round about, alrededōr (*adv.*).

Row, fila, F.

Royal, real.

Rule, regla, F.

Run, corrēr.

Running, corriendo; *r. across the page*, á renglōn seguido.

S.

Sail, vela, F. (*of a vessel*).

Sailor, marinero, M.

Salad, ensalada, F.

Salute (*to*), saludar.

Same, mismo, a; *the same (thing)*, lo mismo.

Santander, Santandēr.

Saragossa, Zaragōza [*Caesārea Augusta*].

Saturday, sábado, M.

Say (*to*), decir (digo, dices, dice), *he says*, dice; *said*, dicho; *it is said*, se dice; *it may be said*, se puede decir.

Scarcely, apénas; no — casi.

Scene, escēna, F.; espectáculo, M.

Scholar, discípulo, M. (*pupil*); erudito, M. (*learned man*).

School, colēgio, M., and escuela, F. (*used interchangeably*).

Score, veintēna, F.

Sea, mar, m.

Search (*to*), or *to s. for*, buscar.

Season, temporāda, F.; *s. ticket*, abōno, or billete de a.; *I have a s. t.*, estoy abonādo, a.

Secretary, secretārio, M.; *s. of State*, s. de Estado, or ministro de Estado.

See (*to*), ver (veo, ves, ve); *I saw*, ví; *he saw*, vió; *seeing*, viendo.

Seek (*to*), buscar; *to s. to*, procurar de, tratar de (*inf.*).

Seem (*to*), parecer; *which seemed to surround her*, que al parecēr la amenazaba; *it seems*, parece.

Seen, visto, a.

Seldom, raras veces; pocas veces.

Selectman, hombre bueno (*ancient*, home bueno).

Self-respect, amor propio, M.

Selfish, egoista; *s. vanity*, vano egoismo.

Sell (*to*), vendēr; *he sold*, vendió.

Senate, senādo, M.

Send for (*to*), enviār á buscar.

Sense, sentido, M.

Serious, grave.

Servant, criado, M., criada, F.; *coll.*
los criados *or* la servidumbre.

Serve (*to*), servir (sirvo, sirves,
sirve).

Service, servicio, M.

Set (*to*), ponerse (*of the sun*).

Set, juego, M.; *s. of chairs*, silla-
ría, F.

Several, varios, as.

Severe, severo, a.

Seville (pron. *Sév'il*), Sevilla;
S. train, tren de Sevilla.

Shape, forma, F.

Sheep, oveja, F.

Shelter *one's self* (*to*), ampararse,
refugiarse.

Shine forth (*to*), brillar.

Ship, buque, M. (*merchant*); buque
de guerra, *or* fragata, F. (*war*).

Shocking, atroz.

Shoe, zapato, M.

Shoemaker, zapatero, M.

Shop, tienda, F.

Shop-keeper, tendero, M.

Short, corto, a.

Shout, grito, M.

Shut (*to*), cerrar (cierro, as, a);
he shuts, cierra.

Sign, señal, F.; *it is a s.*, es señal.

Sign (*to*), firmar; *signed*, firmado,
a; *it was s.*, fué firmado, a.

Silence, silencio, M.

Silver, plata, F.

Since, desde (*time*).

Sister, hermana, F.

Sit down (*to*), sentarse, (me siento,
te sientas); *he sits down*, se sienta;
sit down, siéntese V.

Sitting-room, gabinete, M.

Situation, situación, F.

Sixteen mo (16mo), dieciseisavo.

Size, tamaño, M.

Skip about (*to*), brincár; *to s. a.*
again, volver á brincár; *she skips*
a. again, vuelve á b.

Sky, cielo, M.

Slate, pizarra, F.

Slim, flojo, a, (*of attendance*).

Small, pequeño, a.

Snow, nieve, F.

So, tan; *s. bad*, tan malo; *s. (thus)*,
así; *s. it is*, así es; *s. (it)*, lo;
s. much, tanto, a; *s. many*, tan-
tos, as.

Soberly, sobriamente.

Society, sociedad, F.

Sofa, sofá, M.

Soldier, soldado, M.; militar, M.

Some, algunos, as; unos, as; unos
cuantos, unas cuantas.

Something, alguna cosa; algo.

Sometimes, algunas veces.

Son, hijo, M.

Song, canción, F., canto, M.

Soon, pronto, luego.

Soul, alma, F.; ánima, F. (*disem-
bodied spirits*).

Sour, agrio, a.

South, mediodía, M.; *in the s. of*
Spain, en el m. de España; *in*
the extreme s., en el extremo sur.

Spacious, espaciado, a.

Spain, España, F.

Spaniard, Español, a, M. and F.

Spanish, español, a; *S. woman*,
Española, F.

Spanish-America, la América es-
pañola.

Speak (*to*), hablar; *spoken*, hab-
lado; *is s.*, se habla.

Speech, habla, F. (el habla, un
habla).

Spend (*to*), *pasār* (*of time*); *gastār* (*of outlay*).

Spirit, espíritu, M.

Spring, fuente, F.; manantial, M. (*source*).

Square, plaza, F.

St. (*saint*), santo and san (§ 127).

Stand (*to*), *estār en pié* or *de pié* (*the act*), *estār*; *stood*, *estuvo*.

Start for (*to*), *salir para*, *marcharse para*.

State, *estādo*, M.; *the United States*, los *Estados Unidos*.

Statesman, hombre de estado, or estadista, M.

Station, *estaciōn*, F.

Statue, *estātua*, F.

Stay (*to*), *quedarse*; *to s. home*, *quedarse en casa*.

Steamer, buque de vapor, M., or *simply vapor*, M. [paso.

Step, paso, M.; *to take a s.*, dar un *Still*, todavía, aún (*yet*); sin embargo (*notwithstanding*).

Stir, animaciōn, F.

Stone, piedra, F.

Storm, *tempestād*, F.

Stormy, malo, a; *lluvioso*, a; *tempestuoso*, a.

Story, cuento, M.

Stranger, desconocido, M. (*unknown*); *forastero*, M. (*from another place*).

Straw, paja, F.; *s. hat*, sombrero de paja, M.

Street, calle, F.

Strength, fuerza, F. (*physical*); fuerzas (*moral*).

Strawn, cubierto, a; *sembrado*, a, (*with, de*). [estudia.

Study (*to*), *estudiār*; *he studies*,

Suggest (*to*), *sugerir*; *recordār*; *he suggested*, *sugirió*, *recordó*.

Summer, *verāno*, M.

Sun, sol, M.

Surround (*to*), *rodeār*; *that seemed to s. her*, que al parecer la *amenazaba* (*of danger*).

Surrounded, rodeado, a, (*by, de*).

Survive (*to*), *sobrevivir*.

Sweet, dulce.

Sympathy, *simpatía*, F.; *better*, PL. las s — s.

T.

Table, mesa, F.

Table-drawer, el cajón de la mesa.

Take (*to*), *tomār*; *he took*, *tomó*; *to t. a step*, dar un paso; *to t. a walk*, dar un paseo.

Take down (*to*), *descolgār* (*descuelgo*, as, a, *of anything suspended*).

Take place (*to*), *sucedēr*; *verificarse*; *tener lugar*.

Talk (*to*), *hablār*; *to talk to*, h. con.

Tall, alto, a; grande.

Teacher, *maestro*, a, M. and F.

Tell (*to*), *decir* (*digo, dices*).

Terror, *terrōr*, M.; *azōte*, M.

Text, *texto*, M.

Than, que; (*before a numeral*) *de*; (*with a verb*) *de lo que*.

Thank (*to*), *agradecēr* (*agradezco, agradēces*).

That, *ese, esa, eso*; *aquel, aquella, aquello*; *t. is*, es *decir*; *t. is so*, eso es.

That, conj., que.

Theatre, teatro, M.; *summer or café t* — s, teatros de verano ó de café.

Servant, criado, M., criada, F.; *coll.*
los criados *or* la servidumbre.

Serve (*to*), servir (sirvo, sirves, sirve).

Service, servicio, M.

Set (*to*), ponerse (*of the sun*).

Set, juego, M.; *s. of chairs*, sillera, F.

Several, varios, as.

Severe, severo, a.

Seville (pron. *Sév'il*), Sevilla;
S. train, tren de Sevilla.

Shape, forma, F.

Sheep, oveja, F.

Shelter *one's self* (*to*), ampararse, refugiarse.

Shine forth (*to*), brillar.

Ship, buque, M. (*merchant*); buque de guerra, *or* fragata, F. (*war*).

Shocking, atroz.

Shoe, zapato, M.

Shoemaker, zapatero, M.

Shop, tienda, F.

Shop-keeper, tendero, M.

Short, corto, a.

Shout, grito, M.

Shut (*to*), cerrar (cierro, as, a);
he shuts, cierra.

Sign, señal, F.; *it is a s.*, es señal.

Sign (*to*), firmar; *signed*, firmado, a; *it was s.*, fué firmado, a.

Silence, silencio, M.

Silver, plata, F.

Since, desde (*time*).

Sister, hermana, F.

Sit down (*to*), sentarse, (me siento, te sientas); *he sits down*, se sienta; *sit down*, siéntese V.

Sitting-room, gabinete, M.

Situation, situación, F.

Sixteen mo (16mo), dieciseisavo.

Size, tamaño, M.

Skip about (*to*), brincár; *to s. a. again*, volver á brincár; *she skips a. again*, vuelve á b.

Sky, cielo, M.

Slate, pizarra, F.

Slim, flojo, a, (*of attendance*).

Small, pequeño, a.

Snow, nieve, F.

So, tan; *s. bad*, tan malo; *s. (thus)*, así; *s. it is*, así es; *s. (it)*, lo; *s. much*, tanto, a; *s. many*, tantos, as.

Soberly, sobriamente.

Society, sociedad, F.

Sofa, sofá, M.

Soldier, soldado, M.; militar, M.

Some, algunos, as; unos, as; unos cuantos, unas cuantas.

Something, alguna cosa; algo.

Sometimes, algunas veces.

Son, hijo, M.

Song, canción, F., canto, M.

Soon, pronto, luego.

Soul, alma, F.; ánima, F. (*disembodied spirits*).

Sour, agrio, a.

South, mediodía, M.; *in the s. of Spain*, en el m. de España; *in the extreme s.*, en el extremo sur.

Spacious, espaciado, a.

Spain, España, F.

Spaniard, Español, a, M. and F.

Spanish, español, a; *S. woman*, Española, F.

Spanish-America, la América española.

Speak (*to*), hablar; *spoken*, hablado; *is s.*, se habla.

Speech, habla, F. (el habla, un habla).

Spend (*to*), *pasār* (*of time*); *gastār* (*of outlay*).
Spirit, espíritu, M.
Spring, fuente, F.; manantial, M. (*source*).
Square, plaza, F.
St. (*saint*), santo and san (§ 127).
Stand (*to*), *estār en pié* or *de pié* (*the act*), *estār*; *stood*, *estuvo*.
Start for (*to*), salir para, *marchāse* para.
State, *estādo*, M.; *the United States*, los Estados Unidos.
Statesman, hombre de estado, or estadista, M.
Station, *estaciōn*, F.
Statue, *estātua*, F.
Stay (*to*), *quedāse*; *to s. home*, *quedāse en casa*.
Steamer, buque de vapor, M., or *simply vapor*, M. [paso].
Step, paso, M.; *to take a s.*, dar un
Still, todavía, aún (*yet*); sin embargo (*notwithstanding*).
Stir, *animaciōn*, F.
Stone, *piedra*, F.
Storm, *tempestād*, F.
Stormy, malo, a; lluvioso, a; tempestuoso, a.
Story, cuento, M.
Stranger, desconocido, M. (*unknown*); forastero, M. (*from another place*).
Straw, paja, F.; *s. hat*, sombrero de paja, M.
Street, calle, F.
Strength, fuerza, F. (*physical*); *fuerzas* (*moral*).
Strewn, cubierto, a; sembrado, a, (*with, de*). [estudia].
Study (*to*), *estudiār*; *he studies*,

Suggest (*to*), *sugerir*; *recordār*; *he suggested*, *sugirió*, *recordó*.
Summer, *verāno*, M.
Sun, sol, M.
Surround (*to*), *rodeār*; *that seemed to s. her*, que al parecer la *amenazaba* (*of danger*).
Surrounded, *rodeado*, a, (*by, de*).
Survive (*to*), *sobrevivir*.
Sweet, dulce.
Sympathy, *simpatía*, F.; *better*, PL. las s — s.

T.

Table, *mesa*, F.
Table-drawer, el cajón de la mesa.
Take (*to*), *tomār*; *he took*, *tomó*; *to t. a step*, dar un paso; *to t. a walk*, dar un paseo.
Take down (*to*), *descolgār* (*descuelgo*, as, a, *of anything suspended*).
Take place (*to*), *sucedēr*; *verificāse*; *tenēr* lugar.
Talk (*to*), *hablār*; *to talk to*, h. con.
Tall, alto, a; grande.
Teacher, *maestro*, a, M. and F.
Tell (*to*), *decir* (*digo, dices*).
Terror, *terrōr*, M.; *azōte*, M.
Text, *texto*, M.
Than, que; (*before a numeral*) *de*; (*with a verb*) *de lo que*.
Thank (*to*), *agradecēr* (*agradezco, agradēces*).
That, *ese, esa, eso*; *aquel, aquella, aquello*; *t. is*, es *decir*; *t. is so*, *eso es*.
That, conj., *que*.
Theatre, teatro, M.; *summer or café t* — s, *teatros de verano ó de café*.

UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN



3 9015 00507 3641

**DO NOT REMOVE
OR**

MAINTENANCE CARD



7 12 AL

